





# UPGRADE SPECIALIST IN ANOTHER WORLD

BOOK 01

*Endless Sea Of Clouds*

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

# Upgrade Specialist in Another World

(异界之装备强化专家)

by

Endless Sea Of Clouds

(茫茫云海)

# Synopsis

---

Just as a gamer found an overpowered skill book called ‘Item Upgrade’ in the hottest virtual reality role-playing game on Earth, something happened to the game’s system, causing his soul to leave his body and go to another dimension. Common sense dictates that he would be born anew then become the greatest overlord of this world by making use of his advanced knowledge. Not in this case! He was already dead. Only some fragments of his soul and that skill book managed to get into that dimension and merge with an ordinary common youngster called Bai Yunfei.

This was the enormous Tianhun continent, where humans could be said to have no limits. There was a group of humans here who could cultivate the power of their own souls then control their bodies, the natural elements and even other people’s souls with that power! These special beings were called — soul cultivators. Come witness how the several fragments of the dead inter-dimensional traveler’s soul and that skill book, which was not governed by the laws of this plane, were going to help Bai Yunfei become a legendary soul cultivator and craftsman!

# Copyright

---

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Deceptioning @ [Wuxiaworld](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

# Prologue

---

## Prologue: The Most Tragic Transmigrator in History

《The Happiest Transmigrator in History》was the hottest virtual reality game in 2XXX CE. It was a cheesy name, but the moment this game appeared it immediately dominated the entire market. With its top-notch technology, the game was able to earn the spotlight of being the “Second Life” for everyone.

In the game, there was one player that was currently holding a book with a howling burst of laughter from within a dark cave.

“Fuck yeah! The “Equipment Upgrade Technique!” Wahahahaha! I’m...I’m rich!”

For five to six minutes, the player laughed and laughed until he felt a pang in his chest. But even after he stopped, he could feel his body quivered from head to toe nonstop. Staring greedily at the cover, the player prepared to use the skill so that he’d be able to increase in strength exponentially.

“Eh? What’s going on?” Just at that moment, the entire area around him began to flicker and distort as if he was receiving extremely unstable TV signals. “A power outage? Nah, even if that happened, there’s a backup power generator. Did something happen to the game servers?”

Just as the person was considering if he should quit from the game for the time being, the area around him finally snapped under the load and shattered! Yes, it was as if a mirror had shattered into thousands of pieces. But when the area around him shattered, they shattered into dots of light before disappearing from sight!!

The player had been scared speechless. For a while, he was stunned and didn’t move from his spot at all. But after a moment, he realized that his body was suddenly falling straight down!

The entire area around him was in chaos by now, and plenty of multi-colored light began to fill the place. But the distinct sensation of falling was warning him that he was only just falling faster and faster.

This brought him to a state of unprecedented fear. Yelling nonstop at the game controller on his left hand, he cried, “Quit! Quit the game! For fucks sake! Why can’t I quit the game?!”

In the end, he gave up on trying to quit by shouting. Whipping his head around in terror, the player could only see the stream of color, but nothing else that was distinguishable to him.

“Where am I gonna fall down to? I’m just playing a VR game, if I keep on falling down, where the hell am I going to go?”

But then a thought struck him, causing his entire body to tremble.

“Am I....am I transmigrating?! My body was in the gamepod, but my soul is transmigrating?!”

As if responding to his conjectures, the colorful space beneath him slowly started to drain away of its color to form a murky gray. Just slightly, the hazy sight of scenery could be seen beneath the gray fog. From the looks of things, it looked like a street with people walking on it.

“I’ve arrived! Have I really transmigrated?” Momentarily stunned by the revelation, the player finally began to howl in laughter, “Wahahaha! Yer daddy has finally transmigrated! All those history books, those experiments, those studies on transmigration (novels of every kind regarding transmigration), they weren’t in vain!

The astronomy of the skies, the geography of the earth, origami, smelting, architecture, anything and everything, I know them all! Wakakaka, the world, the women! Here. I. Come!”

“Hm? What’s going on? Hey hey...are you shitting me?!”

The previously ecstatic howls of laughter soon came to a stop, only to be replaced with a shriek of terror when he realized that the closer and closer he got to the gray mist below, the more sick he felt. It was a ‘choking’ sensation, and even more fissures began to appear in the area around him before spreading throughout the area.

But when one of these cracks touched upon his shoulder, the part that was touched immediately went missing!

It was as if the part of his shoulder had been erased by an eraser. The afflicted part was gone, and it felt as if the removed part had been detached from his body and turned into black mist.

But what made him despair even more was that the cracks continued to grow—like a group of piranhas in an eating frenzy—and devoured at his flesh...

Or maybe it was better to say it was devouring his soul!

The joy that came from “transmigration” was quickly being replaced by the fear of death.

“Don’t joke around with me, okay? Hey now...”

A single crack cut across his right leg, detaching it from the rest of his body and turning it into black mist.

“What’s going on! The books never said that this would happen when transmigrating....”

And then his right arm was gone. The “Equipment Upgrade Technique” that had been held tightly in his right hand was thus then sent flying into the air.

The “world” down below was getting closer and closer to him, but the cracks forming around him were growing more and more as well. In addition, several bubbles of transparent air began to appear. Whenever the soul fragments formed by the parts that were cut off from the cracks were touched by these air bubbles, they slowly began to disappear from sight.



“The fuck’s going on?! I’m a transmigrator! I’m the damn main cha—”

But even before he could finish the script, the rest of his body was scattered into the chaos, leaving behind several different sized soul fragments. One by one, these soul fragments began to disappear as well due to the bubbles of air...

By now, the soul fragments were already passing through the clouds. The skill book and the soul fragments that were stuck with it was quickly plummeting through the gray clouds to reach the world below!

And the air bubbles quickly gave chase to it...

How could transmigration ever be that easy! Every plane of existence had their own laws. Anything or anyone that was not deemed to be a part of this plane of existence would be seen as a virus and be eliminated by these very laws!

This two-bit player was merely a side character; and not a main character. There was no need to know of his name, and the tragic side character had thus inevitably lost his life after transmigrating. His soul was shattered into pieces, and by now, he couldn’t even die anymore even if he wanted to! Would he perhaps be the most tragic transmigrator in history?

The soul fragments and skill book that managed to escape the planar laws were by no means a part of this world, and neither did they follow its laws. Now that they’ve escaped into this world, what kind of storms would it bring with it?

# **Book 1 - Rise of the Cloud**

# Chapter 1: Bai Yunfei

---

Year 2008 of the Tianhun Calendar.

There was only one empire to the Tianhun Continent—the Tianhun Empire. In the Azure Cloud Province, dusk was falling upon Talus City.

“Whew! I can finally call it a day! Earned twenty-three copper coins today, that’s enough for one more steamed bun tonight...” Came the fatigued voice of a young man. Supported by the walls of a dark alleyway as he walked through it, this youngster had a hand rubbing at his aching shoulders. Tattered were his clothings and fatigued was his body, but he pressed on as he muttered to himself.

Bai Yunfei, an eighteen year old with a height of 1.75 meters. He had a simple short haircut, a nose bridge that stuck out from his quiet thin face, and eyes that were of a clear look. While not handsome, his face wasn’t exactly disagreeable with either. Thanks to his many years as an unskilled laborer, his back was bent like a bow whenever he walked so that he looked more submissive than he should. His body could actually be considered to be quite buff, but because he hadn’t eaten food for a long time, he looked more malnourished than healthy.

After a long hard day of work, all he wanted to do right now was to buy a few steamed buns so he could eat his fill and return back ‘home’. It was a broken-down hut where he lived by himself, but it was still his place to sleep for nine straight years.

Ever since he became capable of self-thought, Bai Yunfei had never once seen his father before. His mother and grandfather had never once told him anything about him either. At the tender age of five, Bai Yunfei’s mother passed away due to illness, leaving him and his aged grandfather to rely on each other for survival.

But alas! Misfortune did not see fit to leave Bai Yunfei’s family.

When setting up a stall to peddle his straw sandals, Bai Yunfei's grandfather ended up 'blocking' the path of the son to a local noble, resulting in a brutal thrashing by the sons subordinates.

Not too long after that, he too, left Bai Yunfei.

In that year, Bai Yunfei was only nine years old.

Circumstances such as these were by no means a rare sight on the continent. Commoners—most especially those of the same ilk as Bai Yunfei's family—had no land, no work, and had but only a small house so broken down that it was practically unlivable. In the eyes of the nobles and the rich, the lives of these 'undesirables' held no worth at all.

And so Bai Yunfei was left alone at the age of nine. Engraving the love of his mother and the benevolence of his grandfather into his heart, Bai Yunfei chose to grit his teeth and live on.

Begging piteously for two days and two nights, Bai Yunfei managed to secure a job as a porter at a large-scale rice store. But this was not all due to the kindheartedness of the store owner—he had never once given even half a copper more to Bai Yunfei. When he first started out, Bai Yunfei was only capable of earning a scant few copper coins a day.

There came many times where Bai Yunfei felt that he could not take it anymore. Every night, he would huddle in his dilapidated hut and cry to himself while the wind blew through the place. But with each time he cried, he'd fall asleep and dream of his kindly grandfather patting at his head while weaving yet another pair of sandals and teaching him how to read.

His mother would appear in those dreams too. Embracing Bai Yunfei to her chest, she would point up to the clouds for Bai Yunfei to see, "One day, when my little Yunfei grows up, he will be like a white cloud in the sky. Floating freely under the skies without worry...."

The morning after, he would wipe away the tears and grit his teeth to continue moving the extremely heavy sacks of rice.

Nine years went on in this fashion.

In these nine years, Bai Yunfei experienced the entire spectrum of human nature and understood just how bleak the world was. But all he could do each and every day was to work hard and rely on himself to survive, no matter how lowly it was.

There were actually many commoners like him stuck at the bottom rungs to the social ladder. But because of the pressures of life, many of them chose to involve themselves in the shadier side of life. Bai Yunfei had never followed their example however. Each copper he earned. Each grain he ate. Everything was earned from the step by step work he put into his job as a rice porter.

He had once promised his grandfather after all. “Live life with a clear conscience.”

Many people had scoffed at Bai Yunfei’s dedication to his grandfather’s words however. “A clear conscience? Don’t make me laugh. In this cruel world, a clear conscience isn’t even worth a fart!”

And yet, Bai Yunfei had never cared to listen to them. Staunch and resolute in the way he lived these past nine years by himself, Bai Yunfei would live a life with a clear conscience.

No matter how meager his status became. No matter how lowly his job was. And no matter how impoverished he became. He would live as his grandfather told him to.

“Compared to before, my body’s a lot stronger now. If I can just carry a few more sacks of rice every day, I should be able to earn a few more coins and repair mom’s and grandpa’s graves....” Bai Yunfei thought to himself as he walked. Jangling the coins in his robes, Bai Yunfei decided to speed up his walking pace. The sooner he got out of the alleyway, the sooner he could buy some steamed

buns. And the sooner he bought some steam buns, the sooner he could go home.

But just at the moment when he bowed his head to walk forward, a fissure in the skies above suddenly opened up above him! Several wisps of black mist came pouring out from the fissure, and just seemingly, there looked like there was a small book bundled in the mist...

Whether it was by accident or by design, the balls of black mist came down towards Bai Yunfei. And in no time at all, it had merged with his body.

Bai Yunfei's mind went blank. Shortly afterwards, he lost consciousness and tumbled to the ground.

When his body fell to the ground, a transparent ball of air came flying out from the not-yet closed rift towards Bai Yunfei as well. But instead of entering his body like the black mist did, it covered his entire body instead.

.....

Every plane of existence had their own laws on existence. Whenever one plane attempted to invade another plane of existence, the laws to that plane would reject it and try to destroy it.

But!

If it were able to break into the world, then the laws of the world would assimilate it into itself!

These soul fragments and book that already entered Bai Yunfei's body. They were already starting to fuse together with him. After the pursuing laws to this plane of existence surrounded Bai Yunfei's body, it managed to destroy whatever fragments that did not yet fuse with Bai Yunfei before disappearing into the world as if it never existed to begin with.

On the ground, Bai Yunfei would look as if nothing was

happening and that he was only just sleeping.

Roughly ten minutes passed by before Bai Yunfei's body started to move. Sitting upright, Bai Yunfei looked confused, and his eyes were still unfocused. Clearly, he hadn't yet completely regained his wits.

Dazed for a little longer, Bai Yunfei managed to prop himself up with the wall with one hand while using the other hand to gently slap at his head. He was muttering to himself, but it seemed as if he was talking to someone else.

"I'm Tang Long....No, I'm Bai Yunfei...."

"I came from Earth....no....I'm from the Tianhun Continent...."

"I'm a dimension traveler....I'm a commoner of Talus City..."

"Water is made of hydrogen and oxygen...."

"Have to save money to repair mom and grandpa's graves...."

"....."

"....."

These soul fragments had no consciousness, but they were still formed of the broken fragments that were memories. After they fused with Bai Yunfei, his own memory was sent into a flux for the time being.

Staggering onto the main streets with a teetering body, Bai Yunfei was actually moving based on autonomous action only. His consciousness was a complete blur right now, and he couldn't even tell just what he was doing at all....

.....

Some time before, the streets were crawling with activity as the common people went to and from on it. But now, everyone was stepping to the side almost religiously as a group of men came walking from the direction of the eastern gates of the city.

Leading this group at the very front was an elegant-looking young man draped in excellent clothing. His eyebrows were sharp like a sword and his eyes were bright like if they were stars. His hair was tied nicely behind his back, and the fan in his hands waved a refreshingly nice breeze at his face as he pointed at the shops on the side of the streets to the person next to him. Occasionally, his lips would curl into a smile, and it seemed as if he was introducing something to his companion in a lax but frivolous manner.

The person by his side was a long-haired young woman dressed in a light-blue robe made of expensive material. She had a slim physique and a fair-white complexion, red lips and a jade-white nose. Her eyes—wide-eyed in interest—followed the young man's finger around the streets.

From behind these two, there was a more burly-looking middle-aged man with his hands clasped behind his back. Walking slow enough to be behind the two youths, a hint of a smile could be seen on his face as he looked at the two.

Two men dressed up as bodyguards hung by his side with a sword fitted at their waists. Their walking patterns were random, but every so often, their eyes would sweep across the crowd. Anyone that met their gaze would immediately turn their heads with a mixture of fear and respect.

After them came a group of men dressed up as servants. Each one of them carried a large box of seemingly hefty weight. But despite the weight, the servants walked with an easy step, meaning that they were considerably strong as well.

They were the most influential family of Talus City, the house of Zhang. Not only did they control more than half of the businesses in Talus City, they were also a family of soul cultivators. In the greater picture that was the Tianhun Continent, the Zhang weren't of any importance. But in the local area of Talus City, even the lord mayor would have to show some consideration for them.



When the lord and heir apparent to the house of Zhang walked down the road, no commoner would dare stand in their way.

“Little sister Meng’er, how unexpected it was for me to see you show up in Talus City with my father. You should’ve sent some news ahead of time so I could arrange for some more interesting things to be shown to your heart’s content....” The young man smiled gently at the young woman. This man was the heir apparent to the house of Zhang, Zhang Yang.

The young woman known as Meng’er showed no outerly expression at Zhang Yang’s flattery however. Reciprocating in conversation with a simple phrase, she spoke, “I just so happened to come across uncle Zhang when I was sightseeing Cathaya City. Since it was convenient, I came with him to meet aunty, there’s no need to prepare anything. I’ll be leaving in a few days, so there’s no need to do anything special.” The young woman’s eyebrows knitted together at her last words as if remembering something, “Also. Don’t call me Meng’er. I’m not your sister either. Call me by my actual name, Liu Meng.”

Despite the cold indifference in Liu Meng’s voice, Zhang Ye wasn’t discouraged. “Haha, little sister Meng’er, what are you saying? You of all people should know what the elders of our families are planning on, we’re goi—”

“I don’t want to even think about anything else right now. The only reason why I’m even sightseeing right now is because I can’t make the breakthrough to become a middle-stage Soul Warrior. I just wanted to clear my head for a while before I go back and focus again on my training without interference.” Liu Meng interrupted him.

“Wha—you’ve already reached the middle-stage Soul Warrior?! I remember when we once broke through to the Soul Personage stage at the same time! It was only a year ago. I’m a middle-stage Soul Personage now, but you’ve already improved that much!” This time, Zhang Yang didn’t bother to continue to fawn over Liu

Meng so shamelessly as he was before. Instead, he could really only let out a gasp in shock.

A look of scorn for Zhang Yang flashed across her eyes at that. Looking away to glance at the side of the street, she opened her mouth to speak, “I’m not like some people who just idle about everyday.”

“Errr.....” Zhang Yang felt rather embarrassed by her words. Abandoning this line of conversation, Zhang Yang then looked up with a smile and pointed to a nearby street stall, “Little sist—ah—I mean, Liu Meng. There’s a stall selling some [tanghulu](#) over there, plenty of girls love to eat this! Since you’ve been focusing on your training, I’m sure you don’t get to eat this a lot, do you? Let me get you a skewer!”

Striding straight on over after speaking, Zhang Yang took a skewer of tanghulu before walking back to Liu Meng’s side. Despite the theft, the vendor was unwilling to look discontent; instead, the vendor managed to force out an ingratiating smile onto his aged face....

Curiously, Liu Meng took what was offered to her and gave it a look over. A pink tongue extended forth from her lips to lick at the frosting over it, eliciting a smile to appear on her lips. Her smile was so rare to Zhang Yang—like a plum blossom in the winter—he couldn’t help but stare at her a little more from the side.

And so the group continued to travel through the city’s center with Zhang Yang continuing to buy several knickknacks and playthings from here and there for Liu Meng’s pleasure. All of it was done in hope of winning yet another beautiful smile from her.

They had only just passed by one of the more shadier alleyways when a rather absent-minded but shabbily-clothed young man came stumbling out of it. Muttering incoherently to himself in a nonstop fashion, the youth seemed as if he hadn’t even noticed the group of people on the streets. In this manner, he continued to

stumble forwards, when all of a sudden, he slammed straight into Liu Meng!

The appearance of this youth was very sudden, and Liu Meng had been at that time preoccupied with Zhang Yang's introducing her to a satin store nearby. She hadn't expected to have someone come crashing into her, and due to Bai Yunfei's state of confusion, there was no 'intent' to collide with her. Because of that lack of intent, she was unable to sense it as a soul cultivator, thus resulting in the two of them falling to the ground.

.....

All Bai Yunfei could feel at that one moment was a huge headache. All sorts of information was flowing through his head nonstop, and even now, he wasn't even sure where he was.

Suddenly, Bai Yunfei felt his body collide into something before the sensation of falling down came rushing up to him. After that, he could feel himself falling onto something soft and a delicate fragrance trickling into his nose....

It wasn't sure whether it was the collision, the fall, the landing, or the fragrance that snapped Bai Yunfei back to awareness, but whatever it was, it allowed him to regain control of his body.

Although he wasn't quite back to full awareness just yet.

Shaking his head, Bai Yunfei stood back up to his feet before finally being aware of the situation—

—A blue-robed young woman sat in front of him on the ground. Stupefied, her delicate face was tilted upwards towards him, but not a single word came out from her mouth.

“Er....miss, I'm sorry. I didn't mean to run into you, are you alright?” Connecting the dots, Bai Yunfei realized that he had to have run into her and scrambled to apologize.

Stooping his back to reach out and pull at her pale-white wrist, Bai Yunfei helped her to her feet with a very natural sequence of

motion.

It was then that Bai Yunfei noticed the tanghulu discarded to the ground. Embarrassed, Bai Yunfei scratched his head sheepishly and looked left and right—only to catch sight of the tanghulu vendor to the side.

For the sake of pleasing Liu Meng, Zhang Yang had ordered the vendor to accompany them.

Running on over, Bai Yunfei fished out a single copper coin and handed to the vendor before coming back with a tanghulu.

“Miss, here’s a tanghulu as compensation. I hope that you’ll forgive me, I really didn—”

“Bang!” Before Bai Yunfei could even finish speaking, something powerful struck at his left waist. There was a flash of pain, and then Bai Yunfei was flung away to the side of the street!

The right leg of Zhang Yang slowly fell back to stand down on the ground. His entire body was shaking with indignation, and his face was malevolent in expression, marking a stark contrast with the easygoing young nobleman he was before.

Glaring at Bai Yunfei, Zhang Yang’s eyes had a very distinct aura of killing intent to them.

“You lowly plebeian! How dare you mistreat my Meng’er! I’ll...I’ll have you put to death!”

## Chapter 2: Equipment Upgrade Technique

---

Enduring the pain in his waist, Bai Yunfei managed to slowly rise back up to his feet, only to stare in stupefaction at the sinister-looking youth in front of him.

“How....how could I do such a thing like this? It felt as if my actions were natural, wha—what’s going on?” Now, Bai Yunfei was back to complete awareness. But when he thought back to the attitude of the young woman in front of him, he didn’t dare believe in what he had just done....

The nobles right in front of him, weren’t they not people he couldn’t risk to offend? These were people that couldn’t care less about the lives of commoners such as him!!

The very thought of that made Bai Yunfei go weak in the knees. Not daring to look up at these two figures, he bowed deep the ground and spoke, “Dear miss, please forgive me....I really didn’t mean to offend you. I hope that you will find it in your heart to forgive me...”

“Forgive you?! You plebeian, do you really think my little sister Meng’er is someone you could touch? I’ll have your lowly life ended right here and now!!” Zhang Yang laughed nastily. Looking at Bai Yunfei as if he was a dead man walking, Zhang Yang strode forward with his right arm extended. His right fist had a series of blue veins popping out from underneath his flesh, and with each step he took, the muscles in his arm seemed to grow even larger.

When Bai Yunfei tilted his head up to look, a fierce pain stung at his head the moment when his eyes made contact with Zhang Yang. Something from the depths of his soul flooded his body, causing it to tremble briefly before collapsing to the ground. In his eyes, the incoming Zhang Yang was no longer a man, but a horrifying demon. The hands that came towards him were sharp claws, and if it were to just squeeze around him gently, Bai Yunfei

would be crushed like an ant.

“Zhang Yang, hold on....did I say that I wanted him dead?” Just as Bai Yunfei felt as if he was going to collapse, a harmonious voice like the sound of nature came echoing into his ears, alleviating some of the pressure on his body.

Halting in his footsteps, Zhang Yang turned to look back to Liu Meng inquisitively, “Me—Liu Meng, this commoner has accosted you. Doesn’t he deserve death? I’ll teach him a lesson for you to vent your anger.”

Frowning, Liu Meng casted another scornful eye at Zhang Yang, “I’m not ‘yours’, please watch what you’re saying....”

Then casting an eye to look behind him, she continued, “This person looks rather out of it, so it must have been an accident. Even if he did offend me, there wouldn’t be a need for him to die....”

Stunned, Bai Yunfei looked to Liu Meng as if in a trance, “Is....is she pleading for me? What a reasonable young lady, she’s like a fairy...”

“He took a kick from you already, see how injured he is? Let that be enough punishment for him.” Liu Meng’s eye flickered to the dropped tanghulu Bai Yunfei had bought for her earlier.

There was a flicker of light as if she was thinking about something. Unexpectedly, she casted a smile towards Bai Yunfei, “Haha, if anything, he already tried to pay me back with another tanghulu, but it was kicked to the ground by you....”

Her smile had forced Bai Yunfei’s heart to beat more rapidly than before when he saw it. His face began to grow flush with a red heat, and his mind felt as if it was swimming, “How...how beautiful she is....”

Seeing how Liu Meng was treating this plebeian with such a smile, a flash of bitter hatred entered his eyes, “How could we let

him off so easily? At the very least, we should cut off one of his hands! I'l—”

“Yang’er!” A dignified voice suddenly barked out, interrupting Zhang Yang’s speech.

Walking up from behind the two youngsters was the middle-aged man before.

“Father!”

“Uncle.”

The one that both Zhang Yang and Liu Meng called out to so respectfully was the father of Zhang Yang and the lord of the house of Zhang. Zhang Zhenshan.

“Meng’er is right. As a soul cultivator, how could you bicker with people of his kind? You even plan to kill on the streets, are you not afraid of losing face for our Zhang?!” The man barked out to reprimand his child on his behavior.

Just a moment ago, Bai Yunfei’s heart was threatening to leap out of his chest when Zhang Yang threatened to cut off own of his hands. Hearing this middle-aged man advocate against that had allowed for Bai Yunfei to let out a sigh in relief, but when the man looked to him, Bai Yunfei immediately felt as if his entire body had been thrown into ice. Even his soul shivered at the man’s gaze—it was many a times more intimidating than the one Zhang Yang had given to him.

Even breathing was a challenge for him now.

Fortunately, this sensation had only been for a moment before receding away. Heaving heavily, Bai Yunfei could feel beads of sweat drip down from his face one after another.

“Your mother is still waiting for us to return, don’t let her wait even longer.” Zhang Zhenshan spoke.

But seeing how his son was still quite discontent with the

outcome, he let out a casual suggestion, “If you’re still not satisfied with this one....let your servants teach him a lesson.”

Unwilling to say anything more, Zhang Yang gave one of his servants a look before heading off with the others into the city center.

Two of his servants didn’t leave with him. Instead, they glared ominously at Bai Yunfei as they approached him.

Now that Zhang Zhenshan had spoken, Bai Yunfei knew that there would be no escaping this beating today. If he resisted, the chances of being injured even worse would only just go up. With no other choice, he curled up into a ball and protected his face while the two men began to beat at him with their hands and feet.

Already some distance away, Zhang Yang couldn’t help but cast a look backwards with an eye of resentment. However, he then turned his head to look at Liu Meng for a brief moment before returning to his guise as an elegant noble. Waving his fan, he continued to introduce Liu Meng to the different parts of Talus City to her.

Later that night, Bai Yunfei dragged his beaten and weary body back to his home. Pushing open the teetering doors of the entrance, he walked past the narrow hallway and onto the simplistic bed. There were several holes in the ceiling so that the moonlight could shine through and give the hut some lighting.

Anything of worth in his home was already sold off. Originally, he had a room next door, but even that was sold off too.

Seated on top of his bed, Bai Yunfei stared despondently at the top of his ceiling. Rubbing at the black and blue spots of his body, Bai Yunfei couldn’t help but shed some tears in disappointment.

Resistance.

Humiliation.

Uselessness.



What about it? He couldn't do anything to change himself....

As he stroked at the jade stone pendant hung on his neck, the tears from his eyes began to slow down. This pendant was shaped like a crude cloud due to its rough craftsmanship, and one could tell that it was obviously made from low quality material. But because Bai Yunfei had kept this pendant next to him at all times and touched it for years, it had an especially glossy feel to it and shined to some degree.

This was the memento given to him by his mother.

"Mother....Is there really a point for me to live like this?" Bai Yunfei muttered to himself as he looked at the pendant.

"One day, when my little Yunfei grows up, he will be like a white cloud in the sky. Floating freely under the skies without worry...."

The loving words of his mother began to reverberate into his ears.

Wiping away the tears on his face, Bai Yunfei forcibly slapped at his face with his hands.

"I can't think like that! Mother's birthday is coming up soon. I just need some money so I can repair mother and grandfather's grave! I can't let them see me unhappy like this!!"

Pacing himself with several deep breaths, Bai Yunfei calmed himself down and began to rethink of the events that happened today.

"What is going on with me? I didn't...feel like myself on the streets. Why in the world did I go and provoke those nobles....?"

"I'm myself still though. But...feels like I've a lot more things in my head now...I can feel it, but I just can't really seem to recall it clearly.

"Maybe I've worked so hardly recently I'm starting to see things? I wasn't feeling strange yesterday though."

Slapping his head, Bai Yunfei looked as if he was trying to forcibly jog his memory.

“Item Upgrade Technique...What's that?”

It was right at that moment something underneath his bed suddenly gave way, forcing his bed to sway unsteadily.

“Ugh, what got loose now? This stupid bed, really now....”

Stooping over, Bai Yunfei could see that the left side of the bed was clearly shorter than the other side. Originally, he had something propped up underneath. But when he moved about on his bed, the sudden movement brought the item elsewhere.

Groping around underneath the bed, Bai Yunfei retrieved a single object.

It was just a brick.

Just as he was about to get it up and reset the bed, a sudden notification popped up into his head.

Equipment Grade: Normal

Attack: 9

Upgrade Requirement: 1 Soulpoints

This sudden notification had startled Bai Yunfei, causing the brick to fall from his hand and onto the ground.

At the same time, the notification disappeared from his mind.

Fearful, Bai Yunfei looked around himself for some time, only to see that nothing was amiss. After a long time, Bai Yunfei finally managed to pick up his courage and picked up the brick again.

Sure enough, as soon as he picked up the brick, the same notification appeared.

When he put the brick down, the notification disappeared.

And when he picked it up, the notification appeared again.

“Yea...this points to it, but....what does upgrade mean?”

“Upgrade....”

Another notification popped up into his head. In the next second, his mind went blank as if something from the innermost parts of his soul lessened. But even before he could even speak, the feeling disappeared.

Upgrade Successful

Another notification similar to the last one popped up in his head, prompting him to look down at the brick in his hand.

Equipment Grade: Normal  
Upgrade Level: +1  
Attack: 9  
Additional Attack: 1  
Upgrade Requirement: 2 Soulpoints

Just seemingly, it felt as if the brick in Bai Yunfei’s hand grew a little heavier than before. It also felt a little sturdier too. But Bai Yunfei didn’t know if this was just an illusion of his.

“Another notification. Attack...does that mean how strong it is? If I upgrade it, does it grow stronger? What the heck? Am I dreaming or something?”

He pressed a hand to the injured part of his waist, only to flinch and take in two deep breaths of frosty air—he wasn’t dreaming.

“Maybe this....has something to do with my strange behavior today?”

Thinking hard about it for a while, Bai Yunfei shook his head. It was pointless to continue thinking about it now since there weren't any clues to follow. It didn't hurt him, so he didn't feel too bad about it.

“If I continue to upgrade it....what’s going to happen?”

Bai Yunfei couldn't help but feel curious about this.

“Upgrade.”

Like if his heart had skipped a beat again, Bai Yunfei looked to the brick.

Upgrade Successful

Equipment Grade: Normal  
Upgrade Level: +2  
Attack: 9  
Additional Attack: 2  
Upgrade Requirement: 3 Soulpoints

Waving the brick, Bai Yunfei felt that the brick had gotten a little sturdier than before.

“Let’s try it again....”

Not too long afterwards....

Upgrade Successful

Equipment Grade: Normal  
Upgrade Level: +6  
Attack: 9  
Additional Attack: 6  
Upgrade Requirement: 7 Soulpoints

But then the next time Bai Yunfei upgraded it, an unexpected result came up.

Upgrade Failed

“Wha?? Failed?? What does that mean?”

Looking at the brick, he could see that the upgrade level had gone from from +6 to +5.

“So...it can fail as well. And failure means....it’ll drop down a level?”

And now he was even more curious. He was already captivated by this ‘interesting’ thing like a small child stumbling onto a new toy.

No longer taking a look at the brick with each upgrade, Bai Yunfei stared at the brick and thought to himself nonstop:

“Upgrade.”

“Upgrade.”

“Upgrade.”

He felt rather excited by this, but even as he was thinking out the command, a sudden pang of dizziness hit his head. It felt as if his soul had been emptied out, and his mind was rapidly dropping out of consciousness as he collapsed onto his bed.

Just before he could lose all consciousness however, he could very vaguely feel a string of notifications pop up into his head.

Upgrade Successful

Equipment Grade: Normal  
Upgrade Level: +10  
Attack: 9

Additional Attack: 16  
+10 Additional Effect: Attacks have a 1% chance of stunning the target for a maximum of three seconds.  
(If attacking the head, the chance of stunning increases to 5%)  
Upgrade Requirement: 7 Soulpoints

“ ..... ”

## Chapter 3: Uncle Wu

---

Tonight was a quiet night. Due to the broken holes in the roof, the moonlight was able to shine down its rays through these holes and illuminate the slightly crooked bed underneath it. From there, the person sleeping on it was positioned at an equally crooked angle.

Then; just out of the blue, there was a faint creaking sound from the shabby-looking door. As quiet like a cat, two silhouettes entered the room.

When they saw the youngster sleeping soundly on his bed, the two of them lowered their guard in relief.

“Is that him?” One of them asked the other.

By borrowing the lighting given off by the moonlight, the other person who had been asked nodded his head. “Yes; that’s him. Let’s get working then.”

Walking up to the bed, one of the two men untied a burlap sack from his shoulder and unfurled it onto the floor next to the bed. Judging by his actions, it looked like the two were ready to stuff the sleeping youngster into the sack.

“Don’t blame us two brothers for this, kid. Just blame your own luck for having angered the young master. In any case, there’s no point in living such a poor life, you’d be better off dying now and reincarnating. Try your best to be reincarnated into the household of a wealthy family next time....”

“Cut the crap and hurry up and stuff him into the bag.”

“Hmm? Why’s he holding a brick? Heh; he’s holding onto it pretty tightly...”

“Forget about it and let him have it. I’ve a plan. When we get to the spot, we won’t give him any weapons. We’ll just let him have that brick; he’s going to die either way. When the young master

finds out, he'll definitely be happy. Who knows, he might just reward us!"

"Haha!! It's a mean plan, but I like it..."

Working nimbly, the two men worked as if they had done this many times in the past. Loading the youngster into the bag and tying it tightly, they heaved him over their shoulders and left the room to disappear into the night....

Bai Yunfei was having a very nice sleep. Even though his senses were slightly hazy, he felt very warm all over his body. He didn't know where he was either, but he didn't want to think about it so that he could continue on sleeping.

"Young lad, wake up, hurry now...."

The sudden intrusion of someone's voice immediately caused Bai Yunfei to wake up. Feeling that someone was shaking at his shoulders, Bai Yunfei's eyes opened up and sat himself upright.

Scratching at his foggy head, Bai Yunfei murmured, "Wha—? Where am I?"

It came to him all at once. This wasn't his house. He was sleeping on straw, and right next to him was an old man with white hair and a look of concern on his face.

"Elder sir, where is this place? Why am I here?" The concerned tone of this old man had helped Bai Yunfei relax a little, but not enough to stop him from asking the old man.

"What? You don't even know why you were captured and brought here? Oh my...young lad, you've offended someone you shouldn't have offended. I presume it was the animals of the Zhang that brought you here?"

"The Zhangs? Zhang Yang?" Bai Yunfei was speechless at first, but the answer came to him quick enough.

"Ah, so you do know him, how did you manage to anger him!"



Woe is you....” The old man sighed and shook his head.

Looking around the place, Bai Yunfei asked again, “What are we doing being locked here? How do we get out?”

Aside from the layer of hay that covered the floor, there was nothing else to this room. There was no items, no windows, no nothing. To the left of him, Bai Yunfei could make the sight of several wooden bars—was this a jail cell? The walls to this room were three to four meters tall, and just beyond these bars was a spacious field about a hundred meters in circumference. But just beyond that, Bai Yunfei could see several layers of fancy-looking seats.

He and the old men were together in a corner to this one room. And on the other side some distance away were roughly ten men or so. But compared to the old man, these men all looked exceedingly vicious. One would only need a single look to know that these men were not of the nicer sort. But as vicious as they looked, they were all huddled together in their own corner and whispered to themselves as if to mind their own business.

“Get out?” The elder had a strange look on his face at those words, “Lad, you’ve...dear me! Everyone in Talus City knows that only a few people can live and get away with offending the young heir of the Zhangs....”

“What?! I’m...I’m going to die?” Bai Yunfei cried out with a louder voice than before, causing the unsavory glares of the other inhabitants of the room to focus on him. Frantically, Bai Yunfei asked the old man with a quieter voice than before, “Elder sir, are...are you being honest?”

“My....my dear lad, don’t be afraid....well, to be truthful, being afraid will do you no good here either....” The old man rubbed at his shoulder. “I’ve heard them say before that they’ll have us fight someone. If we can survive, they’ll let us go...” There was a hollow laugh following this.

Clearly, the old man didn't think that as an old man and a young boy, they had a good chance of surviving.

"Fight...." Bai Yunfei trembled to himself with terror piling up in his heart.

Somehow, the comforting expression on the old man's face had been enough to calm him down to some degree. Perhaps the kind expression of this elder was similar to that of his own grandfather.

"Elder sir, you..."

"My family name is Wu, so just call me uncle Wu."

"Uhm, uncle Wu, why are you here too?"

It had been an unexpected thing to see that the kindly old man would suddenly grow distressed. There was but a malevolent look in his eyes and his teeth were tightly gritted together as if he became some sort of vicious beast ready to tear someone apart.

This sudden transformation of the old man caused Bai Yunfei to become startled. Shrinking his body into the corner, Bai Yunfei began to feel afraid for himself.

It took some time before the old man's anger finally receded away from his eyes. Sucking in a deep breath, he finally spoke out, "My apologies, did I scare you...?"

Seeing that the old man had returned to normal, Bai Yunfei gave a sigh of relief and waved his hand, "No no...you didn't. Uncle Wu, if you don't want to talk about it, then there's no need to talk about it...."

"In truth, it's not something that should be kept a secret. It was because I had a wood cutter in my hand when I tried to kill Zhang Yang. But halfway through, I was caught by his subordinates and thrown into here."

"Wha?!" Out of all the reasons Bai Yunfei thought the old man was in here for, this was not one of them.

“That animal, Zhang Yang! He...he’s the reason why my granddaughter is dead!” Uncle Wu’s body was wracked with emotions as he continued to speak, “My poor little Yu’er was only sixteen!

“Three days ago, my dear granddaughter talked about buying a bolt of cloth to make me a set of robes. She said that with winter coming, she wasn’t about to let me freeze...” By this point, uncle Wu’s eyes were filled with a loving devotion to his granddaughter. And from the small smile on his face, Bai Yunfei could tell that this old man loved his granddaughter dearly. Bai Yunfei’s own grandfather once looked at him in the same way too, after all.

“But...but when she went outside, heaven saw fit to separate us two forever!!” Tears sprung freely from uncle Wu’s eyes from the grief he felt.

“The neighbor next door managed to tell me that little Yu’er was taken in by Zhang Yang’s servants, but by the time I got there, she....she was already a stone-cold corpse!”

“My little Yu’er! My dear granddaughter! Unwilling to take Zhang Yang’s insults, she was ultimately killed off by him!”

Once again, the ferocious expression of a primal beast appeared on uncle Wu’s face. This time however, Bai Yunfei wasn’t as afraid as before. Instead, he too felt as angry and sad over uncle Wu’s story.

“My neighbors advised me to swallow my anger after I buried my dear granddaughter. They said that I wouldn’t be able to fight the Zhangs. I knew that. We are commoners after all. Even if the Zhangs kill several of us, the lord mayor would only turn a blind eye to us. Our lives are like ants to people like him.

“But still, my hate remained! If I was unable to do anything, how could I ever apologize to my dear granddaughter? I would die with eternal regret! And so I grabbed the wood chopper in my home and took use of the time he’d be drunk from the brothel. When he

came out, I took my chance to rush forward and chop him to pieces! I wanted him to pay for the life of my granddaughter with his own!

“But...but I wasn’t even able to touch even his clothes! I was stopped by those thugs of his and imprisoned here as a result. It’s been an entire day and night already....cough cough....”

Because of his excessive agitation, the old man began to cough as soon as he finished speaking.

For the entire time uncle Wu told his story, Bai Yunfei was quiet. He had no words to console the man, and all he could do was to hold onto the man with a trembling hand. Patting him on the back, Bai Yunfei spoke in concern, “Uncle Wu, please calm yourself. It does your body no good. He is no human, but a beast in human skin. One day, he’ll get what he deserves....”

Uncle Wu looked to be lost in thought when he looked to Bai Yunfei. After a period of silence, the man finally spoke, “Alas! My little Yu’er, she used to hold my hand like this and pat my back and chide me for being too emotional....young lad, I’ve never asked for your name yet, have I?”

“My name is Bai Yunfei, you can call me Yunfei.”

“Ah, yes, Yunfei. I can see that you’re a good child....Children like you are getting rarer and rarer. People nowadays are all the same, no matter if they hide it or not. They only care for themselves and don’t care if anyone dies. If they can do it, they’ll do it. People like them, they’ve thrown away what it means to be human! As long as a person lives on this world, they should always live a life guilt-free and with a clear conscious....”

No sooner did he finish speaking did the old man stare at Bai Yunfei, “What’s wrong? You don’t agree with what I said?”

“No, that’s not it. I was just reminded of my deceased grandfather. He...he once said these words before.”

It was right at this moment several men appeared right outside the bars to the prison. Dropping a bucket of steamed buns and a bucket of water in front of the doors, one of the men called out, “Hey, you lot! Come and eat! Eat as much as you can, you’ll be needing that strength to fight for your lives soon enough!”

Since there was plenty of steamed buns in the bucket, uncle Wu only stood up to get some after the rest of the people in the cell had their fill. Scooping a bowl of water, he returned to Bai Yunfei’s side and handed him some, “Are you hungry? Eat now then, you’ll need that strength to survive.”

As the two of them ate their steamed buns, uncle Wu and Bai Yunfei began to talk to one another. When Bai Yunfei saw the kind expression on the older man’s face, Bai Yunfei could feel his heart tremble just slightly. Ever since his grandfather passed away, Bai Yunfei never thought that he’d be able to come across this ‘warm’ sensation again.

Finishing off their steamed buns, the two continued to talk for a small while. Before long, uncle Wu felt tired and leaned against the wall to get some sleep. Bai Yunfei continued to stay huddled in the corner by himself. It was only now that he managed to recall the events that happened yesterday.

“Why don’t I have any injuries on my body?” Bai Yunfei suddenly realized. Somehow, the thrashing he received yesterday was completely gone! Even his body felt rather comfortable instead of not.

“Did I....pass out yesterday night? Why though...?”

“Oh, right! I was upgrading the....the brick!!”

Subconsciously feeling the area around himself, Bai Yunfei’s fingers unexpectedly touched upon something with very distinct edges and corners—it was the brick from yesterday! The brick that he had been holding onto every since he passed out!

“When you were brought in yesterday night, you were holding onto that brick....perhaps there’s some sort of special significance to that brick?” Uncle Wu asked, but there was doubt in his voice.

“Uhm....no, not really. This is just the brick I use to even out my bed...” Bai Yunfei didn’t really know how to explain the situation, but luckily for him, uncle Wu didn’t seem to mind Bai Yunfei’s flustered speech. He chuckled upon Bai Yunfei’s answer, but beyond that, the older man said nothing else.

Looking down, Bai Yunfei looked at the brick in his hand.

Equipment Grade: Normal

Upgrade Level: +10

Attack: 9

Additional Attack: 16

+10 Additional Effect: Attacks have a 1% chance of stunning the target for a maximum of three seconds.

(If attacking the head, the chance of stunning increases to 5%.)

Upgrade Requirement: 12 Soulpoints

“Yea, what happened last night was real then....

“+10 Additional effect? Stunning? What does that mean? So if I beat someone with this brick, I can stun them? Why is there a percentage then?

“Should I try upgrading it again?”

But the thought of upgrading the brick was quickly abandoned. He lost his conscious yesterday evening because of that, how could he try to upgrade it again in this situation as if there was nothing to worry about?

As he held the brick, Bai Yunfei found himself lost in thought.

Time went by in this manner before a sudden clamor brought him out of his thoughts.

Turning his head, Bai Yunfei could see that the fancy seating around the place were beginning to fill up with all sorts of people. They all wore rich-looking robes and all looked as if they belonged to a wealthy family. Each one of them had an expectant look on their faces and talked to one another. Some of them even pointed their fingers downwards at the prisoners and whispered even more about something.

“Ladies and gentleman! I welcome you all to the Coliseum!”

Suddenly, a loud voice resonated throughout the place. Those whispering nobles immediately grew quiet and their faces lit up with excitement; some of them looked even more....crazier.

“These lowly commoners will soon be fighting each other like wild animals for the sake of survival! Today, we shall have an exciting and bloody Coliseum! Let us all enjoy today’s visual feast!”

## Chapter 4: Slaughter in the Coliseum

---

The Coliseum was one of the more popular places in the underworld of Talus City. It was controlled by the Zhangs, and many wealthy families and nobles would come to see it. Throughout the entire Azure Cloud Province, there were many people that knew about it.

This was a place where the nobles could use to kill time when they had time to lose. This was a place where they could watch a primal scene of carnage to their pleasure!

Despite being called Coliseum, it wasn't a place where beasts were fought. The ones who would be fighting here would be humans!

Bai Yunfei's eyes were wide-opened, and his mouth was dropped wide in astonishment as well. Even his entire body was shaking from the fear he felt—never did he ever imagine that such a brutal event would happen between humans.

At the center of the Coliseum, two red-colored figures were engaged in a fierce hand-to-foot battle. For the sake of prolonging the time spent fighting, weapons were generally disallowed from the Coliseum. If one wished to live, they would have to use their hands, arms, head, and even teeth. It was only when the enemy was rendered unable to stand would one be permitted to live. But being defeated generally meant death.

And it was because of that reason why these figures were red-colored, it was because they were drenched in their own blood! Not only was it their blood, it was the blood of their enemy as well.

One of the two combatants was built like a bear and had equally thick eyebrows. As of right now, he was panting heavily, and one of his eyes was already nothing more but a bloody mess. His left ear had already been torn away from his main body, and his body quivered from the pain and adrenaline coursing through his body.



From his remaining one eye, one could see the madness in them. A primal beast-like howl could be heard before he raised one of his fists to attack the tinier man in front of him.

The other man was heavily injured as well, but he looked to be in a much better state of health than the other. When the first man came with his fist outstretched, the second chose not to dodge. Instead, he met the man's fist with one of his own for a fist-to-fist collision!

In the moment the second man punched outwards, his right arm seemed to swell to some degree. And when the two fists collided, a miserable shriek erupted from the first man before he staggered backwards several steps. The fingers to his right hand were bent into abnormal shapes and blood could be seen seeping out from his wounds. There were some parts to his arm where bone could be seen jutting out!

The other man shook his hand to wipe off the blood from his arm—his opponent's blood. He even licked up some of it in his excitement with his eyes emitting a terrifying glow. He didn't look like a human in this one moment. Instead, he looked more like a beast ready to slaughter its prey.

The 'audience' spectating from the outer ring let out excited shouts and screams at the sight. In this one moment, these graceful and distinguished nobles had not even a single iota of that attitude to them. Their faces were flushed with excitement and their eyes were wide open as if afraid of missing even a second of the excitement happening in front of them.

Like Bai Yunfei, the entire audience felt their entire body start to tremble. But the only difference between the two was that they were trembling from excitement while Bai Yunfei was trembling from fear.

All around the two combatants in the field, there were multiple bloodstains soaked into the ground. Aside from the blood, there

were also the carcasses of several other figures from the previous fights.

Above on the 'terrace', there were several luxuriously-looking chairs. Out of these chairs, three of them were occupied by three figures watching the event down below.

The one on the left was none other than Zhang Yang!

Still playing the part of an elegant young nobleman with his fan, Zhang Yang pointed at the middle-aged man down below and spoke to the person next to him, "Second master Zheng, how do you feel about this Coliseum of mine? It's a place that makes the blood of any person boil, doesn't it? That person there is the most fearsome person in this Coliseum, Direwolf...."

Right besides him was a purple-robed young man more handsome than Zhang Yang. Even as he was looking at the bloody scene down below, his face was emotionless. Nodding his head, he spoke, "Not bad, this person's already in a half-awakened state. It won't take much longer before he awakens his soulforce and becomes a full-fledged Soul Apprentice." Even though he was complimenting the man, there was a slight tint of disapproval to his face, and he was clearly complimenting him half-heartedly.

Zhang Yang hadn't paid too much attention to it however and laughed, "A mere Soul Apprentice, there's no way such a character like that would be worthy of lord Zheng's eye. The house of Zheng has so many geniuses and so many capable people, how could my own family even compare...?"

He knew that second master Zheng came directly from the capital and was without a doubt looking down on his own family. So the fact that he came to Talus City this time for the Coliseum was a wonder on its own. All Zhang Yang had to do was to make sure he served him well without offending him.

To their right was a person draped from head to toe in a black cloak so that his face couldn't be seen. His hands were crossed

against his chest and his head was bowed down onto it, making it seem as if he was sleeping....

By now, the battle in the ring was reaching a conclusion. Now that the bigger man was no longer a match for the middle-aged man, his movements were slower than before. The wounds on his body was growing more and more numerous, and the crowd's chanting and cheering were growing in volume proportionally.

In the end, the middle-aged man brought the bigger man to the ground with a kick. With his right foot slamming onto the man's chest, his two hands grabbed hold of the downed enemy's arms and gave them a heavy pull!

Somehow, the arms of the man were torn off without resistance!!

A cheer unprecedented in volume erupted from the audience. Due to the gory nature of the scene, some of the female spectators turned their heads away from the sight. However, some of them glanced surreptitiously back towards the ring with excitement filling their red faces.

At last, the middle-aged man brought his foot down onto the man's head, crushing it as if he would crush a watermelon....

Seeing the white and red substance splash out onto the ground, Bai Yunfei could hold it in no longer and begun to vomit in one of the corners to the room. Uncle Wu himself started to tremble and clutched at Bai Yunfei.

Even the more ferocious-looking men in the room started to fear for their lives as well.

At that moment, the wooden doors to this 'prison' was thrown open with a dozen armed figures walking into the room. The man leading the group came to a stop in front of them and barked, "Everybody, out! Take your weapons and prepare to fight for your freedom!"

The group of men looked at one another, but in the end, they

filed out of the room one by one. Uncle Wu and Bai Yunfei were the last two to leave.

Whenever a person walked out from the room, someone standing at the gates of the room handed them a weapon from the war chest before letting them onto the ring.

Still at a loss for words, he and uncle Wu followed the rest of the group out. When it was their turn to receive a weapon, uncle Wu was given a shabby-looking hatchet.

Standing awkwardly by the door, Bai Yunfei waited for them to hand him a weapon of his own. But it seemed that this man was already let in on some sort of secret before hand and only smiled at Bai Yunfei. No weapon was given to Bai Yunfei.

“Where’s...where’s my weapon?”

“Haha, isn’t that a weapon there in your hands? What else do you want? Cut the crap and get on out already!” The man laughed as he eyed the brick in his hands. For the entire time, Bai Yunfei had been holding onto this brick as if it would help make him feel safer.

With an unceremonious kick, the man sent Bai Yunfei into the ring.

Chasing after uncle Wu, Bai Yunfei was still completely bewildered by the situation. Seeing so many nobles around him size up the other cellmates of his and himself, Bai Yunfei came to a startling realization.

“We’re nothing more than ants in their eyes...”

From up above on the terrace, Zhang Yang stood up and paced forward several steps to address the crowd. “Ladies and gentleman! Today we will be having an extra special event! The winner of the previous bout, Direwolf, will be fighting against this gruesome group of criminals!”

Finishing up his speech, Zhang Yang looked to the ring where he

saw uncle Wu and Bai Yunfei standing in the back. A vile look of vindication and satisfaction entered his eyes at the sight of those two, but when he saw the brick in Bai Yunfei's eyes, he was taken back for a brief moment. Then, a smile crept onto his face before he turned to give a praising look to one of his subordinates.

Uncle Wu had been the very first to turn around when heard the voice of Zhang Yang. Glaring hatefully at Zhang Yang, uncle Wu's entire body shook and his eyes reflected a strong urge to kill.

Bai Yunfei had also recognized Zhang Yang. He could even sense the ridicule and vicious sentiments from Zhang Yang as if it were clear as day...

"It really is him, but why? Was it because I offended that young miss of his yesterday? But still. What gives him the right to decide whether I live or die? What gives him the right to look at me as if I'm an ant?"

There was a nagging sensation in his heart that refused to leave him, but it was quickly spreading throughout his heart and was ready to explode.

Pointing at Direwolf, Zhang Yang addressed the cellmates down below, "You are all inmates serving the death penalty. Your kind spend the days of your lives killing, burning, and looting. By all rights, you all should have been killed already, but today, I will give you one chance to live. You will all fight him to survive. Whomever remains standing after half an hour will be given pardon to leave!"

His words hadn't been hard to understand. The spectators all started to whisper and point to one another with 'interest' showing clearly on their faces.

"So they're all death row inmates. There's so many of them with weapons, can that Direwolf even win?"

"Those ten at front are criminals for sure, but look at the two in

the back. Aren't those two just an old man and a kid?"

"Hey, look! What's that the kid's holding??"

"A brick???"

"A brick...haha! It's a brick!!"

"....."

After the men in the ring heard what Zhang Yang said, their eyes began to shine brightly with hope. No one wanted to die given the chance to live, after all. Gathering together, these dozen figures began to whisper something to one another.

Clearly, Direwolf had known about this special 'event', and stood where he was with his arms crossed against his chest. Even though he was up against plenty of armed people, he remained calm. His foot was still dripping with the blood from the enemy of the last round....

Looking away from Zhang Yang, uncle Wu's eyes stared at Direwolf first, and then back to Bai Yunfei, "Yunfei, listen to me. We should hide off to the side. If he comes at us, we should run away. Don't fight him, we'll never win if we do. There's thirty minutes, and this ring isn't small. We just need to do our best to evade him, we may just be able to escape from this alive!"

Zhang Yang sat back down onto his chair and waved his hand, "Begin!"

Given the command, Direwolf revealed a cruel smile and slowly walked towards the group of people.

The criminals all clenched at their weapons tightly and spread themselves out. Each one of them were deathly afraid and thus didn't dare to move forward.

Taking one step at a time towards them, Direwolf's foot left a bloody splotch on the ground with each step he took due to the remains of the blood of his enemy. Since his entire body was

drenched with blood, he looked like a demon walking away from a bloodbath. With each step he took, it felt like another step on each of the criminal's hearts.

At last, one of the criminals succumbed to his fear and let out a primal roar, "He's already injured from his last fight, if we all fight him now, we can kill him and live!"

When a situation was given too much push, there would ultimately be a pull. The entire group of people charged at him all at once with bloodshot eyes and frenzied actions to charge at Direwolf with their weapons!

A pejorative look entered Direwolf's eyes before he brought his hand up to grab at an incoming spear. With a bit of force, the spear was robbed of its forward momentum before Direwolf then swung the spear with enough strength to knock the user into the two people besides him.

Then leaning towards the side, Direwolf managed to dodge a thrown shortblade. With a kick of his foot, he sent a mace flying away and then made use of a sweeping motion to down a group of people with the spear in his hand.

In a single instant, the entire group was completely broken apart!

What came next could only be said to be a one-sided slaughter fest...

Crushing their necks with a kick and snapping chests with a stamp, Direwolf then disarmed and took a sword into his hand to then bisect another three people by the waist with a single cut....

At first, the audience had been stunned by the scene. But after Direwolf killed several of the criminals, the audience erupted into a refreshed bout of cheers! Since they were accustomed to longer bouts of fighting, this sudden 'delightful' slaughter gave them a completely foreign but completely welcome sense of stimulation...

Even though they were given thirty minutes, only ten minutes

had passed before over ten criminals were killed!

There were a few that threw down their weapons and ran away. But even they were overtaken in a few steps.

Whoever was overtaken was killed!

In the end, no one was left standing around Direwolf.

And then, he shifted his eyes to uncle Wu and Bai Yunfei!



## Chapter 5: Uncle Wu's Death and....Transformation!

---

Specks of blood dripped away from Direwolf's body with each step he took towards Bai Yunfei and uncle Wu. Right behind him, the broken limbs and battered bodies of his recent victims littered a small portion of the ring. At the start of this fight, Direwolf felt like a demon walking away from a bloodbath, but now, it no longer felt like it, he truly was a demon!

When Direwolf's eyes connected with Bai Yunfei, Bai Yunfei felt a tyrannical force of pressure assault him straight on, causing the very depths of his soul to tremble with fright. Now, his entire body was deadlocked and paralyzed with fear. With the sight of blood filling his eyes everywhere in front of him, Bai Yunfei could only watch as the terrifying demon step towards him one foot at a time.

“Yunfei, get up, we must run! You go that way, hurry!” Somehow managing to overcome his fear at the sight of Direwolf's approach, uncle Wu yelled at Bai Yunfei to snap him out of it before running off to one side.

No sooner did he take ten steps did uncle Wu look back at Bai Yunfei. To his discovery, Bai Yunfei was still staring sluggishly at the incoming demon!

“Yunfei, run away!” Uncle Wu shouted out a warning, but it was to no use. Bai Yunfei simply didn't hear him.

As of right now, Bai Yunfei was gripped tightly by fear. That was all he knew, and even the thought of 'running' failed to register in his mind. The massacre that befell the others continued to replay in his mind, and he could hardly fail to connect those people to himself. They had died, and now it was his turn. Death was coming!

By now, Direwolf was already very close to him!

Seeing that his shouts were ineffective in snapping Bai Yunfei out from his fear, uncle Wu looked at Direwolf, then to Bai Yunfei, and then to the hatchet in his own hands. When he looked back at Bai Yunfei, there was now a look of determination in his eyes. Running with all his might, uncle Wu rushed at Direwolf and threw the hatchet at him!

“You demon, try and kill me!”

For the sake of using himself as bait, uncle Wu would draw Direwolf away so that Bai Yunfei would have a chance to escape!

Tilting his body so that the hatchet would fly past him, Direwolf casted a glance at uncle Wu. It was a surprise to see that this man would come chase after him instead, but when he looked back to Bai Yunfei pensively, an evil grin began to creep onto his face....

Picking up a nearby mace from the ground, he then tossed it straight towards Bai Yunfei!

Still completely lifeless, Bai Yunfei could only watch as the mace come towards him; if this mace were to hit, death would be a huge possibility!

“Bang!” The sound of metal hitting flesh echoed throughout the ring, eliciting a gasp of shock from the entire audience.

Their shock wasn't due to the fact that the mace had hit someone. It was precisely because the mace had hit someone else other than the person it was intended for. The mace, it had hit uncle Wu!

At the very last second, uncle Wu had made it back to Bai Yunfei's side and pushed him out of the way!

With him taking Bai Yunfei's place, the mace had slammed ruthlessly onto uncle Wu's chest!

“Puuegh!” A mouthful of warm blood came pouring out from uncle Wu's mouth to sprinkle into the air and then onto the mace before finally coming back down.

Some of his blood fell on the mace, and some of that hot blood came splashing onto Bai Yunfei's face, but more importantly, while it was hot, all that he could feel on his mind was an icy-cold feeling.

All of a sudden, the entire audience felt as if it had gone silent. When Bai Yunfei looked at the downed uncle Wu, he could still see the look of concern the older man had for him....

Regaining the ability of movement, Bai Yunfei hurried to uncle Wu's side. Holding him onto the ground, he knelt by the man's side with a stunned expression, "Un—uncle Wu....?"

This sudden development had stunned the audience so much that many of them felt their breaths die up in their throat. Looking at Bai Yunfei, everyone started to whisper to each other.

Even Direwolf had stopped moving. Rather than walking towards Bai Yunfei, he stood there with a look of complete interest at the two figures.

Rivlets of blood continued to spill down from uncle Wu's mouth and his chest was partially caved in with so much blood that his robes were already completely soaked with it.

"Yun—Yunfei....ah....you've finally....woken up....you mu—must run...."

"Uncl—uncle Wu....Stop talking, don't say anymore....yo-you can't die! Please....you can't...." Bai Yunfei wiped at the blood coming out from uncle Wu's mouth, but even as he wiped, the tears from his eyes began to drip down onto the man's face.

"Ha...ha....Yunfei, worry not....I've no....no regrets....But you must.....you must live on....survive!"

"Do you understand...? Child, when I....when I first saw you, I knew....I knew that should we met on the outside....my granddaughter....if she were alive....I'd make sure....I'd make sure that you'd meet with her....you and her....you two would most

certainly....most certainly be a happy couple! Ah....haha....” Either he had thought of a happy thought, or that his final moments were rapidly ending, uncle Wu’s words had come out with a rapid flow. But then following his words, the sounds of coughing came up. Not only was he coughing out blood, but parts of his internal organs were coming out as well!

“Un—uncle Wu....” It felt as if blades were cutting at Bai Yunfei’s heart. He didn’t even know what to say other than to repeat uncle Wu’s name again.

With one hand clasped tightly to Yunfei’s hand, the other trembling hand wiped away at Bai Yunfei’s tears with a smile on his face.

“Yunfei....you must....survive....no matter the hardships....don’t give up....remember my words...live on....live with a....a conscience!

“Ah....what a shame....in the end...I...I never...got revenge for...for Yu’er...”

The hand that was touching Bai Yunfei’s face finally dropped like a puppet with its strings cut...

“Uncle Wu....uncle Wu...!”

Repeating uncle Wu’s name mechanically now, Bai Yunfei could only look at the deceased man’s face. Even though it had only been half a day since the two had met each other, Bai Yunfei made sure that he’d remember uncle Wu’s face and etch this memory into his heart.

“Ah!!

“Aahhhhh!!!

“Aaaaaahhhhhhhhhhh!!!!!!”

Tossing his head back, Bai Yunfei let loose a heart-wrenching cry of sorrow to the heavens. Two red streams flowed down from his

eyes—he was crying tears of blood!

On top of the terrace, Zhang Yang had a sadistic smile on his face as he looked on at Bai Yunfei with satisfaction.

The young lord Zheng was also looking at Bai Yunfei albeit with a different look on his face now.

Even the black-robed man had turned his head up to look at the situation in the ring as well....

On the other hand, Direwolf stared icily at Bai Yunfei. With the show done and over with, he continued onto his path towards Bai Yunfei.

But then he saw Bai Yunfei suddenly stop his scream and then slowly rise up from the ground. In his hand was the brick, and then he began to walk towards Direwolf himself!

For some sort of odd reason, when Bai Yunfei looked at Direwolf with those bloody-red eyes, Direwolf felt his heart freeze up with fear.

“Fear? Impossible...”

Shaking his head to snap out of it, Direwolf met Bai Yunfei’s pace to walk up to him. Since this was his final opponent, he was determined to slowly torment Bai Yunfei to death....

When there was practically no distance left between the two, Direwolf finally raised his right arm and aimed a punch at Bai Yunfei’s face.

But just as quickly, Bai Yunfei raised the brick and slammed it onto Direwolf’s fist.

Given Direwolf’s set of skills, he could easily dodge a brick if he wanted to, but he didn’t feel that it was necessary at all. A brick? He could shatter an entire wall of it with a single punch!

But breaking the brick and then the boy’s arm? That wasn’t a bad choice either. Determined, Direwolf’s lips curled upwards into a

cold grin.

“Crack!”

The very first noise was the brick making contact with Direwolf’s fist.

The second sound wasn’t the brick being crushed however, it was the sound of his own fist being fractured!!

In complete and utter confusion, Direwolf looked at his bent fingers. For that moment, he had forgotten not only about the pain, but about his follow up!

Bai Yunfei on the other hand, had not!

As soon as he broke Direwolf’s hand, Bai Yunfei leapt forward with the brick outstretched to smash it onto Direwolf’s head!

By the time Direwolf snapped back to awareness, the brick was already too close to his head for him to dodge—would his head be broken as easily as his fist had?

“Don’t fuck with me!”

Instantaneously, the energy that Direwolf had previously been faintly aware of suddenly exploded outwards from his body and then over his head. The skin around his face and head began to throb slightly before suddenly growing harder somewhat....had it grown stronger really?

“Eh?” A happy look appeared on Zhang Yang’s face, “Has he broke through?”

“Pow!” Came a sound.

The brick made contact with Direwolf’s head, but this time, no bone had been broken.

“I’m safe! And I...I’ve broke through!”

Elation filled every inch of Direwolf’s mind, but he tried to quash that feeling down for the time being to focus on the match. A

malevolent sneer appeared once more on his face as he lifted his hand for a counterattack, but suddenly, a pang of dizziness struck him!

+10 Additional Effect: Attacks have a 1% chance of stunning the target for a maximum of three seconds.

(If attacking the head, the chance of stunning increases to 5%.)

Activation successful!

“Eh?” Another sound came from the terrace, but this time, it was the cloaked man who spoke!

“Uncle Qin, what’s wrong?” Lord Zheng asked.

“I thought I felt that...that brick have soulforce coming from it...”

“What? Could that brick be....be a soul armament! Impossible!”

“Hm....perhaps it was because of Direwolf’s awakening. His step into the Soul Apprentice realm must have sent some soulforce around itself and confused even me....that youngster’s soulforce seems to be awakening too. It’s slightly weaker, but there was still a change....perhaps I was wrong.”

The sudden pang of dizziness left Direwolf at a complete loss. Because of that, the transformation over his head had been released, forcing his head to revert back to normal.

For a second time, Bai Yunfei’s brick came at his head!

“Crack!”

Ah.

This time, there was the sound of bone breaking.

Direwolf stumbled backwards, but Bai Yunfei came again with a third strike!

This time, not only was there the sound of bone breaking, but blood came splurting out too!

Dizzy beyond belief, Direwolf no longer found himself able to maintain standing and came crashing down to the ground.

Bai Yunfei's eyes were bloodshot still and he made no moves to stop where he was. Hopping onto the down Direwolf, Bai Yunfei straddled him and began to wail at the man with the brick!!

When the dizziness finally receded from his head, all Direwolf could feel was pain....

And then when his vision came back, all he could see was a brick!

And then, he felt nothing more—he knocked out completely this time—this was to say, he'd never have the chance of ever waking up again.

On the third strike, Bai Yunfei had slammed it down onto Direwolf's face so that it'd knock him out cold.

Over and over again, he slammed the brick onto Direwolf's face.

The entire audience was silent. Everyone could only stare at this brick-wielding kid in absolute shock; Zhang Yang, lord Zheng, and even uncle Qin included....

It was hard to say which swing of the brick had killed Direwolf, even Direwolf himself would never know the answer, let alone the audience.

No one knew how long it took for Bai Yunfei to finally stop since he could no longer feel that sensation of 'brick meeting face'....

His eyes were no longer crying, but his face was still wet with blood. Raising a hand to knead his eyes, Bai Yunfei could finally see clearly.

Stunned at his handwork of Direwolf beneath him, Bai Yunfei was motionless. Then, silently, he stood up and walked to uncle Wu's corpse. Lifting the corpse up, Bai Yunfei turned back to



Zhang Yang and spoke.

“I’ve won. Let me leave....”

Having been stared down by Bai Yunfei’s icy eyes, Zhang Yang found himself unable to stop his heart from beating rapidly. But then he snapped out from his fear quickly with a still trembling body and a squirming face.

Looking at first to Direwolf’s corpse and then to Bai Yunfei, a sinister look appeared on his face.

Pointing a shaking finger at Bai Yunfei, Zhang Yang cried out hysterically.

“Men! Guards! Kill him, kill him at once!!!!”

## Chapter 6: Do You Desire Power?

---

Twenty to thirty armed men came rushing into the arena as soon as Zhang Yang gave the order and surrounded Bai Yunfei. But when they saw the bleeding brick in Bai Yunfei's hand, no one dared to step up first to attack him.

"You've said that if I win, you'd let me leave." Bai Yunfei gave a withering glare to Zhang Yang as he spoke.

"You! I—I'll...." Zhang Yang spluttered, his entire face growing flush with red as he tried to restrain himself.

The entire audience had recovered from their shock by now. In their eyes, it wasn't important who died. What was really important was if their death was exciting or not. Bai Yunfei's 'outstanding performance' had been far more than enough to give them an immense feeling of satisfaction, so with this current situation in the arena, everyone began to point fingers and whisper to one another about Bai Yunfei and Zhang Yang.

"He has a point. He's won already, so by rights, he should be granted leave, isn't that right? Or is your Coliseum merely just a place where members of the house of Zhang can kill whomever they want to kill??" Lord Zheng suddenly spoke out. Pointing a finger at the nobles gathered around here, he spoke, "If so, what is the point of all these people coming here then??"

His voice wasn't that loud, but it was enough to be heard through the silence of the audience. Even those that were whispering to one another were able to hear his voice. Expression showing their agreements surfaced on their faces as many of the people started to then look at Zhang Yang with disapproval.

Shades of blue and white alternated through Zhang Yang's face for a moment before in the end, he ended up forcing a smile to his lips and cupped his hands towards lord Zheng. With an apologetic smile to the audience, he spoke, "Haha...second lord Zheng is quite

correct. I lost composure of myself just now it seems, I'll allow him to leave..."

His subordinates on the arena below was given an eye signal soon afterwards.

But then lord Zheng cut in again once more, "Friend, I am about to leave as well. Why don't we leave together?" He spoke to Bai Yunfei.

Zhang Yang grew as red as a pig when he heard the other man speak again. He was deeply angered, but he didn't dare show it.

It had been his plan to let Bai Yunfei go but then hatch a plot to have him killed in secret later. But lord Zheng had obviously seen through this plot and so he spoke up in a way to protect Bai Yunfei's life.

Down below in the arena, Bai Yunfei was expressionless in the face, but his mind in perfect clarity. Knowing the situation, he said nothing more and walked towards the passageway where the armed guards just recently came out from. A short while later, he was up on the terrace and stood silently behind lord Zheng.

Bowing his head, Bai Yunfei didn't try to look off into Zhang Yang's direction even though he was only just several meters away. But the hand that was holding at the brick was clenched so tightly that the veins in his arms were bulging out against his skin. Bai Yunfei dared not to raise his head in case that he'd be unable to control himself and smash the brick into Zhang Yang's head. He knew that if he were to try, not only would he not be able to even reach Zhang Yang, he'd lose his life right where he stood.

"Well then, lord Zhang, I'll be taking my leave." Lord Zheng spoke casually without once looking at Zhang Yang. As he walked away, Bai Yunfei followed him with uncle Wu's corpse in tow. From behind Bai Yunfei, the one known as uncle Qin walked after the two with a thoughtful look at him....

In one of the more remote alleyways the northwest quadrant of Talus City, several people could be seen emerging from the Coliseum. After walking for some time, lord Zheng turned around to look at the still silent Bai Yunfei with a smile, “I am Zheng Kai of the house of Zheng in the capital. And you are....”

“Bai Yunfei.”

“Brother Yunfei. What....what do you plan to do now?”

Bai Yunfei was silent for some time as he looked to Zheng Kai, “I owe you for today. In the future, I’ll definitely return the favor many times over....”

“Haha, that’s not what I meant....I only just wanted to say a few words to help you, that’s all.” Noticing that Bai Yunfei had mistaken his words, Zheng Kai waved his hands, “What I meant was that you should try your best to appear in front of Zhang Yang again. Even though I was able to help you get out, I’ll be leaving very soon. As soon as I leave, he’ll definitely find an opportunity to seek trouble with you. In my opinion, you should leave this city.”

Bai Yunfei grew silent once again as he bowed his head to look at uncle Wu’s corpse.

“Thank you....” He spoke after a long period of silence.

Without paying attention to Zheng Kai anymore, Bai Yunfei left the alleyway with his head still bowed downwards.

“Today, you helped me. I, Bai Yunfei, will engrave this memory in my heart. When I become powerful, I’ll definitely repay the favor a hundredfold over!”

Zheng Kai couldn’t help but shake his head with a sigh as he watched Bai Yunfei leave.

Uncle Wu had once said that his family was located in one of the smaller streets to the south not too far away from where Bai Yunfei was currently at. Fortunately for him, none of the main streets were here, so not many would see the fact that he was covered

from head to toe in blood or the fact that he was carrying a corpse. If he had been seen, someone would have most likely brought him to the residence of the lord mayor already.

After scaring away three or four random passerbys on the streets, he finally arrived at the location of uncle Wu's house thanks to the trembling answer of the person Bai Yunfei asked. After handing uncle Wu's corpse to the family there, he turned about and left the place without paying mind to the scared but begrieved people behind him.

Returning back to his own home, Bai Yunfei washed off all of the blood on him and swapped into his only other pair of clean clothing. Taking a look at the home he had lived in for eighteen years, Bai Yunfei left the place without hesitation....

Underneath the dim moonlight of the night, Bai Yunfei could be found kneeling in front of his mother and grandfather's graves in one of the remote areas outside of Talus City. Just barely, he could be seen saying something in a low voice.

“And then I was helped by that Zheng Kai and left that place...”

“Mother...I understand now. If I don't want to be humiliated. If I don't want to be looked at like an ant. If I want to live freely. I have to have power....Power so great that no one would dare provoke me!”

“Mother. Grandfather said that I had to live life with a clear conscience....”

“Uncle Wu died to save me. I....I have to get revenge for him! I'll definitely make that Zhang Yang pay the price for what he did! For uncle Wu, for his granddaughter, and for myself!

“I've obtained a strange power. If I just study it, I know that I'll be able to use it to become stronger...”

Wiping away at his tears, Bai Yunfei stood up and prepared to leave when an elderly voice stopped him.

“Do you desire power?”

“Who’s there?!” The sudden voice had forced Bai Yunfei to leap up in shock. Swiftly turning around with the brick in hand, he turned to meet the mysterious person behind him.

“Oh? Your soulforce has already started to awaken? It’s still quite weak however....” There was a tint of surprise to his voice. “Haha, don’t be afraid, my little friend. I won’t hurt you.”

Thanks to the illumination of the moon, Bai Yunfei was able to see a kind-looking old man dressed in gray walk up to him. He had a friendly smile on his face as he spoke out in an equally kind voice.

“Who are you, and what do you want?” Bai Yunfei immediately asked the most two most important questions. Even though he felt no ill intentions coming from this man, Bai Yunfei made sure he was still holding onto the brick, though he relaxed just slightly.

“I’ve heard a good portion of what you said just now. I can see that your soulforce is starting to awaken, so I presume this is the special power you mentioned, correct?”

“However, I can tell you it’s impossible to get revenge with this little iota of power. Your soulforce is barely enough to qualify as a soul cultivator. That young kid from the Zhang is a middle-stage Soul Personage, but even he is far out of your reach.”

“What I want to tell you is that...I can help you grow stronger. I can help you get revenge. Are you willing to accept my help?”

At first, the old man had thought that the young man in front of him would grow excited at those words and the prospects of growing stronger, but....

“Why should I believe you?”

“Er....” The old man was taken back for a moment before he spoke in resignation, “What reason is there to lying to you? Very well then. I’ll just make you believe me then....”

As soon as the old man finished speaking, Bai Yunfei immediately felt the entire area around them light up. A wave of heat immediately assaulted his face, and in the next second, a pyre of flames erupted in the area around the old man and him!!

But instead of these flames being on the ground, they were floating in midair!

Illuminated by the flames, the old man smiled just slightly as he pointed at a boulder the size of a water jar not too far away. There was a slight rumbling sound before the boulder suddenly levitated up from the ground and into the air. Following the slight flexing of his fingers, there was a crackling sound before the boulder then shattered into dozens of pieces and fell back to the ground....

The entire sight in front of him left Bai Yunfei in a dizzying amount of shock! By the time he regained his composure, he suddenly realized....that he was floating in midair!!

All of these things happening one after another had sent Bai Yunfei into a flux. His mouth gaped wide open as he looked to the still smiling old man on the ground.

It was only after seeing the astonished expression on Bai Yunfei's face that the old man returned a satisfied smile. With a wave of his hand, Bai Yunfei was slowly levitated back down to the ground and the flames around them started to shrink away. It didn't disappear completely, but rather, it turned into a fireball the size of a washbasin and floated off to the side as if the old man intended to use it for lighting.

"How was it, young man, do you believe me now? I'll say it again. I can help you grow strong. I can help you get revenge. Do you accept?"

Bai Yunfei's head lowered itself to the ground as he fell deep into thought. Eyeing the old man for a brief moment, he finally asked, "Are there any conditions?"

“Er...” Once again, the old man was taken back. Slightly depressed, the man thought to himself, “This young man is quite different from those before....If it were anyone else, they’d leap in excitement to come across this chance. But he does the opposite....”

“Well....this old man saw that you’ve a fine physique and talent. So I wanted to tea—”

“I don’t believe it.” Bai Yunfei interrupted.

“Er....” Imaginary black lines fell across the old man’s face as he found himself at a loss for words.

But then, another smile crept up onto his face again.

“You are a special one, young man. Very well, I’ll be truthful to you. Aside from helping you gain revenge, I’ve another reason for teaching you something.”

“I am of the Fate School. One day, my Fate School will come across a huge disaster. I wish to help you now in the hopes that in the future, you’ll come help my school when you become an accomplished person.”

“What’s the Fate School?”

“Er....” Right now, the old man felt as if he was constantly walking into walls one after another in the dark.

“The Fate School is a school of soul cultivators. It isn’t one of the top ten schools on this continent, but it isn’t weak by any means either. Let me tell you something interesting, the lord of the Zhangs, Zhang Zhenshan, and his son Zhang Yang are students of the Glacial School in the eastern parts of the Azure Cloud province. The Glacial School might be a small school, but it isn’t something that you could possibly hope to fight against in your current situation. If you wish to take care of the Zhangs, you’d need to pay extra precaution in hiding your identity.”

As he thought about the old man’s words, Bai Yunfei grew silent



to take in everything. “What are soul cultivators?”

“In this world, every living being in this world is made up of a body and a soul. Tempering the body is something anyone knows, but even they can only become ordinary martial artists in the end. There are some that can hone their souls and empower their soulforce. By using the soul to control the body, they can push their bodies to their limits. Some become able to use even the elements of the world and unleash a force unimaginable. These people who can train the soul are called soul cultivators.

Based on the power of the soulforce, soul cultivators are split into nine different stages: Soul Apprentice, Soul Personage, Soul Warrior, Soul Sprite, Soul Ancestor, Soul Exalt, Soul King, Soul Emperor, and Soul Saint. Each stage is then split into three differing substages: early-stage, middle-stage, and late-stage.

“Improving one’s soulforce is a difficult task. Even lord Zhang Zhenshan of the house of Zhang is only an early-stage Soul Sprite. The headmaster of the Glacial School is only a middle-stage Soul Ancestor as well.

“Your soulforce is only in the starting steps to awaken. As soon as you awaken your soulforce, you’ll be able to sense the existence of it within your body. That is the beginning stages of a Soul Apprentice.

“I can teach you how to train your soul and use your soulforce. Now...are you willing to accept?”

## Chapter 7: It Exploded?!

---

This time, Bai Yunfei was far more direct with his answer. Holding out his hand, he spoke, “Give it to me.”

The curls of the old man’s lips twitched ever-so-slightly and what seemed to be black lines fell down his face.....

Taking out a black ring from his robes, the man handed it over to Bai Yunfei, “This is a space ring. Inside it is a storage area where items can be stored. When your soulforce is fully awakened, you’ll be able to transmit some of your soulforce inside and take out the training exercise for your soul. Train yourself with this technique, and you’ll be able to grow stronger.”

Grasping the object, Bai Yunfei inspected the ring for a while. He looked to the old man hesitantly, as if he wanted to say something.

“What is it? Is there a question you wanted to ask?” The man smiled.

“Do you have any money? Give me some...”

“.....”

The old man handed over a bag of coins for Bai Yunfei to open. It was filled to the brim with golden coins, but he had only taken two coins from inside and bowed deeply to the man.

“Senior, I, Yunfei, will repay the kindness you’ve shown me today many times over when I have the chance!”

Watching Bai Yunfei walk farther and farther away, the old man’s smile slowly faded away from his face. After a period of silence, the old man sighed.

“Alas....this is already the fourth one....Will he be the one to solve the problems of my Fate School? This young one is especially special, it’s a shame I cannot interfere with his development too much....”

“Little one, be sure to not disappoint me too much....”

Upon his return to the city, Bai Yunfei decided to ‘splurge’ for the very first time in his life and rent out a room in an inn.

“I haven’t done anything at all yet and I’ve already have two debts to pay off....” Bai Yunfei muttered to himself from on top of his bed as he stared up at the ring in his hand.

Soon enough, a wave of exhaustion washed over him. It wasn’t just his body that was tired, he was also exhausted mentally. As such, it didn’t take long before sleep hit him.

For Bai Yunfei—someone who has lived all eighteen years of his life as a ‘lowly’ peasant—the experiences he had today and the future path he’d be walking later was a topic far too serious. Let us then allow him to rest for the night....

The next day, Bai Yunfei hid himself from afar to watch uncle Wu’s family go through the burying process with his corpse. Then, he rented out a simple but crude house on one of the more remote streets in the southern corner of the city for the time being.

He had taken two gold coins from the old man. A single gold coin was worth a hundred silver coins, and a single silver coin was the worth a hundred copper coins. To something who usually earned twenty coppers a day, two gold coins was a great sum of money to him. It was enough for him to live life in peace for a while.

In this small room, there was only three noticeable things. A cabinet, a bed next to the cabinet, and a window next to the bed. On the bed, Bai Yunfei held a brick in his hand.

Equipment Grade: Normal

Upgrade Level: +10

Attack: 9

Additional Attack: 16

+10 Additional Effect: Attacks have a 1% chance of stunning the target for a maximum of three seconds.

(If attacking the head, the chance of stunning increases to 5%.)

Upgrade Requirement: 12 Soulpoints

With a thought, several strings of information had popped up in his mind. Wondering about it for a moment, Bai Yunfei spoke softly, “Upgrade.”

An instant later, Bai Yunfei had the faintest feeling that something had been drawn out from his body, causing him to feel light-headed.

“Yea, that feeling from back then was definitely because I spent too many ‘soulpoints’.”

Upgrade Failed

Equipment Destroyed

Two separate strings of notification popped up in Bai Yunfei’s mind, causing him to gasp, “Destroyed? Don’t tell me....”

It was then that Bai Yunfei felt his hand was far more lighter than before! Looking down, he immediately realized that the brick in his hand was reduced to mere powder on the ground!

“It...” Bai Yunfei was at a loss for words for a moment. “Destroyed....it was destroyed....Shouldn’t failing the upgrade mean a decrease in level? Why was it destroyed then?”

Staring once more at the pile of sand on the floor for some time, Bai Yunfei managed to calm himself after a while.

“I still don’t understand this Upgrade Technique enough....” After a moment’s thought, Bai Yunfei strode out from the room.

An hour later, Bai Yunfei was back on the bed with another brick in his hand. But unlike last time, he had several short daggers

placed side by side on top of the cabinet. On the side, there were also a dozen bright-red bricks....

Already in front of him, a pile of red sand littered the floor.

“After +8, the item will be destroyed after failure. Only one brick made it to +9 out of three. Me being able to get a brick to +10 last time was only just luck then.” Bai Yunfei thought to himself as he stared at the pile of red sand. Taking a dagger into his hand, he thought, “Well then, let’s try this then.”

Not too long later....

Upgrade Successful

Equipment Grade: Normal  
Upgrade Level: +8  
Attack: 21  
Additional Attack: 18  
Upgrade Requirement: 18 Soulpoints

Bai Yunfei shook his slightly dazed head, “Am I already at my limit? Let’s do some experimenting then....”

Taking the dagger into his hand, Bai Yunfei made a small incision on his finger.

“Upgrade....”

And then Bai Yunfei fell on top of the pillow prepared for beforehand and drifted away to sleep.

The next day, the warm sunlight was only just shining through the window and into the room when Bai Yunfei stretched out his arms lazily and sat up on the bed.

“I knew it. I knocked out after using all my ‘soulpoints’, but it comes back soon enough and can heal my body even of its wounds.

That’s why I woke up at the Coliseum without any of the injuries earlier that day.

“And....I feel...I feel stronger now! It’s not my body though. I just can’t describe this feeling, but If I’m not wrong, this must be because my ‘soulpoints’ was increased after regenerating.

“Soulpoints, soulpoints....maybe....”

Bai Yunfei picked up the dagger that had fallen from the bed.

Equipment Grade: Normal

Upgrade Level: +9

Attack: 21

Additional Attack: 23

Upgrade Requirement: 12 Soulpoints

Thinking about it for a while, Bai Yunfei took a brick and placed it down in front of him. Hoisting the dagger up high, Bai Yunfei brought it down onto the brick with a “crack”.

In one swift strike, the brick fell apart as if it had been a piece of tofu cut in half!

“A +9 item is incredibly strong!” Bai Yunfei sucked in a deep breath of air.

“But it doesn’t have that dizzying effect, is it something only +10 items have?”

He took a dagger and a brick and upgraded both of them to +8.

His movements this time were very slow. Bai Yunfei would make a careful observation with each upgrade—and he could now just faintly feel the existence of the so-called ‘soulpoints’.

After one repetition of upgrades, Bai Yunfei could feel exhaustion start to hit him. The ‘soulpoints’ in him was already at a halfway

mark it seems.

“Should I keep upgrading and use up all my soulpoints to see what happens?

“Nah, better take things slow first before I do anything harder. I don’t know if passing out like that will do me any harm, but it’s best to try this once a day. It should be a lot safer....”

Putting away the daggers and the bricks, Bai Yunfei took out the space ring the old man gave him yesterday night.

“So this is a space ring? Why does it feel familiar? I’ve never heard of something like this before....but this is something that can store things in it? I’ll be able to use this when I awaken my soulforce and become a Soul Apprentice...But when will I make this ‘awakening’? What exactly is a soul cultivator....”

“I wonder....” Remembering about the Upgrade Technique, Bai Yunfei’s eyes focused in on the space ring on his hand.

Equipment Grade: High

Upgrade Requirement: 5 Soulpoints

“High? It doesn’t have any attack, but its initial upgrade costs 5 soulpoints.” Bai Yunfei was astonished.

Thinking about it, Bai Yunfei decided to upgrade it just once to see the results...

Upgrade Successful

Equipment Grade: High

Upgrade Level: +1

Additional Attribute: +1 Strength

Upgrade Requirement: 6 Soulpoints

“+1 Strength? Does this mean it can increase the physical strength of the user? How much is +1 anyways?”

Slipping the finger onto his right forefinger, Bai Yunfei clenched his hand tightly, but nothing out of the ordinary could be felt. Taking it off again, Bai Yunfei decided to upgrade it several times more until the feeling of dizziness came rushing back to his head.

Equipment Grade: High  
Upgrade Level: +5  
Additional Attribute: +15 Strength  
Upgrade Requirement: 10 Soulpoints

Wearing the ring again, Bai Yunfei could this time feel a clear difference from now to last time. There was a distinct rush of power that rushed into his body, and in that instant, he felt as if he could shatter boulders if he wanted to.

But unfortunately, his mind felt extremely tired, as if he had been carrying rice sack after rice sack for the entire day. With no other choice, Bai Yunfei laid back down onto his bed and had a quick rest.

For a good while, Bai Yunfei slumbered in a drowsy but dazed state. He had no idea how much time had passed before he finally awoke. He wasn't completely refreshed, but he was ready to go still.

He looked at the ring on his finger and reconfirmed its effects. That increase in strength really was something that existed.

Taking an ordinary brick into his hand, Bai Yunfei clenched both hands tightly so that the brick was snapped in half.

Testing again with a +8 brick, Bai Yunfei tried his best to snap the brick, but there was no reaction.



“The difference in strength is really huge! And when these items are upgraded, its definitely a lot sturdier....”

Bai Yunfei turned his head to look at the sky from behind the window; only to realize that it was already nighttime—an entire day had passed.

And then, another type of feeling arose in his head. “I’m so hungry....”

That evening, Bai Yunfei visited uncle Wu’s grave with a basket of offerings and a jug of wine.

Placing down the items, Bai Yunfei kowtowed three times in respect to the gravestone.

“Uncle Wu, Yunfei is here to see you. Please forgive me for not seeing you off in person when you were buried....

“Uncle Wu. You saved my life, so I’ll definitely make sure your death won’t be in vain. Your death and your granddaughter’s death is on Zhang Yang’s hands. I’ll be sure to make Zhang Yang pay for everything he’s done to us!”

He thought to that short period of time when he and uncle Wu came to meet each other. He thought about just how uncle Wu had looked to him with such kindly eyes filled with concern. He thought to when uncle Wu pushed him out of the way and when his blood spilled over Bai Yunfei’s face. And then, he thought to when uncle Wu was giving his very last words....

Completely unknown to him, Bai Yunfei’s eyes were already wet with tears. Turning to the sky, Bai Yunfei tried his best to prevent them from streaming down his face. But in his heart, an insuppressible flash of anger and resentment scratched and clawed at him, as if threatening to tear him apart.

Popping up the jug of wine, Bai Yunfei took a mighty swig from its opening. As soon as the inner contents touched his lips, a scorching sensation made its way through his throat and into his

chest.

Shaking his head, Bai Yunfei took another sip. By now, his face was red, and his eyes were slowly turning red as if his blood was reaching them too.

But still, the anger and resentment he felt was still burning as bright as ever, like flames started with oil. By now, they were threatening to break their way out from Bai Yunfei's body.

"Uncle Wu, I'll definitely kill Zhang Yang. I'll kill him with my own two hands!"

With one more look at the sky, Bai Yunfei drained the rest of the wine in one gulp.

"I, Bai Yunfei, swear by my heart that I'll never let anyone control my life again! Never will I endure such humiliation again! I'll trample over anyone that dare insults me! Anyone that offends me will have to be ready to pay the price!"

In a single instant, it felt as if something within his body shattered into pieces. A force of power rushed throughout his entire body, and the hand that was holding the jug of wine immediately swelled up so that the muscles were now bulging outwards.

The jug in his hand shattered into several dozen pieces of pottery, and the part where his palm had been in contact with the jug gave several crackling sounds. When his hand loosened, the remaining fragments clattered down onto the ground.

# Chapter 8: The Soul Apprentice Stage!

## Training and Research

---

The morning rays of the sun caressed at Bai Yunfei's face, causing him to wake up with a gentle start.

From the moment he sat up from his bed, Bai Yunfei felt as if his head was about to split open from the headache he had. Even words wouldn't be enough to describe the pain. Having never once tasted wine before, the fact that Bai Yunfei was able to return to his bed to sleep on was startling enough.

It was only after a while that Bai Yunfei felt himself sobering up a bit. Massaging his temple, he murmured to himself, "How did I get back home? I remember...drinking a jug of wine, but after that....nothing....is this what being drunk feels like? How painful, how do I make it go away?"

Whilst Bai Yunfei was in the middle of thinking of a way to make the pain in his head go away, a peculiar burst of energy came exploding out from his body and enveloped his entire body in a comforting feel as if he was placed inside a bath of warm water. The feeling had been so pleasant that Bai Yunfei nearly found himself moaning out in comfort.

When he regained his composure, the previous feeling of pain in his head was gone without a trace, leaving him even more vigorous than before.

"This...." Bai Yunfei shook his head in disbelief. A mysterious feeling began to appear in his mind—a mysterious something that felt as if it existed inside both his body and even in the depths of his soul....

"Could this be..." Suddenly thinking of something, Bai Yunfei brought his right hand in front of his face and looked at the space ring on his finger. Trying his best, Bai Yunfei thought hard to

‘control’ this mysterious existence in him.

Soon enough, he came to realize that this strange power was being controlled by his very thoughts; and with these thoughts, the energy flowed from through his arm and into the ring. A moment later, Bai Yunfei felt himself in front of an interdimensional plot of space!

The space was about five meters in length and width, and there were three scrolls and a spear that ‘floated’ in this area. Since only these four items were held in this space, the area looked quite spacious.

“Yes...this is it! This strange power is soulforce!”

He wanted to take the spear out from this space first, but a strange outside force was wrapped around the spear, preventing him from doing so. The same had happened when he tried taking one of the scrolls; he was unable to do so. But when he stretched his hand out to try another, his hand immediately felt heavier when a gray scroll suddenly appeared in it. But yet the third scroll remained untouched like the first one.

Looking at this newly acquired scroll, Bai Yunfei could see that it was as long as his palm and as large as two of his fingers touched together in diameter. The scroll itself was made from some sort of unknown material that resembled cloth, but also like the skin of an unknown animal. It had no opening, making unfolding an impossible method of trying to open it. On the outside face of the scroll, a multitude of abstruse and complex symbols strung together like an unknown language was written on it.

“I can’t open it. Then, should I use soulforce?”

This time, Bai Yunfei was able to swiftly and smoothly control a sliver of soulforce from his body and into the scroll. A string of information was immediately rushed into his head, causing him to feel slightly confused from the sudden torrent of knowledge. One by one, information continued to flow into his mindspace,

prompting him to close his eyes and recollect himself so that he could receive the information.

“The Arte of Training the Soul. The most basics of ways to train the soul. With this, cultivating and recovering the soul can be learned. The soul and body are inextricably linked to one another, as the soul controls the body and the body cultivates the soul. The soul is hidden within the body, and only a soul cultivator is capable of feeling and controlling the soulforce....”

“There are three initial stages to being a soul cultivator; a Soul Apprentice, Soul Personage, and Soul Warrior. These three stages are known to be the stages where one learns to manipulate the body. In the Soul Apprentice stage, one learns to manipulate skin and flesh. In the Soul Personage stage, one learns to manipulate blood and bone. And in the Soul Warrior stage, one learns to manipulate the acupoints.”

“Soul Apprentice chapter....”

After a long period of time, Bai Yunfei finally reopened his eyes, “Only in the Soul Apprentice stage does someone learn to manipulate their skin and flesh, but I can feel that there’s still something more in this scroll. There has to be something about the Soul Personage and Soul Warrior stages and how they manipulate their bodies. Is it because I’m only just an early-stage Soul Apprentice that I can’t read ahead to the later methods?”

Stepping down from the bed, Bai Yunfei walked up to the pile of bricks he stacked earlier. There were five or six of them left still. Thinking carefully, Bai Yunfei clenched his right hand into a fist and concentrated heavily on it. Gradually, the skin and flesh of his right arm began to squirm slightly and expand outwards. Bulging and growing, the muscles started to rise up before his entire arm looked quite bigger and more powerful than before.

With a grunt, he slammed his fist down onto the bricks.

“Boom!” A loud but clear explosion resonated through the room

with such clamor that the entire room shook a bit.

“Hey, you there! What are you doing in my room?! I’ll warn you now, if you damage my rooms, I’ll go after you with all I’ve got! I —” A furious roar rang out from outside the room before the door was slammed open to reveal a bearded man barging in.

As soon as he slammed open the door and peeked into it with just half of his body in the room, the man could see that Bai Yunfei was standing right in front of a pile of broken brick fragments. His right arm was bulging ever-so-much, and even then, a layer of red brick dust was noticeably covering his fist....

“Yo—uh, contin—continue whatever you’re—uh, doing. I’ll be on my way now....” Stammering, the man carefully retreated out from his room and closed the door.

Even with the interruption of the man, Bai Yunfei was so immersed in his thoughts that he didn’t even take notice of him.

“The very first step to manipulation of the skin and flesh is already really strong if it can improve my strength by that much....”

Looking at the pile of broken bricks in front of him, Bai Yunfei began to feel at the soulforce in him again. It was faint, but still, it was there. His heart skipped a beat, “Soul cultivators....I’ve finally become one! The promised day of revenge, I’ve gotten one step closer to it....”

Tidying up the room, Bai Yunfei had a simple meal to fill his stomach and returned to sit on his bed. Carefully looking at the space ring, he stored the remaining brick, daggers, and other items he had into it.

Bai Yunfei had a deep fondness for this tiny little thing; it was really far too convenient.

On top of his bed, Bai Yunfei held the space ring and thought to himself, “Upgrade.”

---

Upgrade Successful
Equipment Grade: High Upgrade Level: +6 Additional Attribute: +19 Strength  Upgrade Requirement: 12 Soulpoints

“This is it! Soulpoints are the same as soulforce!” When he upgraded the item again, Bai Yunfei could feel that same feeling of energy being drained out from his body again. He didn’t know what it was before, but now, he could clearly feel that it was soulforce!

Without stopping, Bai Yunfei began to upgrade the items several more times (with one failure).

Equipment Grade: High Upgrade Level: +8 Additional Attribute: +33 Strength  Upgrade Requirement: 16 Soulpoints
--

Since he didn’t know whether or not a high-grade space ring could be destroyed after reaching +8 like a normal dagger, Bai Yunfei didn’t want to venture the risk; in the case that it were to be destroyed, he’d have nowhere to cry to.

Taking careful notice of his soulforce, Bai Yunfei could feel that it was quite weaker than before. Taking out a dagger, he upgraded it to +8. Now, it felt as if he had used half of his overall soulforce.

Ceasing his upgrading, Bai Yunfei thought back to what was written in ‘The Arte of Training the Soul’, and began to

concentrate to circulate his soulforce around the special passageways in his body and slowly make up for what had been used already.

When he felt his soulforce was fully recovered, Bai Yunfei continued to do as he was so that he could increase the amount of soulforce he had.

It was only when the moon was starting to rise that Bai Yunfei slowly reopened his eyes.

“Soulpoints are soulforce. It can be recovered and increased through the act of training...” Bai Yunfei shook the space ring on his hand so that several daggers appeared in them. “Then that means the amount of soulforce I have can be calculated by seeing how many soulpoints, what an intuitive conversion. Then, let’s see....”

A moment later...

Upgrade Failed
Equipment Destroyed

“Damn it! Failed again! I didn’t think it’d be so hard to get a +10 item!” Bai Yunfei shook his head, “I’ve already reached my limit. If I count the last upgrade, I’ve about 219 soulpoints left....”

“Upgrade.”

When Bai Yunfei woke up the next day, the very first thing he checked for was for the state of his soulforce.

“My soulforce, it really did increase!” Although he had his guesses, Bai Yunfei’s guesses were now confirmed to be true. This feat alone was enough to make Bai Yunfei’s entire body to tremble.

After using the Upgrade Technique, the usage of soulforce (also



called soulpoints) allowed for the soulforce to grow in capacity. What....what would this mean, exactly?

This meant that in addition to training his soulforce like how the other soul cultivators did, Bai Yunfei could use the Upgrade Technique to grow stronger! If anything, this method could be said to be a shortcut! A shortcut only he could use!

Managing to calm his excitement down with some difficulty, Bai Yunfei began to summarize the results of his study on the numerical value of soulpoints. “With the last upgrade, all of my soulforce was used up, meaning I had 219 soulpoints. I can remember....that when I first used the Upgrade Technique, I exhausted all of my soulforce. At that time, it was about....60 soulpoints or so, 70 soulpoints at most. My body was pretty weak along with my soulforce, so a strong commoner person should have 100 soulpoints maybe.”

“The Upgrade Technique, The Arte of Training the Soul, and manipulating the skin and flesh as a Soul Apprentice....there’s a lot that I still don’t know about....”

For ten straight days, aside from doing the most fundamental things to life such as eating, sleeping, or buying several items, Bai Yunfei would spend the rest of his time inside his room training and studying. With each experiment and careful study, he managed to earn an ample amount of information and experience.

The very first discovery was about soulforce. Each night when he used up all of his soulforce, it’d grow by ten points or so when he woke up the next day after. By now, Bai Yunfei’s soulforce was about 300 or so. Based on his number crunching, he was a middle-stage Soul Apprentice!

In just ten days, Bai Yunfei had reached the middle-stage Soul Apprentice stage. If any other soul cultivator were to learn about this progression rate, they’d feel so inferior that they’d slam their heads against the wall!

As his soulforce became more powerful, so did his manipulation of his skin and flesh. Since his soulforce was growing rapidly, Bai Yunfei paid very close attention to his studies on the manipulation of his skin and flesh. If he couldn't keep up with his understanding of bodily manipulation, it would not bode well for his future.

Right now when he tried to strengthen his skin and flesh with his soulforce, his entire body grew stronger. Whether it was his punches, his speed, how high he could jump, or even how strong his defenses were, they were at least ten times better than what they used to be as a simple commoner. It was already at the very limits of what the ordinary commoner could do or even achieve with their bodies.

And then there was the Upgrade Technique. After many trials and experimentations, Bai Yunfei was able to earn some meager level of understanding with it.

Apparently, anything could be upgraded. But the type of item that was being upgraded would differ in results after being upgraded.

Offense-type objects like blades, swords, spears, staffs, and stones, they all had the potential to inflict damage. The numerical value of how much damage they could inflict was dependent on the power of the object in question, but it could be upgraded in damage afterwards.

Defense-type objects like clothes, shoes, and hats. They all had the potential to gain defense. But the most common of clothes, whether they were made from coarse cloth or from brocaded silk, the defenses of the two would give a pitiful one or two points in it. Upgrading those would give almost no change in defense.

Then there were accessories such as rings and necklaces. Bai Yunfei bought a few of them to experiment on, and after they were upgraded, each accessory would gain a random attribute. There were four different attributes to his knowledge: strength,

endurance, agility, and spirit. The first three were easy to understand, and the chances of any of the three from appearing was rather high. But the chances of 'spirit' was not as high. Only 'spirit' was capable of increasing soulforce!

Bai Yunfei had upgraded many accessories, but only one of them had been capable of increasing spirit, but even that one was destroyed in the end.

But according to what Bai Yunfei could tell, aside from the 'high-grade' space ring on his finger, everything else had been 'normal' items, even when upgraded to +8. The vast majority of them gained only a few attribute points—practically nothing—and even after he tried upgrading them again, none of them reached the +10 point before exploding.

On the tenth day, Bai Yunfei finally stopped his 'closed-door training' session and walked out on the streets.

There was a reason for that—he had run out of money....

## Chapter 9: Change

---

In the past few days, Bai Yunfei had bought plenty of things to study and research the Upgrade Technique. The items in particular were the accessories he bought; items that weren't cheap even despite being the lowest quality ones. When it came to eating, Bai Yunfei wasn't as frugal as he was before. His body was malnourished from his previous lifestyle. Now that he needed to train, a proper diet was needed so that it'd match with his new lifestyle.

He had used up all his money already, but Bai Yunfei had already a plan for that.

Walking out onto the remote streets of his current residence, Bai Yunfei crossed over a series of alleyways and into the more bustling streets in the center of the city.

"Pl—please....let me go, I've a wife and kids to feed with this money back home. Please be merciful and don't take everything away...."

Just as he walked past the opening of one alleyway, a fearful voice could be heard pleading to another from the left side of the dark corridor.

"Shut the hell up! You got any more valuables hidden away on you?! Take them out or I'll snap your leg!" A ruthless voice snapped in response. A series of chuckles seemed to follow after that.

This was yet another act of the strong bullying the weak for money.

Matters like this weren't uncommon at all in the city, especially in the more poor and destitute places in the city. The Bai Yunfei of before would often come across such an event, and he'd more often than not would have to fork over the daily wages he earned.

Things like this would always happen in groups of three or five, sometimes, they'd even carry weapons to make it even more impossible for the person to resist. To make matters even worse, no one would ever lift a finger to help another out.

Bai Yunfei had a faint nagging feeling to leave, but even when his legs shifted slightly to turn away, a sudden sensation forced him to come to a pause. A dark shadow crawled across Bai Yunfei's face as he looked back to the alleyway.

"Haven't....haven't I managed to get rid of all my cowardice? Oh, come on Bai Yunfei! You're still thinking about running away? Before, you could've justified this by saying you were powerless. But if you run away now, could you still say the same without guilt? Even if all sorts of bullshit injustice happen in this world, we can't sit by the side and watch as one happens right in front of us!"

Walking into the dusky alleyway, Bai Yunfei was quick to see the situation in front of him. Three fiendish middle-aged surrounding a skinny middle-aged man. Each of the three men were holding a dagger, and one of them was holding a money bag while simultaneously frisking the skinny man....

Rather than hiding himself, Bai Yunfei strode into the alleyway. The middle-aged man surrounded by the three others had been the first to notice him. His face lit up at the sounds of incoming footsteps, but when he saw that the owner was just an ordinary young man, his mood deflated almost instantly. On the other hand, the three middle-aged men were at first startled by Bai Yunfei's appearance. But when they saw just who the newcomer was, they all let out a sigh of relief. Giving each other a look, they all began to laugh out loud.

"Ha! So there's even people who'll come up to us willingly!"

"Hey kid! Consider yourself unlucky to meet us! Hurry up and take out all your valuables and we'll let you leave!"

One of the three stalked towards Bai Yunfei with a cruel look on

his face. Another one quickly moved to behind Bai Yunfei so as to block Bai Yunfei's means of escape.

Perhaps it was because of Bai Yunfei's nonchalant expression that unnerved the man, but he raised the hand holding a dagger to wave it menacingly at him, "Hey brat, did you hear me or not? Hurry up and take out your valuables or you'll regret it!"

Bai Yunfei was no stranger to people like him with attitudes like this. He knew that hesitation like the type he had before would only result in the other man beating him down without mercy nor hesitation. Of course, his money would be taken as well.

There was a difference to this even today however!

Bai Yunfei wasn't the weakling he was before.

Today, he was a....soul cultivator!

Disinclined to waste any words with people like him, Bai Yunfei swiftly moved his right hand upwards to grab at the wrist waving in front of him. Tightening his grip just ever-so-slightly....

"Crack!"

"Aaagh!!"

The distinct sound of bones being broken echoed throughout the quiet alleyway and startled those that were standing in it. When the man whose wrist was snapped let out a blood-curling shriek, his hand went limp and dropped the dagger in it. Seizing the dagger, Bai Yunfei then landed a kick onto the man's throat, sending him tumbling away onto the ground several meters away.

The victim clutched at his wrist while curling up in a fetal position to moan in anguish.

"Third bro!"

Dumbstruck by the sudden development of events, everyone in the alleyway but Bai Yunfei and the victim were motionless. It wasn't until Bai Yunfei had already landed the kick onto the first

man that the man behind Bai Yunfei let out a loud cry and swung his dagger down onto Bai Yunfei's back.

Bai Yunfei was well prepared to defend himself even before the cry could be heard however. Leaning to the side so that the man's arm brushed past his shoulder instead, Bai Yunfei reached out and grabbed onto the man's right hand. Once again, the sounds of bone snapping in two could be heard before Bai Yunfei snatched at the dagger that fell from the man's hand.

Yanking forcefully with his arm, Bai Yunfei didn't even bother to wait for the man to stoop over from his pain to latch onto the man's lapel. With a tightening of his muscles, Bai Yunfei somehow managed to toss the bulky man next to the first downed man as if he was a burlap sack.

In practically no time at all, two of the three thugs had been thrown down without Bai Yunfei even taking a single step.

The very last one, the one still holding a dagger and money bag in his hands stood off to the side with his jaws dropped wide open from shock.

Walking up to him, Bai Yunfei held out his hand. "Give it to me."

In a daze, the man obediently handed over the dagger to Bai Yunfei.

"The money!"

It was only then that the man snapped out of it. Like the man they were just mugging, the third man's eyes were filled with fear. Hurriedly thrusting the money bag into Bai Yunfei's hands as well, he took a second longer to think the situation before then taking out his personal purse. Like the first bag, he handed over his own to Bai Yunfei.

With both bags of money in hand, Bai Yunfei handed them over to the still slack jawed victim; "Go. Be careful from now on."

Snapping back into awareness, the man gave Bai Yunfei a fearful

look, but he accepted the bags of money anyways. It took several moments for the man to recollect himself enough before he could give Bai Yunfei a deep bow, “Tha—thank you....”

Bai Yunfei watched the man run out of the alleyway first before he turned his attention back to back to the last standing person.

By now, this person was so afraid of Bai Yunfei his hairs were sticking straight out from his body. Holding both hands behind his back, the man managed to mumble out a few words, “I...I already gave you the money. Don’t hurt me...”

“I never said that I’d spare you if you handed over the money. In any case, both your brothers are hurt while you’re not. Does this make sense to you?”

When Bai Yunfei walked out from the alleyway, he looked completely unharmed like even before he walked into the alleyway to begin with. There didn’t seem to be a change in any place on him besides his eyes where it looked slightly brighter than before and on his lips where the faintest of smiles could be seen.

When that victim from earlier bowed to him and said ‘thank you’, Bai Yunfei felt the walls that had been built around his heart come crumbling down. This was a sensation that made him feel even more happy and even more understanding....

“So, this is what it feels like to help another....”

.....

The ‘Treasured Armory’ was the best weapon store in the city. All sorts of high-quality weapons adorned the interior of the store, and many of the most wealthiest liked to shop here, whether it was for their gaudy nature or for their sharp armaments for battle.

Entering the place, Bai Yunfei walked up to the counter to talk to the shopkeeper polishing a dagger. “Boss, I’d like to sell a weapon.”

Looking up to cast a brief glance at Bai Yunfei, the shopkeeper dropped his head back down to resume polishing his dagger, “Go to



another store, we don't buy bad quality goods here."

"You should take a look first." Bai Yunfei dropped a dagger onto the counter. This was one of his +9 daggers; based off of the current sharpness of the dagger alone, he should be able to sell it for a decent sum of money. He actually had a few +10 daggers, but he wasn't so stupid as to sell them off right now.

Looking up to examine the ordinary-looking dagger on the countertop, the man began to speak rather impatiently, "It's just an ordinary dagger, what else is there to it? The smithy next-door sells one for twenty coppers. Kid, you trying to start trouble here or what?"

Bai Yunfei didn't feel like getting into an argument with the man, so instead, he took the dagger and held it above the counter so that the tip was facing downwards. When the dagger was about thirty centimeters above the surface, he let it go.

"Tzk". Like if dropping into the soft earth itself, the dagger pierced straight through the ironwood counter up to the hilt!

"Wha—how the..." The look of impatience on the shopkeeper's face was nowhere to be seen now that he witnessed the dagger fall practically straight through the countertop. In his shock, he spoke, "How could a sharpness like this be possible?!"

When Bai Yunfei pulled out the dagger, the shopkeeper took it into his hands and examined it studiously. Taking out a test already marked with cut and stab marks, the man swung the dagger at a relatively unmarked area, only for the test tone to split into two.

"But how? How is this possible? From the make of the dagger alone, this shouldn't be anything more than your average dagger. There doesn't even seem to be anything special to the material at all either...."

Rather impatient, Bai Yunfei tapped at the countertop so as to

break the shopkeeper out from his examining stupor. “Will you buy it or not, I’ll go to another store if you’re not.”

Startled by Bai Yunfei, the shopkeeper then realized that the young man in front of him was here to sell the dagger. Reevaluating him with a more insightful eye, the man began to smile and laugh, “Haha, little brother, how much do you want for it?”

Bai Yunfei narrowed his eyes. He didn’t know just how much these were supposed to cost, “Name your price and I’ll see if I want to sell it.”

The smile on the shopkeeper’s face deepened a bit, “Little brother, you must be in an urgent need for money, am I right? I’ll do you a favor and buy this dagger, but....” He talked as if buying the dagger was but an act of kindness to Bai Yunfei at first, but his words then took a sharp turn into a different topic, “Little brother, you should know yourself that my ‘Treasured Armory’ sells only the highest quality weapons. Those who buy my weapons are all people of importance, this dagger of yours—while quite sharp—is of ordinary make. There’s nothing else special to it. If I were to buy it, I’d probably not be able to sell it. Take a look at that dagger over there, the work of—”

“That’s enough! Do you think I’m a three-year kid?!” Bai Yunfei interrupted. The fact that the shopkeeper was getting more and more excited as he spoke was angering Bai Yunfei so much that he just had to stop him from saying any more bullshit.

What the shopkeeper was trying to do was try to disparage the quality of Bai Yunfei’s dagger so he could drive down the price even more. Bai Yunfei’s outburst had startled the man first, but when he looked up and met Bai Yunfei’s eye, the man’s body shook violently. He staggered back several steps, stopping only when his back bumped into the rack of weapons.

“You—ah, no—sir, might sir be a great soul cultivator?!” The

shopkeeper gave a slight stammer.

“Oh? How do you know that?” Bai Yunfei was taken back, were soul cultivators that easy to find out?

“Sir....sir soul cultivator, please....please forgive this one for being so blind. Please don't bother to argue with a lowly person like me....” Having Bai Yunfei's confirmation, the shopkeeper was now bowing to him nonstop with his mouth uttering apologies again and again.

The shopkeeper was an ordinary person with no skill or talent to his name. Because of his inability, he held soul cultivators in awe. When he first opened up his store, he was able to get into contact with the sons to several of the more wealthier families. Many of these families weren't lacking in soul cultivators; even if they were mere Soul Apprentice or Soul Personages. To the eyes of commoners like him, these soul cultivators were still a high and mighty existence.

Soul cultivators trained their souls, a powerful entity that all commoners believed to be something that exerted considerable pressure on them. Back when Bai Yunfei was glared down by Zhang Yang, the look both he and Zhang Zhenshan gave Bai Yunfei had been accompanied by a suffocating amount of pressure.

When the shopkeeper's eyes made contact with Bai Yunfei's angry eyes, there was that same amount of pressure the man would normally sense from a soul cultivator.

“Cut the crap and tell me the price of this dagger now.”

“Ye-yes yes....I won't lie to you, sir lord cultivator. This dagger would be worth three golds at the very least...”

“I've four daggers, for ten golds, they're yours!”

.....

By the time Bai Yunfei walked out from the store, he was in an elated mood. Never did he think that 4 daggers would be sold for

such a nice sum of money. With this amount, he wouldn't have to worry about his expenses for some time.

Now that he had money, Bai Yunfei was determined to go out and buy several more things so he could study the Upgrade Technique even more.

“Junior Liu Meng, I've heard that the ‘Treasure Pavilion’ has a new arrangement of jewelry. Why don't we take a look? Maybe you'll find something you'll like....”

From behind, the sickeningly familiar voice of someone trying to curry favor with another made its way to Bai Yunfei's ears. Coming to a halt right besides a fruit stand, Bai Yunfei's body grew as rigid as a plank of wood. Shaking slightly, Bai Yunfei's eyes started to see red.

“Zhang Yang!”

# Chapter 10: Target: Blackwood Stronghold!

---

“Zhang Yang!”

Forcing out the two words from between gritted teeth, Bai Yunfei’s entire body began to shake and quiver as he turned around. Just about a dozen meters away from where he was standing, a youngster dressed in luxurious clothing could be seen with a fan in his hand. With a smile on his face, the youngster was speaking to another woman to his side--it was Zhang Yang!

Clenching his fists tightly and gritting his teeth together so hard that blood was nearly drawn, Bai Yunfei just barely managed to restrain himself from rushing forward to try and beat Zhang Yang to death.

He knew that as he was now, there’d be no way for him to defeat even the bodyguards around Zhang Yang.

“Yes, perhaps I’ll pick an item or two to gift to aunty when we return. I’ll be returning in two days, so I should buy something for my mother as well.”

Then, the melodious sound of another made its way to his ears. Turning his head to look, Bai Yunfei could see a young woman dressed in blue with her back against Bai Yunfei look left and right at the various stores on the street.

“It’s her...”

In somewhat of a daze, Bai Yunfei watched as the two figures walk farther and farther away. He wasn’t sure what kind of emotions were running through his head, but Bai Yunfei slapped his face in an attempt to calm himself anyways and turned to walk in the other direction.

Repairing the graves of his mother and grandfather took a small amount of money from his surplus, but Bai Yunfei had managed to place two perfectly fine tombstones by their graves. With the

remaining money he had, some of it went towards things such as food, clothes, weapons, and accessories. Since he had a space ring, carrying everything was far more convenient to do now.

Bai Yunfei had learned an important lesson after his act of teaching those three bullies in the alleyway a lesson that morning. Shutting himself behind closed doors to train lacked an extremely vital aspect: actual combat experience.

It had been decided that day that Bai Yunfei would spend an hour or two every day before night time to find the scum and bullies of the city to fight. Aside from that, Bai Yunfei would stay at home and train by himself.

But then came an issue right away.

These scums and bullies weren't on par with him at all. They posed no challenge to him since the majority of their times was spent bullying the weak commoners. To fight them would be a pointless waste of time since it wouldn't help him learn anything. The only good point in doing so would be in teaching them a lesson and allowing for the bullied commoners to have a moment's reprieve to clap their hands happily.

The more influential criminal gangs of the city were all under the control of the house of Zhang however. Bai Yunfei was afraid of revealing himself, since he was not yet on a level where he could fight them.

Until Bai Yunfei had the power to fight them, he would tread his ground carefully.

Nine days went on in such a fashion before Bai Yunfei finally decided on a new target--the bandits of Mount Blackwood.

Mount Blackwood was about ten days worth of travel away from Talus City and was given its titular name in thanks to the abundance of black-colored trees that stretched across the area. Three of the four sides were sheer cliffs and the only climbable

path was in the single remaining side. This path however was far more narrow at the base and inversely more spacious at the top. The terrain of the area was thus far easier to defend than it was to attack.

At one point in the past, a gang of unsavory thugs gathered on the mountains and took control of it. After their occupation of the mountain, the Blackwood Stronghold was established.

The bandits of this mountain focused solely on targeting the trade caravans and businesses around the nearby villages. The lord mayor of Talus City had sent many armed forces before to suppress the bandits, but each attempt to do so ended in failure.

Bai Yunfei had heard the atrocities the bandits committed quite often. In some cases, Bai Yunfei had even heard how some villages were completely destroyed by them, but Bai Yunfei could only sigh and shake his head when he heard about it before. Sometimes, he'd even curse at the no-good bandits.

But the Bai Yunfei today was a new person with newfound power. With the two changes, Bai Yunfei could complete the 'wish' he had a long time ago.

It went without saying that Bai Yunfei knew he couldn't defeat all of the bandits on Mount Blackwood by himself. He just wanted to fight the small groups of bandits that came down the path so that he could build up his own strength. Dealing with the ordinary bandits wouldn't be hard for him given his current strength.

Over the years, the bandits committed many different acts of crimes. To capture and send them to be tried by the local authorities would be ridding the general populace a small portion of their headaches in any case. Even if some of the bandits were to be killed, Bai Yunfei would see no qualms in doing so.

After preparing all the essentials he'd need for the trip, Bai Yunfei left Talus City and towards the direction of Mount Blackwood.

This would be the very first trip Bai Yunfei would have to the outside world. Life outside the city was a strange one, so he decided to take his time to travel. Training on the way would help him get accustomed to life on the road while also helping him learn the essential skills on living with nature.

Since he wasn't familiar with the path, Bai Yunfei had to ask for directions every so often on the way.

Soon enough, he came across his very first problem--he might just be a little directionally challenged.

He had the general direction down pat, but many detours were had. Someone had explicitly told him that only half a day would be needed to reach his waypoint, but for some reason, Bai Yunfei took an entire day to travel to the place.

The most outstanding case had been when he decided to take a shortcut through a forest. An entire day and night was wasted before he finally managed to make his way out from the forest. But this was only after he came across several ferocious beasts. The beasts were easy targets for Bai Yunfei to practice on and provided a decent amount of combat experience despite not providing the same experience as to fighting humans.

By nightfall of the sixth day after his departure from Talus City, Bai Yunfei managed to finally cross over a hill to overlook a small village down below. Deciding that this would be a good place to settle for the night, he continued on his way down...

.....

Bai Yunfei was only just crossing the small brook that flowed by the southern side of the village when the hurried clatter of hooves made its way to his ears. With the silence now shattered, Bai Yunfei could detect around thirty men on horseback galloping not too far away.

Each and every single one of the riders had a ferocious expression



on their faces. Just from appearance alone, one could tell that these men weren't good guys at all. To reinforce this judgement, each one of these riders were equipped with many weapons.

The rider leading the front was a middle-aged man with a yellowed face and a nose that was more bulbous than not. Unlike the men behind him, he was not as ferocious looking. But when his eyes swept around the area, a sharp glare could be seen in them. Looking up at the sky and then to the people behind him, he spoke, "The horses have been running for an entire day already. It's time for them to rest. We'll be camping for the night in that forest over there, but expect us to be hitting the road again tomorrow morning!"

Pitching up tents and a fire for their evening meal in the forest, the men began to move about to prepare the grounds. The leader himself sat on top of a giant stone with a wine jug in hand to drink from.

"The chief will definitely be happy with the tributes we're bringing back to the fortress. There's a soul armament in here! The chief already has the Goldsilk Soul Armor, so with the Glacial Pricker, his strength will definitely improve greatly! I didn't do badly at all this mission, so I bet there'll be a good reward waiting for me back in the fortress!" Stroking at the wooden box in his bosom, the leader spoke the second line even more softly, "Ah....a soul armament. I wonder when I'll be able to have one myself?"

It was then that a man with sideburns and eyes as sunken as a dead fish came walking up to the leader. "Hallmaster Zhong," He spoke, "There's a small village not too far away from here. A few of us could go on over and take some tasty things back to camp. It's been rations for us the past few days, all we can think about right now is some delicious meat to sink our teeth in...."

The one called Zhong glanced at the other man with a mocking laugh, "I take it that rather than wanting to bring some tasty food, you want the women instead?" Another roar of laughter followed

the second part.

The man with fish eyes coughed once but said nothing more, prompting the hallmaster to say, “Take ten of us and go. See what’s worth stealing and come back. Since this is a remote village, authorities won’t be coming any time soon.”

Brightening up in the face, the other man spoke up out loud, “Thank you, hallmaster!”

.....

In the quiet village, smoke was billowing up from the kitchen chimneys, and several village children could be seen running around happily. A big golden dog could also be seen lying lazily on its stomach as it bathed in the setting sun.

Suddenly, the ears of the dog perked upwards and its eyes grew vigilant. Rushing to its feet, the dog’s back arched upwards and began to growl with a deep pitch.

The ground beneath everyone started to quake slightly with the sounds of hooves stampeding across it. One by one, men on top of horses began to appear on the road leading to the village with frightening speed.

A youngster about twenty years old was carrying a pole with a bucket of water at both ends at the time when he heard the commotion. Confused, he turned his head towards the source.

Only a single glance was required for him to realize the severity of the matter. With a face that paled within a second, his legs started to knock together in fright.

It took several more seconds for him to finally snap out from his fright. Tossing the water buckets to the ground, he dashed off to the center of the village and began to shout aloud, “Bandits! Bandits are here! The bandits are here!”

As soon as he let out that warning, the entire village went into high alert. Nearly a hundred villagers charged out from their

homes in doubt to look at the youth currently hiding in the center of the village with his heads held in his hands.

There was a young but pretty girl that approached the trembling youth. Her hair was long and draped across her shoulders, but it did nothing to hide the oval-shaped face and her large eyes. Concerned, she held his arm and asked, “brother Xiao Feng, what’s going on? Who’s here?”

“It’s--it’s them! They’re...they’re here again....Everything’s burning...the village...gone....everyone’s dead...dead! Father...mother...sister...they’re all dead....They’re here again....”

The youngster had been mumbling to himself in fright before the young woman’s voice snapped him back to reality. Starting with a violent shake of his head, he took the young girl’s hand with terror and anxiety, “They’re coming! You have to run! Ling’er, hurry up and run! All the young women should run off and hide, don’t let them find you! If you have anything valuable in your homes, just give it to them! Give it to them....or...or you’ll die....”

The first part had been directed to just the young girl, but then the later half had been shouted for the rest of the villagers to hear.

Still, everyone was at a loss for words at what was happening. His words however, were enough to send them in a panic from the terror and mannerisms he was going through. Anxious, everyone turned to the fifty-something year old elder to the side--he was the elder of the village.

The elder himself looked grim as he observed the trembling youth. Turning around, the man faced the villagers.

“Xiao Feng came from Plum Village from the other side of Mount Blackwood. The villagers there tried to resist the Blackwood Stronghold and were all killed as a result. As a survivor, he made his way here....” The elder muttered so softly he may as well be talking to himself. But the rest of the villagers had heard what he said. “Everyone, listen to what Xiao Feng said! Have all the women

run and hide! If they want something, don't put up a fight and give it to them!"

When the ten horses made its way into the village, the dozen villagers who stayed behind started to shake violently. Each one of these horse riders were carrying chillingly-cold broadswords that frightened the very souls of anyone that looked at it.

"Eh? The villagers here are something else, are they actually welcoming us? Whatever! As long as you listen to us, the great I won't hurt you! Hurry up and bring out all the meat and wine you got, and whatever other valuables you have! As long as you satisfy us, we'll take what we want and leave!" The dead-eyed man from earlier spoke happily as if he was doing everyone a great favor.

Looking at all the weapons the men were carrying, the elder knew that resistance was futile. Bowing fervently, he replied, "Thank you for being so merciful, O' great one. We will bring out what you want right away. Please wait one moment...."

Turning around, the elder gave a signal to the other villagers. He knew everyone was unwilling to bend to their will, but there was nothing else they could do. Several other villagers turned around with the elder and returned to their own homes to retrieve what they had. For these villagers who lived here for their entire lives, how could they fight back? The fact that these bandits would leave after taking their possessions was already a good thing.

"Hold on!" But the man with fish eyes suddenly shouted, causing everyone to leap up in fright.

"Bring out all the young and pretty women and have them leave with us! We've several dozen brethren waiting for us in the forest back there. But since you've been so obedient so far, we'll be sure to return your women safe and sound after they're done serving us!"

# Chapter 11: First encounter with bandits

---

“What?” Hearing the big man’s words, the village chief had a dumbfounded expression. The villagers behind him also had furious expressions.

“Oh? So, you’re unwilling? Humph! I thought you’d be enlightened enough to listen to me obediently, but turns out I’ll still have to do the snatching myself.”

The impatient voice of the big man with dead fish eyes rang out. The village chief finally turned around and said in a trembling voice: “Sir... We, we will listen to you by giving you all our food and money. Please spare us...”

“Cut the crap! Am I negotiating with you? Since you’re unwilling to tell them to come out, I’ll go and find them myself!” With a mean and savage expression, the big man swung the horsewhip in his hand at the village chief. A snap was heard as the old village chief was sent flying upside down. Several villagers hurriedly caught him and saw a blood-red whip mark on his chest, his skin torn and his flesh gaping open.

The leading big man got off his horse. Raising his large saber, he walked towards the house of a family on one side. The people behind him also spread out, wanting to enter the houses to search. Four or five bandits did not move. They were staring fiercely at the villagers, the weapons in their hands giving cold sparkles under the light of the setting sun.

Seeing the bandits going into their houses, some villagers rushed up to resist, but they were knocked down with ease. Two of them were even hit by weapons and immediately fell down in pools of blood.

That big man was walking towards a house. All of a sudden, a youngster rushed out from among the villagers. His steps were somewhat unsteady. Apparently, because he was too terrified, he

fell to the ground when he came close to the big man. Without struggling up, he gripped one of the big man's legs and implored in a trembling voice: "Please... Leave them alone... Don't go in, I beg of you..."

This youngster was none other than Xiao Feng. He had been staying at the back of the crowd all along. But now, even though he was extremely frightened inside, he still rushed out—because, Ling'er was hiding in this house.

Seeing him like this, the big man was stupefied for a short while. Then he gave an eerie laugh: "What? There's something important to you in this house? Ha ha, then open your eyes and watch me go off with it!" Afterwards, he lifted a foot and sent Xiao Feng flying immediately with a kick.

Xiao Feng spouted out a mouthful of blood when he was still in midair. His ribs seemed to have been broken by the kick. After falling to the ground, he struggled to get up, but a bandit stamped on his back, preventing him from getting up.

Not long after the big man entered the house, terrified screams of a young girl came out from inside. That big man then laughed out loud in pleasant surprise and complacency: "Ha ha! I didn't expect this shabby village to have such a juicy girl! The brat outside wants to protect you, right? What's good about that kind of weakling? Come and let me love you properly..."

Xiao Feng kept wanting to struggle up, but he could not break loose from that foot which was stamping on his back. He hopelessly reached out his hands towards the house in front of him, his eyes almost blood-red: "Ling'er... Don't be afraid, Ling'er. I'll come and save you right away... Right away..."

When his beloved was about to be violated, his deep fear turned into an extreme hatred. He hated Heaven for being unfair, hated the bandits for being inhuman, and hated himself for being a weakling...

A force was being bred in his mind and was awakening in the depths of his soul. The young man spouted out another mouthful of blood. His hands pushed against the ground, their blue veins popping up. His body was lifted up bit by bit, but his consciousness gradually started to become hazy.

The bandit who was stamping on the youngster's back with a foot suddenly felt that the resistance under his foot seemed to get stronger and stronger, even feeling somewhat insuppressible. His eyes flashed with fierceness. He raised the large saber in his hand, ready to bring it down in a chop.

Right at this moment, he heard several people exclaim from behind. Before he could turn around, he felt a great force hit the back of his head. Then the body of this bandit was sent flying a good several meters and fell to the ground. Not uttering even a groan, he lost consciousness.

Without stopping at all, a silhouette then rushed into the house from which the cries for help of the young girl were coming out.

This was none other than Bai Yunfei!!

When he reached the entrance of the village, he saw a scene of chaos in the village. Some people had fallen down in pools of blood and some were treating them on one side. Several scoundrels with weapons were blocking the way in front of the villagers. Furthermore, in front of a small house, a youngster was being stamped on by a man, who then raised the weapon in his hand, ready to hack down right away.

“Bandits!” In just about the blink of an eye, Bai Yunfei guessed the identity of these people correctly. Without thinking much, he channeled his soulforce into his legs and rushed up quickly. After sending that man flying with a kick, he rushed into that room in front of him.

As soon as he entered the room, he saw a big man pushing a young girl down on the floor, his left hand clutching her neck and

his right hand tearing at the clothes on her body. There was a glaring palm print on that young girl's face. Tears kept streaming down from her eyes as she struggled and begged nonstop. A piece of cloth on her right shoulder had been ripped out, revealing her snow-white skin.

That big man was obviously a vigilant one. He noticed as soon as Bai Yunfei went into the room. He turned around suddenly and, at the same time, made a grab at the large saber off to the side with his right hand.

He was fast, but Bai Yunfei was even faster! At almost the same time as the big man turned around, he arrived at his side with a dash. Afterwards, the big man gave a miserable cry. It turned out the hand with which he tried to grab the large saber had been trampled on by Bai Yunfei's foot. Cracking sounds were heard. Obviously the bones of the hand had been crushed.

With a solemn look in his eyes, Bai Yunfei did not care about the big man's miserable cry. He raised a foot and sounds of broken bones came out again from the big man's chest. His huge body was unexpectedly sent flying directly. Only after flying three or four meters away from the room did it fall down to the ground.

After the big man had flown out, the outside was caught up in a strange silence. Everybody, whether bandits or villagers, watched in a somewhat stupefied manner as that big man was lying on the ground spouting blood unceasingly.

Only when Bai Yunfei walked out of the room did those bandits react by running up to the big man in succession while crying. Even the several bandits who had rushed into other houses ran out when hearing this.

The dialog situation in which the bandits would shout a question: "Where are you from, brother...?" and Bai Yunfei would say indifferently: "You're unlucky to run into me. On behalf of the moon, I will destroy you..." did not occur.



After walking out of the room, Bai Yunfei swept a glance at the eleven bandits who were still standing. Without giving them any time to reorganize, he charged straight at the bandit nearest him.

That man was frightened. He promptly raised the large saber in his hand and swung it at Bai Yunfei. Bai Yunfei leaned to one side a bit, avoiding the blade. He then reached out his left hand, grabbed the man's wrist and gave a squeeze. That man let out a miserable cry. The large saber slipped out of his hand. Bai Yunfei caught it and threw it backwards then hit him in the face with a punch. That man immediately fell straight on his back and passed out.

Only when Bai Yunfei had knocked out another bandit did the remaining bandits react. Brandishing their weapons, they came at him and surrounded him.

Bai Yunfei grabbed up the man who had just been knocked down at his feet, whirled him around in a circle before throwing him out immediately, smashing him into three other men. He then rushed out of the encirclement and walked around quickly among the bandits, snatching their weapons and hitting them with his fists.

In just a while, the weapons had been piled up and the ten bandits had fallen to the ground in disorder. Most of them had been knocked out. The few who were still conscious were wailing on the ground, clutching either their wrists or their stomachs.

Bai Yunfei had used just a few minutes. He looked at the bandits who were lying all over the ground. There was even a somewhat unsatisfied expression on his face—This was a soul cultivator. Even though he was still at the initial stage of Soul Apprentice, he was not someone who ordinary people could match.

Right at this moment, Bai Yunfei suddenly heard the sounds of horse hooves from behind. He turned around to take a look. It turned out there was still a bandit who had escaped unpunished. At some point, he had quietly mounted a horse and was now fleeing like crazy towards the road they had taken to come here.

Bai Yunfei naturally could not let him get away. With a step, he began to give chase. Because he did not know how to ride a horse, he had no choice but to run like mad in pursuit.

That man thought that he had escaped a disaster and was feeling glad that he had run away fast enough. Just come around that bend up ahead and he would see the mountain top where his hallmaster and the others were resting. Later, if he and those brothers went up together, they would definitely be able to kill that man!

Just when he let out a sigh of relief, he suddenly felt that there was something unusual at his side. He gave a sidelong glance and was so frightened that he almost fell down from the horseback.

Running with all his might, Bai Yunfei finally caught up with that man. Under the terrified look in his eyes, he grabbed one of his legs, which were squeezing the horse's belly, and pulled with force, dragging him to the ground directly. That man fell down from a horse that was running at high speed, and fell face first to the ground miserably, so when he stopped rolling, he was already breathing out more air than he was taking in.

When Bai Yunfei, carrying the runaway man with him, reached the entrance of the village, he suddenly heard a miserable cry in the village. His heart skipped a beat: "Could it be those bandits have woken up? Impossible, I hit them very hard..."

He quickly walked into the village. But when he saw the situation in the village, he stood still as if he was struck by lightning and looked at a blood-red area in front of him in stupefaction.

The villagers were all right, but they were similarly gazing towards the center of the village with a terrified expression.

That relatively wide vacant area in the center of the village had now been covered in blood completely. This was the blood of that gang of bandits!

A youngster whose entire body was soaked in blood was raising a one-meter long large saber, hacking unceasingly at a body in front of him. The body was vaguely recognizable and it was none other than the leading big man with dead fish eyes.

Those ten bandits around him were now all dead, with their chests and necks covered in deep wounds caused by the hacking of a large saber. Blood was still coming out nonstop from some of the wounds.

Amidst the infernal pile of dead men, that youngster called Xiao Feng, his eyes deep red and seemingly without focus, was mechanically chopping at the corpse in front of him again and again with the saber while growling like a beast with his mouth.

“Die... Die! All bandits must die! To pay for my parents’ death! To pay for my sister’s death! Kill you! Kill you! I’ll protect Ling’er! You’re not allowed to harm my Ling’er...”

Bai Yunfei looked at the young man in stupefaction. On seeing the despair and hatred in his eyes and hearing his words, somehow he felt an indescribable sorrow and a feeling of being in the same boat surge inside him.

Once in that Coliseum, where the nobility and the rich sought pleasure and where human lives were worthless, there was similarly a youngster with blood tears streaming down from his deep red eyes who brandished the brick in his hand and smashed it down on the body of Direwolf again and again...

“Brother Xiao Feng!”

A lovely shout woke Bai Yunfei up with a start. A young girl in damaged clothes rushed out from that small house. Even though he was covered in blood completely and had a crazy expression, she embraced his waist and said anxiously and tearfully: “Brother Xiao Feng! What’s happened to you? Don’t scare me... brother Xiao Feng...”

The moment the young girl had begun to talk, that young man had stopped his movements and turned his head somewhat absently to take a look. Now, when he was hugged by her and heard her concerned and anxious words, his body gradually stopped trembling. The saber in his hand fell to the ground. His eyes also slowly became pure and clear again.

“Ling... Ling’er! You’re all right... You’re all right! Very good, very good...”

The two of them embraced each other sobbingly on that blood-covered area, surrounded by a dozen of bandit corpses. This scene was somewhat strange to look at, but their innermost sincerity warmed Bai Yunfei’s heart a bit. Somehow, he was secretly rather happy for that youngster called Xiao Feng.

He did not seem to want to see that youngster’s mournful, hopeless expression at all.

Perhaps, it was because of that faintly familiar feeling...

## Chapter 12: Li Chengfeng

---

In a simple and crude house in the village, Bai Yunfei was sitting with legs crossed on a bed, recovering the soulforce he had used in the battle just then and at the same time pondering on what had just happened.

The task of handling those bandits' corpses had already been given to the villagers. Several people in the village including the village chief were severely injured but fortunately nobody had died.

When that youngster called Xiao Feng came to his senses, seeing corpses all over the ground, after knowing that all of them had been killed by himself, he vomited nonstop for over ten minutes. In fact, when Bai Yunfei saw those bodies which had been badly mutilated by his hacking, he was terrified inside too.

But the youngster did not regret killing those bandits at all. After vomiting, he still had an indifferent expression when looking at those corpses. Bai Yunfei could tell that his hatred for these bandits had reached an unimaginable level.

The youngster's name was Li Chengfeng. Originally he had lived in a hamlet beside Mt. Blackwood. But later, the bandits had broken in the village, burning, killing and pillaging. He had been hung up by those frenzied bandits and could only watch his family members get murdered one by one. His sister had even been violated before her death. Those bandits had not killed him but they had made him live in endless pain.

Half a year ago, he had come to this village. Only after he and Ling'er had fallen in love with each other had he gradually walked out from the shadow of that traumatic experience to start a new life. But what had happened today seemed to have caused him to relapsed into his old self. Plunged into a state of madness by the explosion of his hatred, he had killed all of the bandits knocked

down by Bai Yunfei.

After being told about what had happened to him by the villagers, Bai Yunfei became rather emotional too. No wonder even though the people in the village had been afraid of him at that time, they did not react strongly against him afterwards at all. Those bandits were simply not worthy of compassion. It was impossible to tell exactly how many human lives they had killed and how many happy families they had destroyed.

Knocks at the door interrupted Bai Yunfei's train of thought. He raised his head, saying: "Come in."

After seeing the visitor, his eyes flashed with a tinge of an indescribable feeling. He said indifferently: "Why do you want to see me?"

The visitor was about the same age as Bai Yunfei. His shoulder-length hair, which should look elegant, was somewhat disheveled at the moment. There was a hint of profound sadness on his rather handsome face and his eyes appeared to have an unalterable hatred concealed in them. Because his body was injured, his face was slightly haggard—This was none other than Li Chengfeng.

After entering the room, he stood at the door and said to Bai Yunfei: "Young hero Bai, the bandit you brought back has woken up. We interrogated him and learned that they are from the Blackwood Stronghold on Mt. Blackwood. There are still twenty to thirty of them in a grove to the west of the village. If they know about the situation here, it's very likely that they will attack our village. Village chief told me to ask you if you have any solution..."

Bai Yunfei was stupefied. He had not expected that gang of bandits to still have associates, and over twenty people at that.

"Do you know how powerful they are?" Bai Yunfei asked after thinking for a while.

"That man said, their hallmaster Zhong over there is a soul

cultivator of the late-stage Soul Apprentice level...” At this point, Li Chengfeng seemed to be somewhat afraid.

“You know about soul cultivators?” Judging from his current manner, obviously he knew about the fearsomeness of soul cultivators.

“I do... It’s said that the chieftain of the Blackwood Stronghold bandits is a soul cultivator of the middle Soul Warrior stage with enough power to lift cauldrons, split boulders and tear wild beasts apart alive; the vice-chieftain is a late Soul Personage; the four hallmasters under them are all soul cultivators too. That hallmaster Zhong outside the village is one of them.” At this point, Li Chengfeng’s eyes showed a deep hatred: “Besides, that hallmaster Zhong was the leader of the bandit group that destroyed my former village and ruined my family!”

Bai Yunfei was somewhat preoccupied listening to him. He had not thought that a bandit group would be so powerful. Fortunately he had not been stupid enough to go and tackle them directly. Now it looked like he would also have to be extremely careful even when getting rid of small groups of bandits coming down from the mountain. Could it be soul cultivators were so widespread?

Moreover, there was even a hallmaster of the late-stage Soul Apprentice level not far from here. Compared to him, Bai Yunfei would probably be no match for him in a one-on-one fight. After all, they were basically not on the same level in real combat experience. However, he had the upgraded items, so the victor could only be decided after they had fought each other.

“Young hero Bai, you... are a soul cultivator too, right? Can you deal with that bandit group outside the village?” Li Chengfeng asked somewhat urgently. After all, at the moment, all the people in the village were staking their lives on this mysterious youngster. He really could not imagine how terrible it would be if those utterly inhuman bandits rushed into the village—He really could not bear to once again lose someone he loved.

Bai Yunfei raised his head and looked at him but did not answer his question. His eyes glittering, it seemed he was considering a certain decision.

“Do you want to get revenge with your own hands? Do you want to protect what is important to you with your own power?”

“What?” These words, said by Bai Yunfei after keeping silent for a long time, stupefied Li Chengfeng then sent a tremble through his entire body. He asked with a mixed expression of excitement, pleasant surprise and hope: “You mean...”

Bai Yunfei said with a nod: “Your soulforce has awakened. I can teach you the way of training the soul, allowing you to become a real soul cultivator.”

With a flop, Li Chengfeng knelt down in front of Bai Yunfei, ready to kowtow in salute.

However, when he was just halfway through bowing down, he was held back. It turned out Bai Yunfei had already dashed up to him at some point and stopped him from kowtowing.

“I didn’t mean I’d take you as my disciple at all. You don’t need to bow to me. I can’t accept it. I’ve decided to teach you that method because I’ll probably need your power in the upcoming battle. Besides... I can understand your feelings to some extent so I just want to help you a bit out of convenience...”

With a shake of Bai Yunfei’s wrist, a gray scroll appeared in his hand. He passed it to Li Chengfeng, saying: “At the moment you can feel a special force in your body, right? That’s your soulforce. Pour soulforce into this scroll and you’ll be able to learn the skin and flesh control method of the Soul Apprentice stage. This scroll is still useful to me so at the moment I can’t give it to you permanently. Just return it to me tomorrow.”

Looking at Li Chengfeng’s expression, Bai Yunfei thought for a while then continued: “You go and tell the villagers to pile the



bodies of those bandits up at the entrance of the village. I think... this should be able to stop those men for a night. Tomorrow, if you have gained some understanding of soulforce, the two of us should be able to deal with them by teaming up. But if they want to attack the village tonight, then I'll have no choice but to fight them with all my might..."

... ..

The bright moon was hanging high in the starry sky. In the grove, the several campfires were already about to go out. Hallmaster Zhong said with a somewhat solemn expression while staring at the campfire in front of him: "This Tang Gui still hasn't returned yet... Could it be, something unexpected has happened?"

At this moment, a clatter of horse hooves was heard. This was the man sent out to scout the situation coming back. Hallmaster Zhong raised his head to look at him. Not waiting for him to ask first, with a terrified expression, that man said in a trembling voice even before getting off the horse: "Dead... They're dead! Tang Gui and those brothers are all dead!"

These words shouted by him woke all the men who were about to sleep up with a start. They gathered around him successively. That man took a breath and continued: "The bodies of Tang Gui and the others have been piled up at the entrance of the village. They... they're all dead!"

Only now did everybody understand completely. They were all shocked.

"What did you say? Those ten something men are all dead?"

"Did you get it wrong? Tang Gui isn't weak. Ordinary people are simply no match for him!"

"It's just a small village. How could it have possibly killed them all?!"

"Get your weapons ready, everybody! Let's go to that village and

have a look. If it's true, let's exterminate them to avenge Tang Gui and those brothers!"

"Don't panic. There may be some expert over there..."

"... .."

"All of you shut up for me!" hallmaster Zhong shouted his command angrily upon seeing everybody thrown into disorder. The expression on his face was very unsightly. As soon as he shouted, the grove quieted down.

Hallmaster Zhong looked at that man who had gone to scout previously, saying: "Did you really see their bodies? Are there any other circumstances?"

"It was really their bodies. I... I was afraid there would be danger so I didn't get too close to them and didn't dare to act rashly. Then I immediately came back to report to you, Hallmaster."

After listening to what he said, hallmaster Zhong did not say anything again. He lowered his head and pondered expressionlessly: "Someone who can kill the thirteen of them including Tang Gui is definitely not weak. Maybe... that's a soul cultivator! What's their purpose in piling the corpses up outside? To anger us to lead us into attacking then ambush us? Or to frighten us so that we won't dare to act rashly?"

After a long time, he lifted his head and swept his eyes over everybody, saying: "We're not familiar with this place so attacking at night would put us at a disadvantage. We'll rest for a night. At dawn tomorrow, we'll kill our way into the village! They have provoked our Blackwood Stronghold. We'll definitely destroy their village and kill them all!"

... ..

Because Bai Yunfei did not know when the bandits outside the village would come to attack, he did not sleep at all. Instead, he sat on the bed practicing cultivation while always paying attention to

the situation outside. To him now, not sleeping for a day or two would not affect him too much.

The enemies were a hallmaster of the late Soul Apprentice stage and over twenty other vicious bandits. If he was on his own, he would definitely be no match for them. Hopefully in a night’s time Li Chengfeng could roughly grasp how to use soulforce and to control the skin and flesh. If that was the case, there would be two soul cultivators on this side, and when they cooperated with each other... they could win!

With a thought, Bai Yunfei took out from the interspatial ring a +9 dagger: “I can’t use too much soulforce. But if I have one more weapon with an additional attribute, I’d have a greater chance of winning. Let’s upgrade this just once and see!”

“Upgrade.”

Upgrade Successful

Equipment Grade: Normal  
Upgrade Level: +10  
Attack: 22  
Additional Attack: 27  
+10 Additional Effect: Attacks have a 2% chance of slowing the target's speed for 10 seconds.  
Upgrade Requirement: 15 Soulpoints

“Successful!” Bai Yunfei was delighted, “Speed reduction... A pretty good effect.

“Then... Let’s be ready to welcome the first real battle in my life!”

... ..

The next day, when light had just appeared, Bai Yunfei called Li

Chengfeng out. He had been practicing for a whole night. Judging from his vigorous expression, his training seemed to have gone rather well. Bai Yunfei asked: “How’s your training?”

Li Chengfeng respectfully handed the scroll to him, saying: “I have memorized the method for soulforce cultivation and the first level of body control. After a night of practicing, the injuries on my body have healed. I have consolidated my early Soul Apprentice stage and can already control my skin and flesh to a simple extent as well.”

Afterwards, he walked towards a washbasin-sized rock on one side and raised his right fist. It swelled up in an instant and he smashed it down violently. Amidst soft cracks, the rock was broken into pieces. He picked up a piece about the size of an egg and squeezed with force. A large amount of very small fragments then fell down.

Bai Yunfei was somewhat amazed. After just a night, except for having healed his injuries, Li Chengfeng could even grasp the first level of body control to such an extent. To him, this was rather unexpected.

“Not bad, given your current power, those ordinary bandits are already no match for you. Even though you lack real combat experience, using your speed and strength, and something I’m about to give you, it shouldn’t be difficult for you to deal with them.

Last night they didn’t attack so they’ll definitely come not long after dawn. At that time, we...”

After explaining everything clearly, Bai Yunfei patted his shoulder with a solemn expression.

“The safety of this village will depend on the cooperation of the two of us.”

“Then, let’s fight with all our might!”

## Chapter 13: First Time Fighting a Soul Cultivator; The Might of an Upgraded Item!

---

Over twenty fast horses rushed out of the grove, with hallmaster Zhong at the forefront, galloping towards the village.

After coming round a bend, they saw a common village up ahead in the distance. Only, it should be breakfast time now, but there was no smoke rising from the kitchen chimneys in the village. Moreover, a small ‘pile of men’ could be vaguely seen at the entrance, making the calmness of the village somewhat strange.

Hallmaster Zhong lifted a hand and said to the bandits behind him: “Slow down now. Be careful when advancing. There may be an amb...”

However, before he could finish what he was saying, a thick rope suddenly rose from inside the earth and was stretched tight instantly. The galloping horses simply had no time to react. The several horses charging in the forefront immediately fell to the ground. The riders also fell from the horseback in succession. The men at the back promptly pulled the reins, but there was still a poor bandit who was trampled on the chest by the horses that could not stop in time. He gave a snort then did not move anymore.

The moment the several horses in the front fell down, two silhouettes rushed out swiftly from the left and right sides of the road respectively then killed their way into the chaotic crowd.

Hallmaster Zhong jumped out with a smack on the back of his horse right when it fell down. He rolled on the ground several times, canceling out all the forward momentum. As soon as he turned around, he heard miserable cries ring out behind him.

He saw two people rushing and killing among the disorderly bandits, just like tigers among sheep—These two people who had

just rushed out were naturally Bai Yunfei and Li Chengfeng.

Holding a dagger in each of his hands, Li Chengfeng was slashing, hacking and stabbing. Before the men around him could react, almost all of them were injured. Two even dropped dead to the ground after getting stabbed in the chest directly.

Bai Yunfei was using bare hands, but sounds of broken bones were heard every time he threw a punch or a kick. Almost anyone who was knocked down by him could not struggle up again.

Hallmaster Zhong was in a dazed state for just a short while, but five or six of his men had been downed by them!

His whole body trembling, the corners of his eyes about to crack, he raised his large saber and rushed up with a roar.

Seeing that hallmaster Zhong rushing over, Bai Yunfei's eyes flashed with a tinge of shrewdness. He leaned to one side to avoid an incoming saber then grabbed a bandit and threw him fiercely forwards, smashing him into the crowd, creating a gap. Afterwards, he got out with a leap and rushed towards that hallmaster Zhong!

When having taken just several steps, hallmaster Zhong saw a person come rushing at him. Grinning hideously, he raised his saber and wanted to hack at the attacker. But that man suddenly jumped over ten feet up into the air. While in midair, he gave his right hand a shake and a one-meter long large saber unexpectedly appeared in the blink of an eye. He then took advantage of his fall's momentum to swing it down fiercely!

"A space ring? Soul cultivator!" Hallmaster Zhong's expression changed. He lifted the large saber in his hand up to meet the enemy's attack.

"Ding!"

A crisp sound of metal crashing into metal rang out. The momentum of his fall gave Bai Yunfei an advantage so he was able

to knock the opponent back several steps. However, after landing firmly on the ground, he did not try to be the first to attack again. After all, he did not have enough combat experience, so attacking hastily would very likely result in his weak points being exploited by the opponent.

“Late-stage Soul Apprentice! Damn it! How can we run into a soul cultivator at this kind of place?! Plus, it’s even a soul cultivator with a space ring!” Hallmaster Zhong retreated several steps continuously. He could only feel a somewhat tingling feeling in his arm and was extremely shocked inside. He had guessed earlier that the opponent was a soul cultivator about as powerful as he was, which did not really matter. However, the opponent unexpectedly had a space ring! It should be known that in the entire Blackwood Stronghold, only the chieftain had a space ring, and not even the vice-chieftain had one!

He looked at the large saber in his hand again, and to his surprise, he saw that the hack had left a chip in it!

“Damn it! Damn it! Just who is he really?! This large saber of mine is made of top-grade materials. That saber of his is a soul armament? Impossible. If it was a soul armament, there wouldn’t be just a simple chip like this. But it’s definitely better than mine!”

Several continuous miserable cries woke hallmaster Zhong up from his shock. He lifted his eyes to take a look. More than half of the group of bandits behind Bai Yunfei had unexpectedly already fallen down. Even though one of Li Chengfeng’s arms had suffered injuries, they were not serious at all. As he moved nimbly about, dodging and weaving, he did not use any techniques worthy of mentioning either. He would just dodge the incoming attacks then thrust with his daggers, downing the bandits one after another.

“That man is a soul cultivator too! This is bad!” Hallmaster Zhong suddenly reacted. He rushed straight towards Bai Yunfei without any more hesitation.

Bai Yunfei's fighting plan was actually very simple, namely, when the enemy was still unprepared, he himself would hinder hallmaster Zhong first while Li Chengfeng would dispose of those common bandits, then they would join forces and kill hallmaster Zhong!

Those common bandits had had twenty two men in total. In the very beginning, six of them had been knocked down by Bai Yunfei and Li Chengfeng and another had been unlucky enough to be trampled on by the horses. When Bai Yunfei had rushed out to obstruct hallmaster Zhong, there had already been only fifteen men left. So, relying on his all-out effort and resentment, Li Chengfeng had been able to handle them fairly smoothly.

Moreover, because those bandits had been attacked suddenly, and so many of their comrades had been downed in an instant, they were flustered inside. One man's loss is another man's gain. Under this circumstance, Li Chengfeng would probably be able to knock down all the bandits in ten more minutes.

That hallmaster Zhong obviously had also noticed this. Not daring to delay again, he attacked with all his might, but Bai Yunfei only defended. Relying on the sharpness of the large saber in his hand, he clashed with him head-on strike after strike. Before long, hallmaster Zhong's saber was covered in chips, looking like a saw with teeth.

Bai Yunfei raised his saber again and warded off another hack by hallmaster Zhong. Suddenly, he felt a great force come from his stomach, but this was hallmaster Zhong throwing a kick at him. He was, after all, still too inexperienced so he had only paid attention to stopping the opponent's weapon and had neglected defending his lower body. As a result, he was knocked back several steps continuously by the kick.

Before he could stabilize his body, he felt something come at him from behind. He turned around in a flash and saw that a bandit had unexpectedly left the group fight against Li Chengfeng to go up



to his back at some point then swung his saber at himself.

Learning from hallmaster Zhong, he raised his saber to block the attack and also raised his foot, sending him flying with a kick. That man was immediately sent flying in the direction of Li Chengfeng then was stabbed in the chest mercilessly with a dagger.

When lifting his foot, Bai Yunfei secretly braced himself for another attack. Before he could turn around, the corners of his eyes caught a glimpse of the gleam of a saber that was coming at the right side of his waist.

Because it was impossible for him to block the strike with his saber, he could only lean to the left, avoiding the attack by a hair's breadth, and jump at the same time. However, when he had yet to escape completely, he felt a burning pain in his waist. Bai Yunfei moved two meters away, turned around to face hallmaster Zhong, and touched his own waist with his hand. It came into contact with a cold area and not a wound.

Hallmaster Zhong was looking at the totally delighted expression on Bai Yunfei's face in some stupefaction. That saber strike by the waist just then should have been able to cut him in half directly, but... except for feeling some pain, he had not even lost a single drop of blood!

A large hole had been cut into the clothes at Bai Yunfei's waist, revealing a gray armor underneath. There was a white mark on the armor, which had been caused by that saber strike just then.

Bai Yunfei touched this soft armor on his body in pleasant surprise: "I didn't expect the defense of this +10 soft armor to be so high. That was so dangerous. I even thought I'd be cut in two..."

Equipment Grade: Normal

Upgrade Level: +10

Defense: 31

Additional defense: 43

+10 Additional Effect: When attacked, there is a 2% chance of reflecting part of the

“How is this possible?... How is this possible?! Could it be that soft armor of his is a soul armament? Just who is he really?!” Roaring in his heart, hallmaster Zhong rushed up again.

Having known the defense level of the soft armor, Bai Yunfei was much less restrained too. As long as an attack was aimed at his torso, he would rather endure the pain inflicted by it so that he could similarly hit the opponent with a strike of the saber.

Even though hallmaster Zhong also wore a decent soft armor on his body which could withstand the attacks of ordinary weapons, it was just like a piece of paper in front of Bai Yunfei’s weapon. His waist was hit by a sweep too, but he was not so lucky as Bai Yunfei. A long wound was created by the strike and blood spurted out from it.

Facing an incoming horizontal saber sweep, Bai Yunfei turned around and resisted the strike head-on with his back. However, when he was hit this time, he did not feel that kind of burning pain from before. Instead, he needed to take just a step forwards to absorb the impact of the blow completely and only felt a small part of the soulforce in his body suddenly drained away like it was absorbed by the soft armor.

The moment that large saber hacked at Bai Yunfei’s back, hallmaster Zhong immediately felt a powerful reaction force come at him. The part of his palm between the thumb and forefinger was burst, making it almost impossible for him to keep hold of the handle of the saber. Very shocked, he retreated continuously. As he looked at his palm which was bleeding profusely, he was dumbstruck for a while.

The soft armor’s additional effect: Damage reflection!

In the blink of an eye, Bai Yunfei knew what had happened.

Naturally, he was unwilling to let this good opportunity pass. He turned around and swung the large saber in his hand at the opponent's waist. Very frightened, hallmaster Zhong raised his saber to make a block. Even though he was able to ward off this strike from Bai Yunfei, the large saber in his hand was sent flying because he could not clench it with enough force.

Greatly shocked, hallmaster Zhong retreated continuously. Only when he had moved over ten meters away did he look at Bai Yunfei with a terrified expression.

Bai Yunfei did not pursue and attack him because he had seen that the battle behind him had already finished. None of the twenty two bandits was still standing and most of them had been killed. The remaining ones were lying on the ground wailing, powerless to fight again.

There were some injuries on Li Chengfeng's arms and legs, but luckily his torso was still intact. Underneath the tattered clothes, there was a gray soft armor too. Although it was merely a +9 defensive item and did not have an additional effect, it was already enough to defend against those bandits' common attacks.

Li Chengfeng was in no hurry to finish off those bandits who were still alive. Instead, raising the two blood-dripping daggers, he walked up to Bai Yunfei's side step by step. His whole body was drenched in blood—most of which belonged to those bandits. Those blood-red eyes, filled with endless hatred, were staring firmly at hallmaster Zhong. Even though hallmaster Zhong had killed countless people, now he also felt a tremble in his heart and did not dare to look him in the eyes.

Hallmaster Zhong took a deep breath and calmed his chaotic mind down. He did not dare to take his eyes off Bai Yunfei and Li Chengfeng even for a moment for fear that the two of them would attack suddenly. His right hand reached into his bosom and took out a long wooden case from which he then took out a blue weapon that looked like an ice pricker.

“Though I’m not good at using this kind of weapon, it’s a soul armament in any case, so it should be able to pierce through that soft armor. At this stage, I’ve got no choice but to go all out!”

Bai Yunfei had not attacked immediately because he wanted to give Li Chengfeng a little time to recover. Now the situation was advantageous to them so as long as they were somewhat careful, they should be able to emerge victorious.

At this moment, the opponent took out a weapon that seemed like an ice pricker and was about the same size as a dagger. Judging from his expression, Bai Yunfei felt that this was definitely no ordinary object. Seeing him rush up, he told Li Chengfeng, who was beside him: “Watch out for his weapon. I’m going to have a dogfight with him and you’re going to look for opportunities to attack!”

Facing hallmaster Zhong who was rushing at him, Bai Yunfei still brought the saber down in a hack efficiently. The enemy unexpectedly raised the short pricker horizontally, using the short and small body of the pricker to block this strike. Moreover, when it came into contact with the saber’s blade, a nick unexpectedly appeared at the contact area of the blade!

After blocking Bai Yunfei’s attack, hallmaster Zhong repeated the same trick he had used before by raising his foot, throwing a kick. How could Bai Yunfei possibly fall for the same trick again? He also threw a kick. After the two feet collided with each other, both of them took half a step backwards.

However, hallmaster Zhong reacted faster than Bai Yunfei. After stabilizing his body, he took a step forwards then raised the Glacial Pricker in his hand and thrust it straight at Bai Yunfei’s heart!

Bai Yunfei was very frightened. He did not dare use the soft armor on his body to take this strike head-on, so he hurriedly put the large saber in his hand in front of his chest horizontally. Then a soft sound of collision was heard and Bai Yunfei retreated several

steps continuously.

Just when the opponent was about to pursue and attack him, his expression changed suddenly. He turned around, raised the Glacial Pricker and blocked a sneaky incoming dagger. But he felt a pain in his arm. Although he had blocked a dagger, there was another one he could not block!

Li Chengfeng had grabbed the opportunity to leave a wound on the opponent's arm before getting knocked away with a kick.

Bai Yunfei stabilized his body and lowered his head to take look. He immediately broke into a cold sweat as he saw a round, small hole through both sides of the blade and in the center of the large saber's body. Even the chest part of his soft armor had been pierced halfway through! Moreover, there was a cold area around the small hole that was covered in a layer of water droplets like it had frosted over.

“What weapon is that?!” Bai Yunfei trembled with fear as he looked at the weapon in hallmaster Zhong's hand. He only felt a chill in his heart.

Seeing hallmaster Zhong unexpectedly begin to chase after Li Chengfeng, he was very frightened. So he hurriedly calmed his mind down then rushed up while raising his weapon.

Because the short pricker in hallmaster Zhong's hand was too powerful, Bai Yunfei and Li Chengfeng had some misgivings both when attacking and defending, but that hallmaster always had misgivings about the weapons in his opponents' hands too, so the three of them got caught up in an arduous struggle.

Before long, many wounds had been inflicted upon their bodies.

Bai Yunfei only felt cold in the various places on his body that had been pierced by the opponent. It seemed there was a mass of cold air going on a rampage in his body. Both his strength and speed were now much worse than before, and Li Chengfeng was

also in a similar situation.

However, that hallmaster Zhong's situation was not good either. There were many wounds on his body and most of them had been caused by slashes of Li Chengfeng's daggers. Moreover, those wounds had been bleeding nonstop and recovering very slowly—this was none other than the additional effect of one of the daggers: “Slow down the recovery of the wounds caused by this item.”

Hallmaster Zhong was extremely anxious inside. If this continued, he would eventually bleed to death!!

As he was in a hurry, he made mistakes. After forcing Bai Yunfei to retreat again, because he did not have enough time to dodge, another wound was pierced into his shoulder by Li Chengfeng's dagger, and just when he was pierced by the dagger, suddenly a shiver ran through his entire body. A strange kind of feeling then appeared on his body, but he could not tell exactly what it was.

When he made a backward stab at Li Chengfeng, who was beside him, and the attack was barely avoided by the opponent, he finally discovered a problem: The opponent should not have been able to avoid this strike from him completely at all, but he had unexpectedly avoided it, because—he himself had slowed down!

In a normal situation, to his knowledge, this strike should have already hit the target. However, his body had become a bit slower!

This was an exceptionally uncoordinated feeling that he had never experienced before so he was even somewhat at a loss.

However, Bai Yunfei's eyes glittered with shrewdness. A few seconds later, he finally confirmed that this was the additional effect of the other dagger:

“Attacks have a 2% chance of slowing the target's speed for 10 seconds.”

“Attacks have a 2% chance of slowing the target’s speed for 10 seconds.”

Trigger successful!

Of course Bai Yunfei could not let this rare chance pass. He reminded Li Chengfeng to pay attention to attacking with a roar then brandished his large saber, attacking the opponent fiercely.

One strike after another, Bai Yunfei hacked down unceasingly at a speed of almost one strike per second. Hallmaster Zhong was extremely flustered inside, not knowing what had actually happened to his body. His reduced speed made it impossible for him to counterattack so he could only block Bai Yunfei’s attacks one after another in a pitiful manner.

Suddenly, when he used the short pricker to block yet another strike of the saber, he felt a powerful force come from the saber. It was simply irresistible, causing him to take three heavy steps backwards continuously. His body even leaned backwards, losing balance.

When Bai Yunfei felt a strand of soulforce rush into the large saber, he immediately knew that the effect had been triggered!

Equipment Grade: Normal

Upgrade Level: +10

Attack: 33

Additional Attack: 39

+10 Additional Effect: Attacks have a 3% chance of inflicting knockback.

“Now is the time!!!”

The moment Bai Yunfei shouted loudly, Li Chengfeng had already rushed up to hallmaster Zhong’s face. After raising both of his daggers simultaneously, he stabbed them down at the opponent’s chest.

Through the heart!



## Chapter 14: Soul Personage Stage, Soul Skills, and Soul Armaments!

---

His entire body trembled and his eyes were filled with a mixture of hatred and grief. On his face, streams of tears rolled down from his eyes as Li Chengfeng stalked towards the few bandits who were still alive. Though he watched, Bai Yunfei said nothing to stop Bai Yunfei. Instead, he picked up the blue-colored short pricker from next to the corpse of hallmaster Zhong and walked towards the village.

Miserable cries rang up behind him one after another. He gave a soft sigh but did not turn around.

During the whole day, the men in the village were all busy disposing of these bandits' corpses. The weapons and money were kept, but everything else and the bodies were buried together. After all, because so many bandits had died this time, they absolutely could not let someone else know about this, otherwise they would bring a disaster to the hamlet.

There were thirty-six corpses in total. The bandit who had been captured and brought back by Bai Yunfei was still killed after telling them a lot of information. If any man of this kind was let go, he would become a great disaster.

There were also those horses. Selling them all together was definitely out of the question because this would be too easy to notice. So, they could only keep them at the back of the mountain first then slowly deal with them later.

Having experienced this event, the villagers all felt that they were lucky survivors of a disaster. Bai Yunfei and Li Chengfeng had even become heroes in the village. This was especially the case with Li Chengfeng. Except for looking a bit crazy when facing those bandits, he was very kind and sincere to other people. Ling'er was by his side all the time, carefully helping him treat the

wounds on his body.

... ..

The next day, before dawn, Bai Yunfei slowly opened his eyes after making a strange hand seal with his hands. He had been sitting with legs crossed on the bed doing cultivation for a whole night. As he stretched his sluggish waist, his entire body gave off a series of cracking sounds. Bai Yunfei even let out a comfortable sigh softly.

He raised his right hand and put it in front of his face then made a fist. A delighted smile appeared on his face.

“Early-stage Soul Personage... I’ve benefited a lot from yesterday’s battle... Using the Upgrade Technique to increase the soulforce is certainly a shortcut, but real combat is also necessary. If I want to become powerful, there’s still a very long way to go!”

Having reached the Soul Personage stage, the first thing he did naturally was to take that technique scroll out and experienced the blood and bones control method of the Soul Personage stage. Only after a long time did he put the scroll away then lower his head, saying contemplatively: “The blood and bones control method is much more complex and difficult than the skin and flesh control method... I can only learn it bit by bit through meditation. Next is...”

With a thought, the various items inside the space ring showed up in his mind. His soulforce touched the other two scrolls that he had been unable to take out previously. This time Bai Yunfei’s feeling was much clearer than before. He felt clearly that his soulforce was gently bounced off by a force on one of those scrolls when trying to come into contact with it and thus was unable to get close to it. As for the other scroll, the moment his soulforce touched it, it disappeared like a flash then reappeared in Bai Yunfei’s hand.

Looking at this white scroll in his hand, Bai Yunfei was rather

excited inside. He poured his soulforce into it impatiently.

"The 'Overlapping Waves Art', a mid-human tier soul skill that uses a special method to control the explosiveness and stretching of the muscles and bones of the arm so that the force of a punch behaves like an overlapping wave. The resulting power is thus several times greater than that of a normal punch...." After having read the contents of the scroll, Bai Yunfei carefully arranged his thoughts for a while. "A soul skill....I'll have to control both the muscles and the bones at the same time. No wonder I can only practice this after reaching the Soul Personage stage. This means that I'll have to be a Soul Warrior before I can use the other scroll. Is there a soul skill in that one too?

"Besides, after the Overlapping Waves Art, there's also a spear technique. This means..." At this point, there was a happy expression on Bai Yunfei's face again. His soulforce made a sweep in the space ring and a crimson spear suddenly appeared in his hand.

Bai Yunfei felt that it was almost heavy enough to twist his wrist: "This fella... So heavy, at least 50 kg. Ordinary people would have great difficulty in brandishing it, let alone using it to fight. No wonder I'm only allowed to use it after I become a Soul Personage."

The spear was about 2.7 meter long, rather thick and crimson from top to bottom. It even gave off a little heat. At the place where the blade and the handle were joined, there were three embedded crimson, slightly transparent, round crystals.

Bai Yunfei stroked the spear rather admiringly, feeling the waves of warmth emitted from it. He even somewhat impatiently wanted to go out and swing it around a couple of times to check it out.

Suddenly, seeming to remember something, Bai Yunfei stared at the spear in his hand and gave it a thought.

Upgrade Requirement: 85 Soulpoints

Bai Yunfei’s eyes popped out of his head and his jaws dropped for a long time, then he shook his head forcefully. Only after checking the information once again did he murmured with a slight stammer: “Holy... Holy shit, an attack of 586? This... What the heck is this?”

Only after a long time did he finally calm down: “Low inheritance? I’ve never come across this grade before. Plus, the initial upgrade takes as much as 85 soul points. That's about what it takes to upgrade a dagger from +1 to +10 already.”

“Right...” Bai Yunfei put the spear on his legs and turned his wrist over. That weapon he had obtained from hallmaster Zhong appeared in his hand. As completely opposed to the spear, it was ice-cold and gave off tiny currents of cold air. There were a few small words on the handle, ‘Glacial Pricker’, which should be the name of this weapon.

Equipment Grade: Low Rare  
Attack: 237  
Upgrade Requirement: 63 Soulpoints

Bai Yunfei was stupefied: “Low rare? Another item grade I’ve never seen before. Looks like my understanding of this Upgrade Technique is still far from correct...”

“These two weapons are obviously on a different level to the ones I bought in the main street. Could it be, these are soul cultivators’ weapons? Impossible, such powerful weapons shouldn’t be so widespread. In the beginning, that hallmaster Zhong only used an ordinary large saber too...

“I wonder how it will be after getting upgraded...”

He immediately did what he thought. First, he put the spear away. After all, if he wanted to upgrade something, this Glacial Pricker would be a comparatively better choice because he could use a little less soulforce.

Several minutes later, Bai Yunfei looked at the Glacial Pricker in his hand with a hint of a forced smile on the corners of his mouth: “The amount of soul points needed for an upgrade hasn’t increased and has always been 63 points, but... this is still not enough!”

Equipment Grade: Low Rare

Upgrade Level: +8

Attack: 237

Additional Attack: 89

Upgrade Requirement: 63 Soulpoints

Even though he was exceptionally lucky not to have failed even once, after the eighth upgrade, Bai Yunfei felt that his soulforce was already running out. Now he was an early-stage Soul Personage, but perhaps the value of his soulforce was only about 500.

It was already dawn at the moment. Bai Yunfei was not anxious to research anymore. He began to sit in meditation to recover his soulforce. Only when someone outside knocked on the door and invited him to go to eat breakfast did he stand up and walk out of the room...

... ..

When Bai Yunfei told everybody that he wanted to leave for Mt. Blackwood, Li Chengfeng fell silent for a long time, but then he suddenly said that he wanted to go together with Bai Yunfei.

Bai Yunfei knew that his hatred for bandits had not been

diminished by his extermination of hallmaster Zhong's bandit group at all. On the contrary, because he had gained power, he no longer suppressed the hatred in his heart. Becoming powerful and annihilating all those who had caused him endless pain, this was precisely what he was thinking at the moment.

In fact, Bai Yunfei could understand Li Chengfeng's feelings. When had he himself not been in a similar situation...?

Originally Li Chengfeng had been a resident of the Mt. Blackwood region so he was rather familiar with the surroundings of that place. Moreover, he was now a soul cultivator too and not a weakling anymore. This journey to Mt. Blackwood would be much more dangerous than Bai Yunfei had thought before. After all, previously he had not expected a gang of bandits to have so many soul cultivators in it.

Therefore, after thinking for just a while, Bai Yunfei agreed to let Li Chengfeng go with him as he had requested.

... ..

Standing at the entrance of the village, looking at the mountains and forests in the distance, Bai Yunfei had a somewhat vacant expression in his eyes. It was impossible to know what he was thinking about. A clatter of footsteps woke him up with a start. He turned around to take a look and saw Li Chengfeng running up to his face with a bundle over his shoulder in a somewhat apologetically manner, saying: "Young hero Bai, I'm sorry for making you wait..."

Bai Yunfei waved his hand in an unconcerned manner and said smilingly: "No problem. We fought side by side after all, so later you can just call me Yunfei. Have you calmed Ling'er down yet? Don't make her sad..."

"Haha... Alright, then you can just call me Chengfeng too. Don't appear too aloof. I've already promised Ling'er that when I return from Mt. Blackwood this time, I'm going to marry her and take

care of her all my life..." There was a happy smile on Li Chengfeng's face. He turned around to take a look at the village again and waved to the young girl who was standing in front of the door of her house gazing at him. Then he turned around and went with Bai Yunfei, gradually disappearing towards the end of the path in the forest.

This time, because Li Chengfeng acted as a guide and both of them had good footwork, they went rather fast. After three days, they had already reached the vicinity of Mt. Blackwood. According to Li Chengfeng, the sphere of influence of the Blackwood Stronghold could be said to start from here. The bandits in this area would normally go around in groups, pillaging the villages nearby or robbing the trade caravans that went past this place.

There was a main road leading from Luoshi City to Ganling City in the northeast not far from Mt. Blackwood. Because trade caravans between the two cities often took this road, they also became the main target for the bandits. The bandits did not kill everyone either. As long as a caravan handed in a satisfying 'passage fee', they would let it go through safely. Otherwise, they would kill the caravan and take the goods without mercy. Of course, a caravan could also go through without paying, but it had to be protected by powerful people, such as soul cultivators.

In the evening in a rather spacious forest, intense fighting sounds were heard as two silhouettes got entangled with each other and collided. The sounds of their fists hitting each other were really spine-chilling.

But the two fighting people were obviously enjoying themselves. Beads of sweat from their foreheads ran across the smiles on the corners of their mouths. They threw a punch with their right fists at each other's left shoulder simultaneously. Then they both retreated several steps successively and stood face-to-face.

This was none other than Bai Yunfei and Li Chengfeng.

“Let’s stop training for today, Chengfeng. You’ve become more and more skillful at muscle control. The opportunities you seized to be explosive were just perfect. I’m really ashamed of my inferiority.” After massaging his left shoulder a bit, Bai Yunfei turned his right hand over and two bags of water appeared in his hand. He tossed one to Li Chengfeng then leaned on a large tree behind him and took several gulps.

Li Chengfeng sat down on the ground, took several gulps of water and said while shaking his head: “I’m no match for you. It happened like this only because you suppressed your power down to my level. If you use the Overlapping Waves Art, I’m afraid I won’t be able to take even a single punch from you.”

“Your soulforce fully awakened just a few days ago, yet you’re already about to become a mid-stage Soul Apprentice. I don’t know about the other soul cultivators’ practice speeds, but you’re quite a lot faster than I was in the beginning. It’s a pity I even thought that my improvement speed was very fast.

“Let’s train alone next. I need to get more used to spear techniques so that I can handle the battles that we’ll probably face soon. Right, you really don’t want that Glacial Pricker? It’s much more powerful than those two daggers.”

“Nope, these two daggers are very good, and I feel that they’re not weak at all. I already felt embarrassed to accept them when you gave them to me, how could I still want that Glacial Pricker? Plus, I’m not familiar with using that stab-only weapon.” Li Chengfeng shook his head, took out the two daggers from his waist and flipped them in hands skillfully.

Bai Yunfei said no more. He walked to one side and reached out his hand. A flaming red, 2.7 meter long spear appeared in his hand and a heat wave spread out, which could be felt even by Li Chengfeng, who was over 30 meters away. Looking at the crimson spear in Bai Yunfei’s hand, Li Chengfeng’s eyes showed a hint of admiration.



After simply spinning the spear for a bit, he started to practice spear techniques.

Horizontal sweeps, straight thrusts, upward yanks, downward smashes... Even though he had been learning them for just three days, his execution already looked decent, and it got faster and faster. Now Bai Yunfei's body was shrouded in countless blurs of the spear. From the distance, he looked like a flickering fire.

All of a sudden, his body stopped moving and the various spear images disappeared. With a soft shout, he thrust the spear straight at a large tree that could only be hugged by two people holding hands in front of him.

The moment the spear was thrust out, its entire body suddenly radiated a dazzling red glow. The three crystals at the top of the spear were even ablaze with a red light, looking like they were wrapped in a crimson flame.

“Pu!” A soft sound was heard as the tip of the spear went into the tree with complete ease. The moment it penetrated the tree, Bai Yunfei's flashed. He shouted in a deep voice: “Burst!!”

“Bang!!!”

Wood chips were sent flying around and the dazzling red glow shone out through the cracks in the tree. Afterwards, that whole section of the tree exploded suddenly and a heat wave several times more violent than before spread out in all directions. This large tree then fell backwards. An entire section at its base had gone missing, leaving behind a burned black cut surface...

# Chapter 15: With Bandits Like These, Prepare to Kill!

Equipment Grade: Low Inheritance

Upgrade Level: +10

Attack: 586

Additional Attack: 338

+10 Additional Effect: Straight thrusts have a 10% chance of causing an explosion of fire.

Upgrade Requirement: 85 Soulpoints

As Bai Yunfei stroked the crimson body of the spear, a smile appeared on the corners of his mouth. He looked at the fallen large tree in front of him, put the spear away then turned around and walked to a place not far from Li Chengfeng on Li Chengfeng’s right-hand side. After sitting down, leaning on a tree, he began to recover the physical strength he had used.

For the last several days, Bai Yunfei had never stopped studying the Glacial Pricker and the spear. In terms of grades, the spear was obviously superior to the Glacial Pricker. Therefore, he had experimented with the Glacial Pricker first.

Of course, the most important thing was the upgrades. Even though he felt that a ‘rare’ item like the Glacial Pricker should not possibly be destroyed after getting upgraded to +8 like ordinary items, he still considered for a long time before deciding to continue with the upgrades: He had obtained it for free anyway, so it would not matter if it exploded. If other soul cultivators knew that he treated a soul armament in such a manner, perhaps their balls would hurt so much that they would vomit blood.

The results did not disappoint him. He successfully upgraded it to +9 then failed the next upgrade, but it only went back to +8. This

detail alone allowed him to be sure that ‘rare’ items would not be destroyed before +10!

When Bai Yunfei upgraded the Glacial Pricker to +10, he did not continue upgrading it because intuition told him that if he failed again, the result would be very different to what had happened when he had failed to upgrade normal items after +8, namely, the item would be destroyed. Moreover, he was already very satisfied with the additional effect that had appeared at +10.

Equipment Grade: Low Rare Upgrade Level: +10  
Attack: 237  
Additional Attack: 128  
+10 Additional Effect: When thrown, the speed and attack are doubled.

Bai Yunfei also researched this additional effect. The moment the pricker was thrown out, his soulforce was sucked into it. Its flying speed was indeed more than twice as fast as that of a thrown normal dagger. Its damage was even more impressive as after piercing through a one-meter thick large tree, it could still fly forwards several dozens of meters. Bai Yunfei once carelessly shot it into a mountain wall and afterwards he and Li Chengfeng had to dig as deep as three or four whole meters to take it out.

Furthermore, if he poured soulforce into it in a proactive manner when throwing it, its speed and power would be even greater.

After confirming that there was no danger of destruction, Bai Yunfei also upgraded the spear to +10. Because the spear was crimson all over and was as hot as a flame when soulforce was poured into it, an idea sprung to his mind as he decided to give it a name -- he called it the ‘Fire-tipped Spear’!

... ..

Two days later, in the evening, Bai Yunfei observed the color of

the sky then said to Li Chengfeng, who was going in front of him: “Chengfeng, it’s about to get dark. Let’s find a forest and rest for a night before continuing the journey.”

Li Chengfeng halted his steps, looked around, pondered for a while and said: “We’d better keep going for a while. I remember that there’s a hamlet not far up ahead. We can see it after climbing over this mountain top. Let’s go and stay a night there tonight.”

“Oh, not a bad idea. Let’s go then,” Bai Yunfei naturally agreed after hearing him say so. For the last several days, they had had to spend the nights outdoors in the wild, which was not something comfortable either.

The two of them kept going for a while. The sky was already getting dark gradually. All of a sudden, Bai Yunfei halted his steps and said solemnly: “Wait... There seems to be something wrong. Chengfeng, look at the mountain over there!”

Li Chengfeng had been paying attention to his surroundings all along instead of looking into the distance. After hearing Bai Yunfei’s words, he took a careful look, but the expression on his face immediately changed. He said: “This light... Not good! It’s firelight. Even the sky is lit up to such an extent, could it be...”

Both of them exchanged a look and quickened their pace, running towards the peak of the mountain.

After a while, on the top of the mountain, Bai Yunfei looked solemnly at a village which was burning in a raging fire not far from the foot of the mountain. Li Chengfeng even trembled all over.

About twenty to thirty houses seemed to have been swallowed completely by the monstrous fire, but it seemed only few people were fighting the fire. There were quite a lot of people in the center of the village, but... only a few were moving. Various hopeless, sorrowful cries and shouts came into the ears of them both along with the wind on the mountain.

“It’s them... It’s definitely them... It’s like this again, it’s like this again! These damned bandits! Die... Die!” Li Chengfeng’s eyes gradually become crimson and also showed some signs of madness.

Bai Yunfei gave his shoulder a pat, saying: “Don’t be agitated! There doesn’t seem to be bandits in the village. Let’s go over there quickly. Saving people comes first!”

The moment the two of them entered the village, Bai Yunfei saw an unforgettable scene.

Under the illumination of the raging flames, there were corpses lying in pools of blood all around. Ten something lucky survivors were hurriedly treating the injured who were still alive. But there were also some survivors who were sitting on the ground with blank looks in their eyes, completely still, staring at the corpses in front of them. There was basically no life in their eyes, as if they had turned into zombies.

A series of sounds of crying and shouting woke Bai Yunfei up with a start. He shifted his eyes to have a look. An old woman with a head full of white hair was kneeling in front of a middle-aged man, her trembling hands pressing on a wound from which blood was gushing out nonstop on his chest. She was crying in despair: “Da Niu... Don’t leave me, son! If you leave me... How do I live?! Da Niu...”

The middle-aged man called Da Niu were looking at the old woman with somewhat blurry eyes. Seemingly using all his strength, he raised a hand with difficulty and grabbed the old woman’s hands on his chest. He wanted to say something, but as soon as he opened his mouth, he gushed a mouthful of blood...

This time, Li Chengfeng was unexpectedly the first to regain composure. He gave Bai Yunfei a push, saying: “Save people first!”

Only now did Bai Yunfei wake up. Turning his right hand over, he took out from the space ring all the medical items he had been carrying along, gave Li Chengfeng some then ran towards that old

woman.

“Granny, you’re doing it wrong. Allow me to treat the wound quickly. He can still survive.” After pulling the old woman up gently, Bai Yunfei squatted down in front of the middle-aged man and began to treat his wound.

The old woman was stupefied but reacted immediately. She looked at Bai Yunfei gratefully but was trembling too much to say a word and could only wait anxiously with an expression full of hope.

Bai Yunfei was not too adept at treating such a serious wound, but he did it very carefully. When the wound was bandaged completely, sweat had already come out on his forehead. However, that middle-aged man’s life seemed to have been saved at last and he was looking at Bai Yunfei appreciatively with a fragile expression.

Bai Yunfei let the old woman look after this middle-aged man again then stood up and went to another injured person...

After treating the wounds of several other people, his forehead was already covered in sweat and his expression was getting more and more solemn. A fury was growing inside him unceasingly...

“Mom... Mom... What’s happened to you? The house is burning. Let’s get out quickly, mom? Why aren’t you wearing clothes? Quickly go out with Fang’er, okay? Fang’er’s head hurts so bad.. Mom? Say something to me...”

Soft and tender sounds of crying came from a burning small house on one side. Bai Yunfei was surprised to learn that there were still survivors inside! Seeing that the house was about to collapse, he did not think much and rushed inside immediately.

A four or five year old little girl with high twin-tails was kneeling on the floor. Her little face should be innocent but it looked spent and dirty at the moment. Her left cheek was badly swollen. There

was even a streak of blood hanging from a corner of her mouth. Obviously she had been hit violently by someone earlier. Judging from the somewhat confused look in her eyes at the moment, she seemed to have just woken up from her unconsciousness.

However, in front of the little girl, there was a completely naked woman lying motionlessly on the floor. Her entire body was covered in countless bruises and bloodstains, looking like someone had cut her spotlessly white body with a saber again and again. The woman's mouth was stuffed with a piece of clothing which seemed to be her underwear. Obviously she had been violated and tortured before her death and had been unable to say anything. The endless pain and horror she had suffered could still be seen in her wide open eyes...

The little girl was pushing the body of her mother nonstop. The soft and tender sounds of her crying contained fear, puzzlement, confusion and pain.

Seeing this scene, Bai Yunfei fell into a trance instantly. It seemed he did not dare to believe what he was seeing. A burning, broken timber smashed down beside the little girl. Bai Yunfei finally woke up with a start. He rushed up like an arrow and kicked away a beam that was threatening to smash down on the girl. Then he took off his coat and wrapped it around that woman's body. Lifting the little girl with one hand and the woman's body with the other, he rushed out quickly.

After giving the little girl to the villagers on one side to take care of, he observed the surroundings carefully. It seemed there were already no survivors left in any house, and all the curable injured people had basically been cared for.

Suddenly, there was a clamor in the opposite direction. Bai Yunfei turned around to take a look and saw that Li Chengfeng was being surrounded by five or six villagers. They seemed to be saying something.

“What’s going on, Chengfeng?” Bai Yunfei asked after walking up to Li Chengfeng’s side.

“I don’t know either. Just now I revealed my power when saving an injured person who was trapped under a heavy object. They surrounded me after that.” Li Chengfeng said while shaking his head in a somewhat doubtful manner.

Right at this moment, the people around suddenly knelt to the two of them. A middle-aged man whose both legs and left arm were injured said loudly: “Young heroes, please go save my younger sister! She was captured and taken away by those bandits. They’re simply not humans! My younger sister, she... In the end, she’ll definitely be tortured to death... Please go save her! I’m going to kowtow to you...” After saying so, he knocked his head on the ground loudly regardless of the injuries on his body. His forehead immediately bled, but he did not pause at all.

The other people around also started to implore, saying that their own daughters or wives had been taken captive by the bandits and begging Bai Yunfei and Li Chengfeng to save them and bring them back. For a few moments, many people knelt down before the two of them and begged piteously.

It turned out there were still the people who had been captured by the bandits!

Only after being stupefied for a while did Bai Yunfei and Li Chengfeng react by raising everybody up hurriedly. Without saying anything, Bai Yunfei gave Li Chengfeng a look. They nodded to each other. He then turned to the villagers, saying: “Take good care of your injuries, everybody. We’ll definitely do our best to save them and bring them back!”

... ..

According to the villagers, those bandits had already left about three hours ago. Bai Yunfei and Li Chengfeng asked for the direction then gave chase at a very fast speed.



As they galloped, the scenery on the sides of the road fell behind them quickly and their ears were filled with never-ending sounds of the wind blowing. With a solemn expression, Bai Yunfei was thinking about something, but Li Chengfeng was already holding the two daggers in his hands, his eyes glittering with rage and hatred.

After they ran fast for about one hour, the silhouettes of a group of people appeared in a meadow ahead of them. Making use of the bright moonlight, they could see clearly that thirty to forty ferocious-looking bandits divided into several subgroups were surrounding several campfires, seemingly eating something.

Beside each campfire, there were three to five men doing something together. After taking a careful look, Bai Yunfei immediately could not suppress the fury in his heart anymore. He reached out his right hand and the Fire-tipped Spear appeared in his hand. Pushing his foot against the ground fiercely, he rushed out one step ahead of Li Chengfeng.

Those bandits were laughing obscenely while violating several women in tattered clothes.

“Chengfeng, you pay attention to the surroundings. Don’t let any bandit get away. They all deserve to die!”

“Let none survive... Kill!!”

# Chapter 16: Kill! Kill! Kill!

---

Tiger Li was one of the four hallmasters of the Blackwood Stronghold and a late-stage Soul Apprentice. This man's name sounded somewhat imperious but he looked more like a scholar. If he held a folding fan in his hand instead of a multi-ringed large saber, nobody would think that he was a vicious bandit.

However, despite looking gentle and weak, he was the most brutal and ruthless among the four hallmasters. He usually killed a large number of people or even slaughtered a village just because he was slightly dissatisfied with something—like today.

The mission of escorting the tributes back into the school had been snatched by that hallmaster Zhong, so he had really been in a bad mood. Today he took his henchmen down the mountain, wanting to find some women to play with. They unexpectedly encountered resistance in a hamlet so he destroyed the hamlet in his anger and took away seven or eight young women.

Originally he wanted to return through the night to the stronghold but he felt somewhat tired on the way so he stopped in a vacant area to eat, preparing to have a rest before resuming his journey.

Seeing that his subordinates were totally impatient to play with the women they had captured, Tiger Li drank all the wine in his wineskin in one go then shouted at a group on the right-hand side: "Damn. It! Leave that juicy beautiful girl for me! You bastards, how dare you fight over her in front of me? That one over there too! I intend to give her to Vice-Chieftain when we return! Don't you dare snatch her, you hear?"

The two groups berated by him spread out with embarrassed expressions. The group on the right apologized to him again and again with ingratiating smiles and stepped aside to make room, ready to let their hallmaster 'take the first bite'.

Tiger Li stood up and took two steps forwards, but he suddenly turned around as if thinking of something, looking in the direction of the road they had taken to come here, only to see a long crimson line approaching at high speed.

After giving it a good look, he discovered that it was not a red line. Instead, it was unexpectedly a youngster holding a flaming red spear in his hand who was coming at full gallop with a totally murderous expression. It seemed the moment he saw clearly what was coming, there was already only a distance of a hundred meters left between them.

Enemy! Moreover, this feeling... This was a soul cultivator!

Tiger Li was the type who reacted rather shrewdly. He could tell almost instantly that the visitor had no good intentions and shouted loudly: “The enemy is here! Be ready to fight!”

His shouting gave everybody a start. They turned their heads to take a look, only to see a man with a spear in his hands rushing at them at high speed. They were all somewhat doubtful: It’s just a man. Why is Hallmaster panicking like this?

An outermost subgroup of bandits had already raised their weapons, ready to teach this man who was charging up recklessly a brutal lesson, letting him know that he would have to pay for disturbing them when they were seeking pleasure—with his life!

Seeing that man about to charge up to his face, the bandit in the forefront raised the weapon in his hand with a ferocious expression, ready to hack down.

However, his raised hands stopped moving right above his head, and even the hideous grin on his face seemed to have frozen. He looked in stupefaction at the crimson spear which had pierced through his chest. The moment before his death, he thought that—his chest felt so ‘warm’...

But he did not know that in addition to himself, even another

bandit standing behind him had also been pierced through similarly by the spear.

... ..

His eyes filled with rage, Bai Yunfei charged into a bandit group in front of him without pausing and thrust the spear out efficiently. His fast speed was not something these ordinary bandits could react to in time so the spear pierced through the bodies of two bandits directly.

All of a sudden, he pulled the spear back, letting blood spray onto his body, then made a turn. Following his body, the spear swung out in a crimson arc, its tip sweeping across the necks of three bandits. Blood spurted and these three bandits gradually fell backwards without having any reaction.

“He’s a soul cultivator! Go up together, everybody! Go up together! Kill him!” A loud roar by Tiger Li woke the other bandits up with a start. Only when they saw their hallmaster charge at the intruder while raising his large saber did they react. Regardless of how frightened they were because the opponent was a soul cultivator, when even their hallmaster had charged up, could they possibly go into hiding? Not unless they did not want to live later.

Tiger Li was both shocked and furious inside. As he rushed out, his mind was working overtime, “Who could have thought a soul cultivator would suddenly appear and attack us? What does he want? He wants to single-handedly take on these forty something men on my side?

Though he seems a bit more powerful than myself, I’ve still got a few dozen subordinates. If we go up together, we’ll definitely be able to destroy him!”

Bai Yunfei cast a look at Tiger Li, who was rushing at him. His feet did not stop at all. After avoiding a saber coming at him from behind, he sent a man in front of him flying with a kick, knocking down several men who were charging up after this man. Then he

thrust the handle of his spear backwards fiercely. A man behind him was immediately pierced through the neck by the spear's handle then fell backwards with his eyes popping.

Holding the spear horizontally, Bai Yunfei blocked two sabers hacking at him from one side. He suddenly pushed with force, causing those two men to lean backwards, then swung the tip of the spear at them, splitting their throats!

Now Tiger Li finally arrived. He had not expected this man to be so fierce that he could kill three men in just a moment. With a loud roar, he suddenly jumped up then brought his saber down on Bai Yunfei in a hack.

It was already too late for Bai Yunfei to turn around then attack with the spear. He could only lift the spear horizontally up above his head. After blocking this saber strike head-on, he was knocked back several steps continuously by the force of the impact. When Tiger Li was about to pursue and attack Bai Yunfei, he was forced to back off by a horizontal sweep of the spear.

After forcing Tiger Li to retreat, Bai Yunfei dashed away, extending the distance between them, and attacked another group of seven or eight bandits.

Every time Tiger Li wanted to rush up, he forced him to retreat then pulled away and continued to deal with other bandits.

Bai Yunfei was like a tiger among sheep. His spear, his punches and his kicks were all lethal weapons to this bandit group. One bandit after another was knocked down to the ground, leaving fewer and fewer still standing.

When Bai Yunfei yet again pierced through the chest of a bandit with his spear, Tiger Li finally was able to grab the opportunity. With an acceleration, he rushed up to Bai Yunfei's face and swung his large saber horizontally at his waist.

Bai Yunfei planted the spear down off to one side and blocked

this strike of the saber. His eyes flashing with a hint of delight, Tiger Li took half a step forwards again, resulting in him and Bai Yunfei almost standing face to face, and raised his left hand. His arm swelled up instantly, its muscles bulging out. He then struck a fierce blow at Bai Yunfei's chest!

He was certain that because Bai Yunfei was good at using a spear, he had to be weak in close-quarters combat. At the moment, he was close to the enemy's face so his long spear was not convenient to brandish. As long as he himself utilized his violent close-quarters attacks and was assisted by the sneak attacks of the bandits around, this man would definitely die!

However, Bai Yunfei did not panic at all. He took half a step backwards with his right foot to create a little distance then did the same by lifting his right fist and striking a blow.

Crisp sounds of smashed bones rang up in Tiger Li's ears and also exploded in his heart. With his eyes full of disbelief, he flew backwards involuntarily. A huge force came at him through his right fist, then came the second force and the third force. It seemed in the blink of an eye, three layers of fist force surged up through his fist. He even felt that the bones of his left arm, starting from his fist up to his shoulder, were disintegrating bit by bit.

Overlapping Waves Art, Threefold Fist Force!

After sending the opponent flying, Bai Yunfei did not pursue and attack him immediately. His right arm was trembling slightly. Even though he had only used the first level of the Overlapping Waves Art called Threefold Fist Force, the side effect of the eruption was still somewhat unbearable to his right arm.

"I'm not proficient enough yet..."

Bai Yunfei swung his right arm a bit and channeled soulforce into it, allowing it to recover very quickly. He then raised his eyes, looking at those bandits in the surroundings, who with frightened expressions had all stopped attacking because their hallmaster had

been sent flying.

Not only those bandits, at the moment, even Tiger Li was also staring at Bai Yunfei in disbelief, his left arm shaking unnaturally. Seeing that Bai Yunfei did not pursue and attack him right away, he let out a sigh of relief, but his eyes were still filled with a deep fear.

“Go up together!! Go...”

The words he was about to say got stuck in Tiger Li's throat because now he had discovered with fright that there were already only a few bandits still standing around.

At Bai Yunfei's feet, over thirty bandits were lying in disorder and none of them could struggle up again!

This shout from Tiger Li also woke up the several surviving bandits with a start. But instead of rushing up to fight the enemy as their hallmaster had told them, they started fleeing desperately.

They were no fool! This was an enemy who had eliminated over thirty men on their side with ease and who even a soul cultivator like hallmaster Li was no match for!

But when they had run away just a few steps, they were so frightened by two miserable cries coming from the distance that they stopped moving again.

It turned out two men had reacted a step ahead of them and had already run away several dozen meters, being about to disappear into a grove on one side. However, these men's hearts had been penetrated by two daggers shot at them from up ahead all of a sudden. They fell down with astounded expressions.

Li Chengfeng slowly walked out from the forest, pulled the daggers out of the two corpses then walked towards the remaining four or five bandits step by step. He gave Bai Yunfei in the distance a look, saying in a deep voice: “Leave the rest to me...”

The last four bandits had originally also wanted to run into the

forest then flee for their lives. But now, seeing Li Chengfeng kill the two comrades who had fled one step ahead of them as soon as he had appeared and seeing him walking towards them with a furious look in his eyes, they were extremely frightened. With a fearful cry, they immediately ran away in all directions.

One of them fled in a random path which happened to lead to Bai Yunfei. When he noticed this, it was already too late. Bai Yunfei sent him flying backwards with a kick. Li Chengfeng then chased up and slit his throat with a sweep.

Without stopping, he chased after the other three runaway bandits one by one, killing them all.

He then returned to Bai Yunfei's side and began to check out the bandits knocked down by Bai Yunfei earlier to finish off those who were still alive with his daggers. Seeing this, Tiger Li had an even more unsightly expression.

He had never expected the enemy to have a companion. Moreover, this was also a soul cultivator! Seeing their ruthless manner, Tiger Li abandoned the idea of begging for mercy. His eyes glittering, he was trying to think of a way to escape.

Suddenly, his eyes flashed with a hint of delight. He glanced out of the corners of his eyes at the three young women who were embracing each other at a place two meters away on his left-hand side. They were covering their mouths tightly, their eyes full of terror and their bodies shivering.

A miserable cry suddenly rang out. Li Chengfeng had just discovered a bandit lying on the ground playing possum and finished him off mercilessly with a dagger blow.

However, the moment the cry was heard, Tiger Li's eyes flashed with fierceness. He loosened his right hand, unexpectedly discarding his own weapon, then suddenly dashed to the left. At the same time, he reached out his right hand and made a grab at one of those young women!



He had guessed that these two men were probably trying to rescue these women, therefore he wanted to take a hostage to find a chance to survive.

## Chapter 17: Declare War on the Blackwood Stronghold!

---

However, Bai Yunfei and Li Chengfeng had come here to save these women, how could they possibly let him succeed like this?

A blue light cut across in front of Tiger Li. Afterwards, his right arm dropped down, powerless. A cold feeling began to spread out from his left arm. He was not even in any pain and only felt cold almost to the point of going numb. He halted his steps and looked in stupefaction at a round hole in his elbow. There was a blank expression in his eyes.

Since sending Tiger Li flying with a punch earlier, Bai Yunfei had been paying attention to his every move. He had noticed those several young women on one side earlier and had been worried that if he rushed up and fought the enemy, they would very likely be injured, therefore he had not acted rashly all along. He put his right hand behind his back without a sound. With a shake of his hand, the Glacial Pricker appeared in his hand.

The moment Tiger Li's body moved, Bai Yunfei flicked his right hand like lightning. As soon as the enemy reached out his arm, the Glacial Pricker came like a flash and pierced through it.

After throwing the Glacial Pricker out, Bai Yunfei immediately rushed up after it. Giving Tiger Li basically no time to react, he hit him in the stomach with a full-power kick, sending him flying directly up into the air at an angle!

Bai Yunfei did not pause at all. He gave chase urgently. When he had run over ten meters, he suddenly thrust the spear in his hand out, piercing it into the chest of Tiger Li, who was about to fall to the ground.

“Bang!!”

Tiger Li's entire body was suspended in midair. Various beams of

red light shone out from inside his body. An explosion suddenly rang out and blood was scattered all over a small area like a rain, mixed with various bone and flesh fragments.

His body had been shattered!

... ..

After watching the group of women who were yet to recover from their fright disappear in the direction of the village while assisting each other, Li Chengfeng turned to Bai Yunfei, asking: “Yunfei, what are we going to do next? We can reach the foot of Mt. Blackwood going east for another half day. Must we get there quickly?”

Bai Yunfei cast a look at the corpses all over the ground. After contemplating with his head lowered for a long time, he said with a shake of his head: “No, we’re going to wait here, staying by a stump waiting for more hares! We’ve already killed two hallmasters of the Blackwood Stronghold. If I guess correctly, we can still wait for another one...”

Even though Li Chengfeng did not understand what ‘staying by a stump waiting for more hares’ meant, he knew that Bai Yunfei wanted to wait here for more bandits to come again then exterminate them in an ambush.

“Alright, I’ll do what you say. But next time, if there’s really a hallmaster, let me have a fight with him first. I feel that I’m already about to reach the mid-stage Soul Apprentice level. If I can gain some understanding of soulforce during combat, I should be able to have a breakthrough very quickly. If at that time I’m really no match for him, you can intervene to help me.”

Bai Yunfei was stupefied with a rather happy expression on his face: “Oh? You’re about to have a breakthrough so soon? Good, then after you reach the mid-stage Soul Apprentice level, we’ll kill our way up the Blackwood Stronghold!”

... ..

Tu Dazhuang, one of the four hallmasters of the Blackwood Stronghold, was nicknamed 'Butcher' because his weapons were relatively special. They were unexpectedly a pair of butcher knives. Someone who did not know about him would really think that he was a butcher.

At the moment, he was leading twelve henchmen galloping on a mountain path.

"That damned Tiger Li, he even secretly took his men and went down from the mountain without Chieftain's knowledge. Though he got Vice-Chieftain's permission, he still hasn't returned for a day and night. What's really happened? Could it be something has really happened?" Tu Dazhuang was thinking with a somewhat impatient expression while riding a horse, his face ugly and ferocious and full of whiskers.

"Hallmaster, there seems to be someone in that vacant area up ahead... They are our stronghold's men!"

Hearing this, Tu Dazhuang raised his head to take a look. Indeed, there seemed to be many people lying in disorder in a vacant area not far up ahead. Even though he could not see the situation clearly, he could tell that they were none other than bandits from the Blackwood Stronghold.

"Oh? Could it be this whole bunch of bastards got drunk and have been sleeping ever since? Impossible! Quickly go take a look!" Tu Dazhuang gave an order. His group of mounted men sped up and rushed into the vacant area.

When they just approached those men who were lying on the ground, a bloody stench rushed into their noses. Tu Dazhuang's expression immediately changed. When they came near them, they suddenly discovered that there were corpses all over the ground.

Moreover, these corpses had obviously been manipulated by

someone to make it impossible to see clearly from afar that they were already dead...

“This is bad! It’s an ambush! Everybody prep...”

It seemed all bandits’ warnings just could not be finished, or perhaps Bai Yunfei never gave them a chance to finish what they were saying. The moment Tu Dazhuang uttered a word of warning, two silhouettes suddenly jumped out from within the pile of corpses and rushed straight at the bandits not far in front of them.

Bai Yunfei fought without any suspense. The ordinary bandits were handled by him easily.

The battle between Li Chengfeng and Tu Dazhuang, however, was rather long. In fact, Li Chengfeng was a bit weaker than his opponent, but after ending his fight, Bai Yunfei had been watching their fight on one side while holding his spear, making it impossible for Tu Dazhuang to focus his mind on fighting.

Tu Dazhuang felt like his hands and feet were bound, but Li Chengfeng were fighting to his heart’s content. His two daggers flew up and down, causing one wound after another on the opponent’s body. Of course, there were quite a few wounds on his body too, but he had an advantage over his opponent, namely, he was wearing an upgraded soft armor on his body.

As they kept fighting each other, Li Chengfeng’s speed and strength suddenly unexpectedly improved quite a lot. Bai Yunfei was happy inside: “I didn’t think he’d make a breakthrough to reach the mid-stage Soul Apprentice level right in the middle of a fight!”

When one was rising, the other was falling. Tu Dazhuang was gradually put at a disadvantage. Eventually, relying on the additional effects of the two daggers, Li Chengfeng made him bleed to death!

When the fighting had finished, Bai Yunfei lifted an unconscious bandit up and threw him to one side—this was the only bandit he had not killed. Then he took out a bottle of medicine and gave it to Li Chengfeng, saying: “Let’s rest for a while. After that, we’ll learn about some circumstances of the Blackwood Stronghold...”

... ..

In a spacious hall in the Blackwood Stronghold, a middle-aged man who looked gentle and cultivated was sitting in the head position. He was none other than the chieftain of the Blackwood Stronghold, Han Xiao. In the first subordinate chair on the left, there was a burly man with a yellow face. This was the vice-chieftain Yang Tian. Next after him was an ordinary-looking middle-aged man. He was the only remaining of the four hallmasters in the stronghold, Xiao Chen.

At the moment, these men were all listening with solemn expressions to the report of a bandit in the hall.

“Pa!”

Han Xiao’s expression became more and more unsightly. Eventually, he could not help smashing an armrest of the chair he was sitting in with a smack of his palm and roaring exasperatedly: “Who can tell me what’s going on?! Tiger Li went down from the mountain without permission and hasn’t returned. Butcher was sent to look for him but hasn’t been heard from ever since either. Even the several batches of men sent afterwards to probe into the situation have all gone missing in action... What’s happened?! Could it be there are fierce floods and savage beasts at the foot of the mountain? They have all gone missing without a trace. Does someone want to target our Blackwood Stronghold?!”

Han Xiao’s elegant-looking face was now somewhat ferocious. When his eyes swept over that man who was reporting, he immediately felt like he had fallen into an ice cellar. He sat on the floor with a dreadfully pale face, his entire body trembling:

“Chief... Chieftain, I, I don’t know either...”

“Don’t be agitated, Chieftain. If there’s really a strong enemy outside, then we must not lose our presence of mind.” That rude-looking vice-chieftain Yang Tian was unexpectedly rather calm at the moment. After stopping Han Xiao from getting mad, he continued: “The current situation is unclear, so we must not throw ourselves into disarray and let the enemy take advantage of this.”

“Do you have any opinions?” Han Xiao asked after calming down a bit.

“Hallmaster Li and hallmaster Tu haven’t returned. I think it’s most likely they have already met with accidents. They are late-stage Soul Apprentices and have several dozen subordinates, but none of them has returned. My guess is that the enemy are very likely soul cultivators too, and not weak ones at that. The most important thing is, they have very likely come here to specifically target our Blackwood Stronghold!”

“But, the big powers in the several cities nearby all know that our Blackwood Stronghold is backed by our school. Even the local authorities turn a blind eye to us. Who would want to target us?”

“The enemy have eliminated all the men we’ve sent to probe, naturally because they don’t want us to know their identities, and also because they want to put us under a mental strain. I feel that we’d better not send anyone down from the mountain again. Let’s strengthen the defense on the mountain and see if we can lure the enemy into going up the mountain. But...”

“But what?” Han Xiao asked doubtfully on seeing his somewhat unsightly expression.

“Hallmaster Zhong escorted the tributes back into the school. He should have already returned to the stronghold. But now I’m afraid...”

“What?!” Han Xiao was so shocked that he stood up all of a

sudden, stared at Yang Tian and asked: “You mean, even hallmaster Zhong has also fallen victim to the enemy?”

After seeing Yang Tian nod, Han Xiao sat back down in a somewhat dejected manner and waved his hand to everybody, saying: “All of you can leave. Just do as Vice-Chieftain said. Strengthen the defense on the mountain and report immediately if there’s an infiltrator!”

... ..

At a secret place in the forest at the foot of Mt. Blackwood, from here, it was possible to see the only road leading up the mountain.

After practicing spear techniques, Bai Yunfei was leaning on a tree resting. Li Chengfeng looked at him and asked somewhat doubtfully: “Yunfei, those bandits haven’t made a move for three days already. Are we going to keep watching at the foot of the mountain like this? Though we have brought quite a lot of food with us, it’s nothing compared to those bandits’, right? What are we going to do if they don’t come down from the mountain for a month or two?”

Bai Yunfei took out his bag of water, drank a gulp and said smilingly: “Don’t worry. It’s those bandits who should worry. We already learned a bit about the situation on the mountain. Of the soul cultivators on the mountain at the moment, that late-stage Soul Personage vice-chieftain alone is enough to draw both of us into an arduous struggle, not to mention that mid-stage Soul Warrior chieftain. There’s also a late-stage Soul Apprentice hallmaster. If we charge up rashly, it’s very likely we’ll put ourselves in danger...”

“Are these bits of information we extorted useful? What if we have been deceived?” Li Chengfeng asked somewhat doubtfully.

“We can’t trust them completely, but they’re not totally useless. At least we know roughly the power of the bandits on the mountain, the general terrain and some secret spots to keep watch.



Looks like they won't come down from the mountain of their own accord. Then, tonight let's go for a walk on the mountain."

Late at night, a soundly sleeping Han Xiao was suddenly woken up with a start by a clamor. He quickly stood up with vigilance. When he had just put on his clothes, knocks on the door rang out. A bandit reported outside the door: "Chieftain, someone has gone up the mountain secretly! Hallmaster Xiao has already rushed to the site of the incident!"

When Han Xiao arrived at the hall of the stronghold, vice-chieftain Yang Tian happened to arrive at the same time as him. After seeing Han Xiao, Yang Tian said with a somewhat anxious expression: "Chieftain, let's hurry over there. That boor Xiao Chen unexpectedly didn't wait for our arrangements and has gone there without permission. Now we can only hope that he can stall the intruder until we arrive..."

Bringing along a group of bandits, the two of them immediately rushed out of the stronghold. Before they saw the site of the fight, they already vaguely heard a roar of war cries and continuous miserable yells.

There was only a road leading up Mt. Blackwood, and it was narrow at the bottom and wide at the top. At the moment, there was a group of over a hundred bandits at a narrow junction, but most of them were crowded at the back. There were only a few dozen bandits really fighting at the forefront.

Li Chengfeng was dashing back and forth like a fast and nimble hunting leopard. The daggers in his hands seemed to draw blood every time he struck a blow. Almost all the bandits he came near were killed by him.

Not far behind him, holding the Fire-tipped Spear, Bai Yunfei was fighting a man who also used a spear. The man who was fighting him was none other than Xiao Chen.

Bai Yunfei was even more powerful than Xiao Chen, but his spear

techniques were obviously not as skillful as the opponent's. Therefore, as he held back on purpose, the two of them were also locked in a close fight.

After piercing his spear through a bandit who wanted to sneakily attack him, Bai Yunfei crouched down, avoiding a horizontal sweep of Xiao Chen's spear. At the same time, he forced the opponent to retreat several steps with a horizontal sweep. Raising his head looking towards the top of the mountain, he could vaguely see a large group of bandits coming in flocks.

Bai Yunfei struck several blows at Xiao Chen continuously with his spear then grabbed up a bandit who wanted to sneakily attack him and threw him towards the opponent. He turned to Li Chengfeng and shouted: "It's about time. Prepare to retreat!" At the same time, he turned around, ready to run away.

"Want to flee? It won't be that easy!" Having smacked that man away, Xiao Chen shouted loudly as soon as he heard that Bai Yunfei wanted to withdraw. He thrust his spear at Bai Yunfei's back.

But he did not know that the moment Bai Yunfei turned around, a faint smile appeared on the corners of his mouth!

Using that one step he had taken as the axis, he turned around abruptly. The Fire-tipped Spear in his hand was swung in a crimson arc, deflecting the incoming spear off to one side.

The huge force coming through the body of the spear frightened Xiao Chen. Then his face was full of shock—all along, the opponent unexpectedly had not gone all out! Just when he wanted to back off, Bai Yunfei pushed his feet against the ground and rushed straight up to his face instead of pulling the spear back and attacking with it.

Under the opponent's terrified look, Bai Yunfei lifted his right fist and struck a devastating blow at his totally defenseless chest.

Overlapping Waves Art, Threefold Fist Force!

The spear slipped off Xiao Chen's hand. An area on his chest curved inwards in a strange manner and he was sent flying on his back while vomiting blood.

Having practiced the Threefold Fist Force for the last several days, now Bai Yunfei did not need buffer time anymore after he used it. He shook his spear, thrusting it repeatedly at the opponent's body, which was still in midair after being sent flying.

Various bloody holes appeared on Xiao Chen's body, but he had no reaction. Obviously he was already dead, but Bai Yunfei did not stop at all. When he thrust the spear out for the sixth time, his eyes glittered and he shouted fiercely: "Burst!"

"Bang!!"

Under the gaze of a whole group of dumbstruck bandits, Xiao Chen's body exploded into pieces in the blink of an eye. A rain of blood then fell down over a small area, wetting the heads and faces of all the bandits.

This was the first scene Han Xiao and Yang Tian saw upon arriving at the site of the battle.

Bai Yunfei cast a look at the large group of bandits who had just appeared in his field of vision in the distance then turned around without hesitation. He and Li Chengfeng disappeared together on the path at the foot of the mountain. Not a single bandit dared to go to pursue and attack them.

From the foot of the mountain, distant, resounding words then came into the ears of all the bandits who had just arrived on the mountain.

"Three days from now, we'll destroy the Blackwood Stronghold! Anyone who will still be on the mountain will be... killed!"

## Chapter 18: Bai Yunfei's Plan

---

In the hall of the stronghold, Han Xiao was sitting in a chair with a solemn expression. Under the illumination of the lights in the hall, his face looked somewhat ferocious and terrifying. A group of bandits guarding outside the entrance hall all held their breath for fear that they would annoy their chieftain and become a target for him to vent his anger on.

This battle tonight had resulted in the death of the only remaining hallmaster and ordinary bandit casualties of nearly one hundred! However, when Han Xiao had arrived, he could not even see clearly what the enemy looked like.

“Damn it! Damn it! Who are they actually?! That man who killed Xiao Chen, the spear in his hands is definitely a soul armament! And not low-level at that! High human-tier... or is it an earth-tier soul item? Destroying my Blackwood Stronghold in three days from now?... Such insolence!” In his fury, Han Xiao smacked his palm down and the newly changed chair under him was gloriously relieved of its duties once again.

Soul armaments were powerful items that were usually made from the core of soulbeasts or special materials that'd otherwise contain the natural elements.

Soul armaments were usually divided in between three tiers. Human, earth, and heaven. These three tiers were then divided into three more categorizations, low, middle, and high. Even Low-human tier soul armaments were considered to be god-like in the eyes of the common people. Despite being the chieftain of the Blackwood Stronghold, Han Xiao had only one low-human tier soul armament called the 'Goldsilk Soul Armor' as a reward to him from his school. Even now, Han Xiao couldn't even possible imagine the grade of the crimson spear used by the killer of Xiao Chen.

Though an unsightly expression was still on the vice-chieftain, Yang Tian's face, he was much calmer now. Only after Han Xiao's fury had subsided somewhat did he say: "Chieftain, please calm down quickly. I'd like to repeat myself: We must not throw ourselves into disarray, otherwise we'll fall for the enemy's trickery..."

"Oh? What are your opinions?" Han Xiao knew that he was indeed less resourceful than this vice-chieftain. There had been many times when Yang Tian had played the role of counselor in the stronghold.

"Firstly, I can confirm one thing, that is, the enemy are definitely not very strong, or else they would have already gone up and attacked us directly. I guess it's very likely they don't have someone more powerful than a Soul Warrior among them.

"Besides, the intention of the two men on the mountain tonight was very obvious too. It was a scare tactic! Not us, they wanted to frighten those ordinary people under us. To these people, soul cultivators are extremely powerful beings. Seeing with their own eyes a normally lofty hallmaster killed like that was an unexpected shock to them. Plus, that man said those words in the end. I think... within the next several days, there will most probably be some unforeseen events happening in the stronghold."

"You mean... some will flee from the stronghold?"

"Very likely."

"Are they stupid? Those men are waiting at the foot of the mountain. How can they come out without getting killed?"

"If they think that they'll definitely die by staying here, some will be willing to give it a try. After all, what that man said in the end was 'anyone who stays on the mountain will die', in other words, 'anyone who leaves the stronghold can live'. This should be what they think..."

“Humph! If someone dares to defect from the stronghold, we won’t need to wait for the enemy to go up the mountain, ‘cause I will snap his neck before that!”

“The ‘execute one to warn a hundred’ method is best used when only a small part have made up their minds to run away and the majority are still hesitating about whether to run away or not. For the next several days, let’s tell our trusted men to pay more attention to what those subordinates will do...” Yang Tian’s expression was rather frustrated. This plan of the enemy was really too wicked. They had yet to officially go up the mountain to attack, but they had already caused disunity in the stronghold.

“That man said they will definitely destroy the stronghold in three days from now. Can we believe his words?” Han Xiao asked in a hurry after remembering a problem.

“Of course we can’t. It’s just a ploy to unnerve us. But... we can’t rule out the possibility of it being a ploy within a ploy. They may kill their way up the mountain in three days from now... But if we only pay attention to this ‘three days from now’ deadline, it’s very likely they’ll launch a sneak attack on us before that. Alas... It’s very obvious the enemy have achieved their goal! Now, because we can be attacked anytime, we have no choice but to be concerned and vigilant all day long.”

“Then what should we do?” Hearing him say so, Han Xiao was also somewhat flustered inside.

“There’s no other way. We can’t take our men and rush down from the mountain because they most probably are already waiting for us in ambush. So, we have no choice but to strengthen the defense on the mountain and be ready to fight the enemy anytime...”

“Damn it! When has our Blackwood Stronghold ever been so useless?... You also said they very likely don’t have someone as strong as a Soul Warrior. Why don’t I just personally take

everyone in the stronghold and rush down from the mountain? It doesn't matter if there's an ambush or not, I'll just destroy them with my sheer power!"

"You absolutely can't do that! If you're a bit careless, the Blackwood Stronghold will really be exterminated. Plus... have you forgotten the soul armament that man used to kill Xiao Chen? That spear is definitely not low-grade. To soul cultivators below the Soul Sprite stage, killing someone of a higher level with a powerful soul armament is not difficult at all. Are you sure that low-human tier Goldsilk Soul Armor of yours can withstand that spear's blade?"

Han Xiao fell silent. The Goldsilk Soul Armor granted to him by the school naturally was impenetrable to normal weapons, but as soon as he thought about how Xiao Chen had been shattered into pieces by that spear, he felt a chill in his heart. He... did not dare to gamble!

"Then just do as you said. At least tonight they won't make another move, right? All of you can go now..."

Dejected, Han Xiao stood up and walked out of the wall for his own room. From afar, an nearly inaudible sigh could be heard from him.

"Could it be... my Blackwood Stronghold will be destroyed in such a baffling manner...?"

... ..

At the foot of Mt. Blackwood, Bai Yunfei and Li Chengfeng were sitting in a grove treating the wounds on their bodies.

"This battle was really satisfying! Those inhuman bandits who normally looked at us like we were ants they could kill whenever they like were killed by me with ease stroke after stroke... If I had possessed this power earlier, if I had possessed this power earlier... My dad, my mom, my older sister, also Uncle Zhou next door,

village chief Uncle Li and everybody else...” Li Chengfeng mumbled to himself while leaning on a tree looking into the sky through the gaps between the leaves, “Now that I have the power, I’m going to... exterminate all bandits! Kill them all...”

“Are you okay, Chengfeng? You...” Bai Yunfei, who was on one side of him, could not help calling him upon seeing him become more and more unusual as he talked.

Li Chengfeng stopped talking to himself, massaged his head a bit then smiled at Bai Yunfei, saying: “I know what you’re are worrying about, but rest assured, I won’t lose myself. Those bandits all deserve to die. I’m just taking revenge for myself and those who died. There’s no other goal. I won’t become a murderous demon...”

Bai Yunfei let out a sigh of relief, saying: “Yeah, they all deserve to die. If we let them go, they will make even more innocent people suffer to the fullest. When I first encountered them, I wasn’t so determined as you were, but now... we’ll definitely destroy them completely!”

“Right, aren’t you about to reach the mid-stage Soul Personage level? That spear-wielding bandit who fought you before was much weaker than you, why did you fight him for so long? Only to wait for that chieftain’s arrival to strike fear into him?” Li Chengfeng could not help asking doubtfully upon recalling the last battle.

“That’s one thing. The most important thing is, didn’t you say he was also a spear user? Though I practiced my spear techniques to a decent level, I had too little real combat experience. A spear user like him was hard to come by so naturally I had to fight him for as long as possible to learn from him.”

“Oh... I really can’t understand you. You still call yourself weak? The power of your Fire-tipped Spear is enough to make up for the deficiencies in your techniques, right?”



“That’s only true when dealing with the enemies we’ve encountered so far. In the world of soul cultivators, we are still very, very weak...” As he said, Bai Yunfei could not help thinking about that casual look Zhang Yang’s father Zhang Zhenshan had given him. The Soul Sprite stage was a height he simply could not reach at the moment, let alone the stage of the mysterious old man who had given him the space ring.

“Right, what did you mean when shouting those words in the end? Are we going to attack the stronghold in three days from now?”

“Of course not. I just fooled them...”

“... ..”

“Ha ha, it’s just a little ploy to make it even more convenient for us to get into action later.” Bai Yunfei continued laughingly while looking up the mountain. “If I guess correctly, in two days from now, some bandits will probably go down from the mountain to run away. Regardless of whether that chieftain will take any suppression measure to stop this, it won’t be a disadvantage to us.”

“Then... if some really run away from the mountain, will we let them go?”

“What? You’re willing to let them go?”

“Of course not! These inhuman scoundrels, if we let any of them go, they will become a scourge.”

“Then that’s the end of it. If someone really goes down from the mountain, we’ll kill him.”

“... ..”

“Alright, let’s take turns to rest. In the next several days, we’ll have to intensify our training. Both you and I have fast practice speeds. I believe it won’t take long for me to break through to become a mid-stage Soul Personage and for you to reach the late-stage Soul Apprentice level as well. By then, the time will be ripe,

and we'll destroy this bandit den in one fell stroke!"

## Chapter 19: The Time is Ripe, Infiltrate the Stronghold!

---

Within the next three days, some bandits indeed could not endure the fear in their hearts anymore and wanted to secretly flee down the mountain. They were basically the bandits who had witnessed with their own eyes the fight between Bai Yunfei and Xiao Chen.

When the first twelve men took advantage of the night to stealthily go out of the stronghold, they were detected, captured and brought back. Han Xiao immediately gave an order to kill them all for betraying the stronghold.

This ruthless act really deterred some bandits who had been scared out of their wits by Bai Yunfei from fleeing, but the panic in the entire stronghold had not lessened one bit. Instead, because it had been building up for several days, it was more intense now than ever.

The day after the third day was Bai Yunfei's 'appointment day'. Almost all the bandits in the stronghold had not slept for a night. Now, even when they walked, they looked around a few times at every step for fear that the enemy would storm the place suddenly and execute them.

But... Bai Yunfei failed to keep the appointment.

After a day of being on the alert and combat-ready, everybody realized that this was just the enemy deliberately making things look mysterious. They could not help letting out sighs of relief. However, on the fifth day, when they had yet to loosen up completely, Bai Yunfei and Li Chengfeng killed their way up Mt. Blackwood again!

They raided two patrolling groups of bandits then immediately fled when they saw the chieftain and vice-chieftain appear!

For the next three days, the bandits in the Blackwood Stronghold simply had to live in deep distress because the enemy could charge up the mountain at any time, and instead of attacking the stronghold, they would kill the ones on patrol near the foot of the mountain then withdraw. The chieftain and vice-chieftain once waited with their men for an entire day at the entrance but nothing happened at all. As soon as they returned to the stronghold, the enemy came out again...

Unexpectedly, when Han Xiao and Yang Tian regained their composure, there were already fewer than two hundred men left in the stronghold.

In the hall of the stronghold, Yang Tian looked at the pieces of the tables and chairs destroyed by Han Xiao in his anger all over the floor then said slowly: "Chieftain, if this goes on, we simply can only wait for our deaths. I think the two of us must take a risk and scout around..."

"Oh? What do you mean?" Han Xiao asked after suppressing the fury in his mind.

"Clearly the enemy are certain that we don't dare to come down from the mountain to counterattack so they use this 'cut flesh with a blunt knife' kind of tactic. In the end, when our stronghold has seriously weakened and lost most of its fighting power, they will go up the mountain to attack again, destroying our Blackwood Stronghold at one stroke. At this point, if we take our subordinates and rush down, we'll most probably fall into the enemy's trap. So, I think only you and I should go down from the mountain to scout around."

Yang Tian paused for a while then continued: "Given our skills, even if the enemy has set up an ambush, we can still get away as long as we're cautious. At least, we'll be able to learn a bit about the general situation of the enemy to decide how to fight them later."

Han Xiao's mind was already in complete chaos at the moment. He thought for a while then said with a nod: "Alright! Just do as you say. So when do we start?"

Yang Tian observed the color of the sky and said: "It's already night now. We'll go down from the mountain to scout at about 3 a.m.!"

When Yang Tian walked out of the hall, he looked somewhat frustrated and worried. In fact, he basically did not want to go down from the mountain to scout. He had said that they could get away if they were a bit cautious only to console his chieftain, otherwise, he would have taken this measure right from the beginning. But now, he had no choice but to do this. However, as soon as he thought about that crimson spear, he could not help shivering inside, wondering if he himself could ward it off in an ambush...

... ..

At the foot of the mountain, Bai Yunfei and Li Chengfeng were slowly heading up the mountain in secret under the cover of the night.

"Following the plan, tonight we're destroying this Blackwood Stronghold once and for all!"

After practicing for the last several days, Bai Yunfei and Li Chengfeng had already become a mid-stage Soul Personage stage and a late-stage Soul Apprentice respectively. Therefore, according to their original plan, they had a detailed discussion and decided to launch a full-scale attack on the stronghold tonight.

Of course, killing their way up the path was out of the question. Even though Bai Yunfei was now powerful enough to deal with the vice-chieftain, if the mid-stage Soul Warrior chieftain were to join the fight, he'd have trouble emerging victorious; even if he and Li Chengfeng teamed up. There was also the fact that there were still more than a hundred ordinary bandits left to fight.

Therefore, they finally decided that Bai Yunfei would infiltrate into the stronghold first and find an opportunity to kill the vice-chieftain. If he succeeded, tonight they would definitely be able to destroy the Blackwood Stronghold completely!

Thanks to the sneak attack tactic they had been using for the last several days, they were rather familiar with the entrance area. Add to that the intelligence they had extorted earlier, and Bai Yunfei already had a general idea of the situation on the entire Mt. Blackwood.

Now the patrol intensity of those bandits was obviously much weaker than before. This coupled with his nimbleness and stealth allowed Bai Yunfei to infiltrate into the stronghold without being detected by anybody.

Although he already had a layout of the stronghold's interior in his mind, upon really entering it, he felt that this stronghold was rather large. He had to carefully avoid the bandits who were patrolling back and forth too, so after going for a while, he felt somewhat confused and disoriented.

Now he had no choice but to plan to capture a bandit and extract the location of the vice-chieftain's dwelling place from him.

When he arrived at the side of a room, some food smells came out from inside. Apparently this was the kitchen. Moreover, there were vague sounds of movements inside.

"It's already night now. Most of the bandits are resting. Could it be someone got hungry and ran over here to find something to eat? This is just right. I choose you!"

After looking around, Bai Yunfei carefully pushed open that unlatched door. He rushed in like a flash then dashed up to the back of the person in the room and covered the target's mouth with his left hand. When he lifted his right hand, the Glacial Pricker had already appeared in his hand. He put it on that person's neck and shouted in a low voice: "Don't make a sound! Or

I'll kill you right away!"

Captured all of a sudden, that person let out muffled shouts instinctively. However, after hearing his words, they stopped doing this at once obediently, but they could not stop their body from trembling all over.

"Oh?" Only thanks to the dim moonlight outside the window did Bai Yunfei see clearly that the target was unexpectedly a woman!

Could it be this was a female bandit?

Bai Yunfei was doubtful for a short while, but then he said threateningly: "I'll let go of you now. Don't shout! Or I'll kill you just like I killed other bandits!"

That woman was trembling nonstop in fear, but after hearing these words, she was stupefied for a while then unexpectedly relaxed. Without struggling, she nodded slightly.

Bai Yunfei slowly loosened the hand which was covering her mouth, but the Glacial Pricker still had yet to move away from her neck. If she dared to shout for help, he would kill her instantly.

That woman slightly gasped for air then said in a low voice: "You... You are the person who wants to destroy the stronghold? You... You have come to rescue us?"

"Oh?" Bai Yunfei was stupefied. What did she mean? Seeing that this woman did not want to shout for help, he put the pricker down a bit then took half a step backwards. Only now did he see clearly the woman in front of him.

This was an ordinary middle-aged woman dressed in somewhat shabby clothes. She was looking at Bai Yunfei with an expression full of hope. No matter how he looked at her, she resembled a virtuous woman in a common village instead of a bandit.

"You're not a bandit? Who are you?" Bai Yunfei asked in a low voice.

“I... I came from Cheng village a hundred kilometers to the west side of Mt. Blackwood. A year ago, the bandits captured me and brought me up into the stronghold to do the washing and cooking for them. Besides myself, there are still many people locked up in this stronghold. It’s still tolerable for old people like me because we’re only in charge of the rough work and the food. But... those young women, not only are they forced to work, they are also tortured... I beg of you, please save them!” The middle-aged woman implored in a low voice as if she was clutching at the only life-saving straw.

Unexpectedly, there were still many abducted women in this stronghold!



## Chapter 20: Kill the Vice-chieftain!

---

Bai Yunfei's expression changed repeatedly. He hadn't expected the existence of these people in the stronghold.

However, he didn't find this strange either. There were several hundred bandits in the entire stronghold. Those vicious bandits couldn't always wash their own clothes and cook their own meals, therefore it wasn't unusual to see abducted women in the stronghold. He had only overlooked the problem the entire time.

Now that he thought about it, this was most likely the reason why the bandits he encountered last time had bothered to kidnap those women after raiding the village.

Bai Yunfei estimated the time for a while and said: "Don't worry. Since I already know, I'll definitely rescue all of you. Now, take me to the place where they are locked up first. I need to learn a bit about the situation."

Guided by the middle-aged woman, Bai Yunfei arrived at a shabby building that looked like a prison cell. Unexpectedly, there were no guards at the entrance, and the door seemed to be unlocked too.

Even before getting close to it, Bai Yunfei heard lewd laughs of a good several men and sounds of women pleading coming from inside.

His expression changed, but the middle-aged woman seemed to be used to this, distress showing up in her eyes: "They've come again. Recently these bandits have been living in fear all day long. There's nowhere for them to go to vent their frustration so they have tortured them twice as much as before..."

"Was it... because of me? Because I put these bandits under pressure, they have tortured them twice as much?" Bai Yunfei went into a trance for a moment. There was an indescribable

feeling in his heart.

Suddenly he raised his head and his body turned into a blur, rushing into the room.

The moment he entered the room, he saw clearly the situation inside. The chamber was divided into five identical prison cells. In each cell, there were nearly ten women in a corner of the walls, huddling together while trembling.

In the cell nearest Bai Yunfei, six bandits with repulsive naked bodies were gathering around several young women and tearing at their already tattered clothes.

With their backs facing the door, the bandits simply did not notice that someone else had come in. Bai Yunfei's expression was somewhat distorted, his fury seemingly rushing out of his eyes. In the blink of an eye, he charged up to the back of a bandit and thrust the Glacial Pricker in his hand into that man's heart without hesitation!

To avoid horrifying the women at the scene, Bai Yunfei did not kill the six bandits in an overly bloody way. They all died from a stab to the heart in almost the blink of an eye.

The women seemed to be scared out of their wits by this sudden event. They all looked at Bai Yunfei in stupefaction with dropped jaws.

Right at this moment, that middle-aged woman also walked in. Seeing Bai Yunfei throwing the six bandit corpses into a pile like throwing trash, she trembled slightly, but she reacted very fast by hurriedly walking up to Bai Yunfei's side and saying in a low voice to those women: "Don't make a sound, everybody! Don't be afraid! This person has come to rescue us!"

She seemed to be influential among these women. At least what she had said made them loosen up. After understanding the situation, they even began to discuss with each other in low voices

somewhat excitedly while often glancing stealthily at Bai Yunfei with expressions containing traces of hope and fear.

Ten minutes later, having changed into the clothes of a bandit, Bai Yunfei walked to the door and said to the middle-aged woman: "All of you just wait in here and shut the door tightly. Unless I come back, don't open it, no matter what. Do you understand?"

He observed the position of the moon then estimated the time once again. Hiding his body in the shadows of the houses, he quickly headed for the courtyard house where that vice-chieftain lived as informed by the middle-aged woman.

... ..

Yang Tian was sitting with legs crossed on his bed channeling his soulforce, adjusting his condition in preparation for the probe tonight. But he always felt somewhat uneasy and could not focus on practicing. Instead, he grew more and more restless.

All of a sudden, bursts of clamor came into the room, vaguely containing wave after wave of war cries.

"Vice-Chieftain! This is bad! The enemy have gone up to attack again!" An urgent shout rang out outside the door. Yang Tian was frightened inside. He immediately grabbed up the large saber beside him and quickly walked out of the room.

When he knocked open the door, the man who had just reported was standing on one side with his head lowered. Yang Tian did not care about him either. He immediately turned to go towards the hall of the stronghold, at the same time giving an order: "Tell everybody to prepare for battle! Chieftain and..."

Before he could finish what he was saying, he suddenly felt a chill on his back, his hair standing up on end. A fear of death rushed into his mind. Having no time to think carefully, he turned around like lightning and lifted his large saber up to his chest.

At the same time, he threw a kick with his right foot without

thinking, knocking back the person who was attacking him from behind. After thudding several steps backwards, he felt a chill at his heart area. When he lowered his head to take a look, he was shocked to discover that a hole had been pierced through the thick body of the long saber in his hand. A hole half an inch deep had also been pierced into his chest, almost taking his life!

Taking advantage of the opportunity created by the confusion Li Chengfeng had caused when launching an attack at the foot of the mountain, Bai Yunfei had impersonated a messenger and used a sneak attack on the enemy, but unexpectedly, it had still been avoided.

Yang Tian felt bursts of coldness coming from his wound. When he raised his head again and saw that glittering blue short pricker in the opponent's hand, he shouted in shock: "Soul item! You are..."

Nobody should talk so much nonsense in a fight!

"I must finish the fight quickly! If that chieftain comes here in time, I'll be in trouble!"

Knocked back by a kick from the enemy, Bai Yunfei had a slightly disappointed expression, but he did not pause at all. With a shake of his wrist, the Glacial Pricker disappeared and the crimson Fire-tipped Spear appeared in his hand. He gave it a jerk, thrusting it straight at Yang Tian.

"A space ring? It's you!" The moment Yang Tian saw the crimson spear appear, he had an even more astounded expression. Not daring to block this thrust, he leaned to one side and avoided it with difficulty.

However, he was after all a soul cultivator with a lot of combat experience so he calmed down almost instantly. At least that was how he looked on the outside. As he dodged and warded off the spear, his mind was racing, "Somehow, he managed to infiltrate the stronghold! But he's only a mid-stage Soul Personage. Though

he has an extremely powerful soul weapon in his hands, if I can stall him until Chieftain arrives... we'll win!"

After regaining his fighting spirit, Yang Tian also gradually recovered his state and even began to counterattack. The two of them were comparable in power so they were locked in a close fight under the flashes and shadows of the weapons. A group of bandits had come here after hearing the sounds of fighting and were gathering outside the door, but they did not dare to intervene.

As the fight went on, Bai Yunfei looked more and more anxious. As time passed, his expression also seemed to become more and more unsightly. However, Yang Tian was excited inside and seemed to get bolder as the fight progressed.

His eyes flashing with determination, Bai Yunfei suddenly changed the way he fought. He unexpectedly gave up defending most of his body to begin to attack recklessly.

Yang Tian's eyes flashed. He thought that the opponent had become so impatient that he had lost his presence of mind. As he dodged, he hacked his long saber at Bai Yunfei repeatedly without hesitation.

Ding! Ding! Ding! A series of sounds of metal clashing against metal rang out. Bai Yunfei had unexpectedly deliberately resisted several blows of the saber head-on with his body. Although the +10 soft armor could not remain intact under the attack of a mid-stage Soul Personage like Yang Tian, whose some blows had broken it, it had withstood most of the damage. Several wounds had also appeared on Bai Yunfei's waist, but they were not serious at all.

Yang Tian was shocked once again. Moreover, when he hit the left side of the opponent's waist with yet another saber strike, a strange reaction force suddenly came at him. This was none other than the additional effect of the +10 soft armor -- damage reflection! Because he had not anticipated this, the long saber was

almost sent flying from his hand, and his arm was also raised outwards. Bai Yunfei seized this opportunity and thrust his spear out, its tip flickering with a red light.

Yang Tian did his utmost to dodge but the tip of the spear still pierced into his left shoulder. He only felt a scorching force spread throughout his body in the blink of an eye. His left shoulder was even in a burning pain and he could not feel his left arm altogether!

The only pity was that the explosion effect had not been triggered, otherwise this one blow alone would have been enough to kill him!

His eyes filled with a deep terror, Yang Tian wanted to retreat, but Bai Yunfei kept him entangled so he had no choice but to resist desperately.

Then there was a clamor at the door. With a glance, Yang Tian saw Han Xiao coming in a rush and had a pleasantly surprised expression. Clenching his teeth, he struck a fierce blow with the saber, forcing Bai Yunfei back half a step, then jumped off to one side with all his might, pulling away from Bai Yunfei. He shouted with his mouth: "Chieftain, help me..."

The moment he jumped away, he glanced at Bai Yunfei and did not see Bai Yunfei pursue and attack him so he was delighted inside. As soon as he landed, he wanted to turn around to kill this man with the chieftain. But he saw Bai Yunfei throw something blue out of his hand like lightning with a flick.

A blue light then pierced through his chest in a flash!

# Chapter 21: The Final Fight Against a Soul Warrior and Flying Daggers!

---

Yang Tian had a blank expression. He felt that his entire body's vitality was flowing away from his chest. His eyes gradually lost focus and in the end he fell to the ground with a thud.

When Han Xiao knew that someone had gone up the mountain to attack, he arrived at the hall as fast as possible and began to instruct his subordinates to prepare for battle, at the same time waiting for Yang Tian to come. But after waiting for a while, one of his subordinates came and reported that the vice-chieftain was fighting an enemy and that the two of them were comparable in power.

Han Xiao was frightened because someone comparable to Yang Tian in power had to be at least a mid-stage Soul Personage too! He immediately hurried over there without hesitation.

However, when he finally saw the two combatants, Yang Tian was at a disadvantage and even on the verge of death!

Before he could rush up and help, Yang Tian unexpectedly made a mistake and was killed by the enemy!

Taking advantage of the moments when everybody was still shocked by Yang Tian's sudden death, Bai Yunfei quickly dashed up to the wall behind Yang Tian and pulled the Glacial Pricker out from its surface.

Almost as soon as he turned around, Han Xiao's attack already came.

Fast, it was really too fast. Bai Yunfei simply had no time to counterattack with the spear and could only dodge to one side within a hair's breadth. His left arm was still cut with a deep wound open to the bone by the opponent's short blade.

"This is the power of the Soul Warrior stage? I misjudged it... It's

much stronger than I thought!”

Bai Yunfei thought bitterly as he raised his spear and swept it horizontally, squeezing out a small gap of time to breathe.

Han Xiao’s weapon was a pair of blades of very different lengths. The one in his left hand was a short sword over two feet long and the one in his right hand was a small and exquisite dagger.

Bai Yunfei brandished his spear, creating an area of spear blurs in front of him, preventing the opponent from charging up to his face. But the enemy was really too fast. Even though his spear was swift and fierce, it could not hurt him one bit.

All of a sudden, Han Xiao’s eyes flashed with coldness. Facing the incoming spear, he did not try to avoid it completely. Instead, he slightly leaned to one side to protect his vital parts from the spear and thrust the short sword in his left hand out, directing it at Bai Yunfei along the handle of the spear!

When the tip of the spear came into contact with the right side of his waist, there was unexpectedly a shower of sparks. His coat was lacerated, revealing a golden soft armor underneath, which was sparkling slightly. Although the strike had left a dent in it, Han Xiao was not injured at all!

The short sword cut across Bai Yunfei’s left arm, causing another wound. Even worse, the enemy had closed in on him, so it was already too late to pull the spear back for defense!

Bai Yunfei’s eyes flashed with a hint of resolution. Regardless of the dagger the opponent was thrusting at his waist, he made the Fire-tipped Spear disappear. When he raised his right hand, it was already holding the Glacial Pricker, and he thrust it at the opponent’s heart in a similarly fierce fashion!

If you injure me, you’ll die!

A shocked expression showed up in Han Xiao eyes. He had not expected the opponent to be so stubborn as to force a no-win



situation, paying absolutely no attention to dodging! Of course he was unwilling to accept this. Without hesitation, he gave up attacking right away and backed off continuously.

Seeing Han Xiao retreat, Bai Yunfei also took several steps backwards, extending the distance between them. At the same time, the Fire-tipped Spear reappeared in his hand. His eyes glittering, he looked the opponent in the eyes in stalemate.

Because the opponent's golden soft armor was much better defensively than Bai Yunfei's +10 upgraded soft armor, if he could not hit the opponent squarely with a full-power thrust, he simply would not be able to injure him seriously.

"Then I've got no choice but to attack the limbs and head?" Bai Yunfei's mind was racing, trying to come up with a response.

Staring at Bai Yunfei in front of him, Han Xiao suddenly shouted loudly: "Why are you still standing there?! Go up together! Kill him!"

These words were said to the group of bandits who were standing outside the courtyard house watching the fight.

But they were no fools! Kill him? He was the killer of the vice-chieftain, and not even the chieftain could kill him!

The bandits looked at each other, but no one dared to be the first to step into the courtyard house.

Right at this moment, a miserable cry suddenly rang out at the back of the crowd of bandits. They were all frightened. Upon turning around to take a look, they saw that a man drenched completely in blood and holding two daggers in his hands was killing his way into the crowd like a merciless god of death.

This was none other than Li Chengfeng!

Before the bandits could decide whether or not to listen to their chieftain's order by rushing up and fighting Bai Yunfei, they already got entangled in a fight against Li Chengfeng.

The two men who were facing each other in the courtyard had also noticed Li Chengfeng's arrival. Han Xiao was frightened, but Bai Yunfei was happy.

"I didn't think Chengfeng would act so fast. Looks like his hatred for the bandits has reached an unimaginable level... Now this hatred has exploded completely so he's doing much better than usual! Then... I'll also go all out!"

The moment Han Xiao glanced at the fighting outside, Bai Yunfei took the initiative and attacked.

Since the opponent was wearing a soft armor on his torso, he would attack his lower body.

Bai Yunfei's opportunistic attack caught Han Xiao somewhat unprepared, but then he adapted very quickly by moving nimbly about, dodging and weaving, giving Bai Yunfei basically no chance.

All of a sudden, Han Xiao made a dash backwards, pulling away a distance. At the same time, he shot a streak of cold light straight at Bai Yunfei's face with a flick of his right hand.

The moment he raised his hand, Bai Yunfei was somewhat aware of this. After all, he had practiced throwing flying daggers with his hands quite a lot recently too. He leaned his head to one side. The dagger went past his ear and stuck into the wall behind him.

However, Han Xiao's attack was not finished yet! He turned his wrist over and another dagger appeared, which was similarly thrown with a flick. Afterwards, the second and the third daggers were thrown. The three daggers flew out almost simultaneously, coming at Bai Yunfei in a triangular formation.

Bai Yunfei gave a cold snort and brandished his spear like a windmill, creating a shield of spear blurs in front of him. Three ringing sounds were heard as the incoming daggers were all sent flying.

Han Xiao did not pause at all. He threw two more daggers

straight at Bai Yunfei's feet.

Bai Yunfei stopped brandishing the spear and dashed obliquely to one side. The moment he jumped away, he made the spear disappear and also shot a dagger at Han Xiao's throat with a flick of his hand.

"I've got flying daggers too!"

Han Xiao had originally wanted to pursue and attack the opponent when he dashed to one side. Seeing a streak of cold light shooting at him, he was shocked immediately. He had not expected the enemy to be also capable of using flying daggers!

Shocked, he dashed to one side, missing the opportunity to pursue and attack Bai Yunfei. Worse still, he had given Bai Yunfei a chance to attack him!

An eye for an eye and a tooth for a tooth. Bai Yunfei did what Han Xiao had done earlier by flicking his hands continuously, shooting one dagger after another at the opponent as if he was never going to stop.

The originally close-quarters struggle had turned into a flying dagger competition. The two of them seemed to have quite a few daggers in their space rings so they kept shooting flying daggers at each other while dodging the incoming daggers.

However, after a while, the difference emerged. Bai Yunfei after all was too inexperienced so despite having quite a lot of talent for the art of flying daggers, he could not compare with a flying dagger veteran like Han Xiao.

They were both wearing soft armors on their torsos, giving off ringing sounds when they were hit by flying daggers. But Bai Yunfei's defense was obviously not enough. His armor had already been damaged in many places and his arms and legs had also suffered many wounds. He seemed to be gradually losing.

"Humph! Want to fight me with flying daggers? You're just

cutting your own throat! Within the next ten daggers, I'll definitely kill you!"

Han Xiao raised the corners of his mouth with a trace of complacency. It seemed he was ridiculing Bai Yunfei for overestimating his power. Seeing Bai Yunfei lose balance slightly and move obliquely to one side because of dodging a flying dagger, Han Xiao's eyes flashed with fierceness. With a shake of his hand, two daggers appeared in his hand at the same time, ready to be shot out.

But right at this moment, his expression suddenly changed greatly!

## Chapter 22: Destroy the Blackwood Stronghold and Return to the City!

---

Just when Han Xiao wanted to flick his hand for the last time to shoot these two deadly flying daggers out, killing the opponent, his expression suddenly changed greatly. He simply did not have time to attack anymore!

Bai Yunfei, who seemed to be losing balance, made a twisting movement with his body in a strange manner as if he had now completely abandoned the idea of dodging, his right hand swung in a blur. A blue light shot out like a flash of lightning, aimed straight at the enemy's throat!

Fast, it was so fast! It was so fast that Han Xiao basically had no time to dodge. When the thought of dodging sprang to his mind, the blue light was already close to him!

At this crucial moment of life and death, Han Xiao moved away three centimeters to the left thanks to his extremely fast reaction speed. He felt a chill in his right arm. Even though he had prevented this blow from piercing through his throat, his right shoulder had been left with a bloody hole!

However, the hole in his right shoulder was not bleeding much. The wound seemed to have been frozen. In the blink of an eye, a cold feeling spread through his entire body, almost making Han Xiao tremble. He could not feel his right shoulder and right arm at all.

Looking at the hole in his shoulder, Han Xiao's eyes were filled with endless horror. As soon as he raised his head, he felt a heat wave hit him in the face.

A dazzling red light seemed to have filled his entire field of vision. He wanted to move and dodge, but his body was ice-cold inside. It was already too late to dodge!

“Pu!”

The tip of the spear pierced out through the back of his neck. After it had been stained with blood, the red flicker it gave off had a strange feel.

Bai Yunfei withdrew the spear, letting the enemy's body fall backwards. Blood spewed out from his throat, splattering over a whole area.

The chieftain of the Blackwood Stronghold, a soul cultivator of the Soul Warrior stage, had died with a deep regret just like that!

Having done all of this, Bai Yunfei suddenly staggered backwards continuously, seemingly as if he was exhausted. In the end he could no longer stand and fell on his buttocks to the ground. His back leaning on a wall, he began to gasp for breath.

“Luckily... the Glacial Pricker didn't disappoint me after I poured almost all my remaining soulforce into it and shot it out, otherwise, I would have been dead. Later I can't fight recklessly like this since I can't be this lucky every time...”

Seeing that Han Xiao was now completely dead, he finally let out a sigh of relief and calmed his excited mind down, starting to recover his exhausted soulforce and strength.

This battle was really somewhat beyond his expectations, and he had even less expected that he himself would be able to kill two soul cultivators not weaker than him in the slightest—all of this was mostly thanks to those various upgraded items, especially the Glacial Pricker, whose powerful surprise attacks were crucial to him winning the fights.

In fact, Han Xiao should not have lost so easily and quickly. To ordinary Soul Personages, a Soul Warrior was practically invincible, because in addition to the skin-flesh control and bone-blood control, a Soul Warrior also knew the third level of body control—acupoint control!

Acupoints were mysterious things in the body. They were not tangible like skin, flesh, bones and blood, but they really did exist. Despite their tiny size, these acupoints possessed unimaginable power.

Nobody knew how many acupoints the human body had in total yet. Even the various already discovered acupoints still had many unknown functions.

Many of those martial artists, who used external force to train their bodies, also considered some acupoints in the human body to be targets of their attacks, achieving unexpected results. Furthermore, in the field of medicine, there were many treating methods which used needles to puncture acupoints.

These people only stimulated acupoints with external force in order to activate their functions, but soul cultivators could control the acupoints!

As a soul cultivator's soulforce and familiarity with body control improved, after reaching the Soul Warrior stage, he would be able to feel the existence of acupoints at various places in the body. As for how many acupoints they could feel, this depended on his talent and fortunes. Except for some most common acupoints, many other acupoints had specialized practice methods which were both powerful and effective. Most of these methods were in turn the foundation of mighty soul skills so they were extremely rare and basically unattainable to ordinary soul cultivators.

Han Xiao's soulforce had already reached the mid-stage Soul Warrior level, but his understanding of acupoints was rather insufficient, otherwise he would not have been sent by his school to this kind of place to occupy a mountain and become a bandit. Even now, he could only control the basic acupoints in several places such as his arms and legs. Despite this, the power and speed he could unleash were not something a Soul Personage could compare with.

However, he run into the wrong opponent in the wrong place at the wrong time and chose the wrong fighting method!

When he was preparing for the midnight probe according to the earlier plan, Bai Yunfei and Li Chengfeng launched their attack first. Right from the beginning, his mind was already thrown into disorder. Afterwards, seeing Yang Tian get killed with his own eyes came as a considerable blow to him.

Also, right from the beginning he was already afraid of the spear in Bai Yunfei's hands so he did not dare to go all out. After checking the opponent out for a while, he decided to fight with flying daggers, which he was good at, intending to defeat the opponent with long-distance attacks.

But he did not expect Bai Yunfei to be not bad at the art of flying daggers too! After the two of them shot back and forth at each other for a while, Bai Yunfei was gradually put at a disadvantage. Even worse, his life seemed to be in danger. But he still had a trump card left!

It was the Glacial Pricker! Its exceptionally powerful additional effect had almost made it lose its original function of 'stabbing'. Instead, Bai Yunfei had been using it more like a projectile or a flying dagger. From beginning to end, he had fought the enemy several times, and the Glacial Pricker had played a bigger role than even the Fire-tipped Spear!

This time was no exception!

Miserable cries of bandits kept coming in sporadically from the outside. Li Chengfeng's battle was still going on. Bai Yunfei only recovered part of his soulforce before standing up and joining the battle...

This battle was a complete victory! From now on, the Blackwood Stronghold did not exist anymore!

... ..



After this battle in the Blackwood Stronghold, the two of them spent two days making arrangements for those abducted women. They gave out all the possessions in the stronghold to the women, letting them bring these possessions back to the various villages harassed by the bandits.

Five days later, the two of them returned to Li Chengfeng's current village. On the way back, Li Chengfeng seemed to have put down all of his burdens. All day long, he thought about Ling'er the most and always anticipated their marriage, which would happen after his return to the village.

He did what he had said, and on the second day following their return, an exciting wedding and a large banquet were held in the village. The entire village celebrated it, cheerfully chatting and laughing.

On the next day, Bai Yunfei bade farewell to everybody, preparing to return to Luoshi City.

At the entrance of the village, Bai Yunfei looked at a hesitant Li Chengfeng, saying with a smile: "What's up? If you want to say something, say it. You're already a married man, don't fuss about it."

"Er... Ha ha, Yunfei, you're really not going to stay here for a bit longer? I'm going to reach the Soul Personage stage soon, but you can't give me the technique scroll. Once you leave, I won't be able to practice anymore." Li Chengfeng said in a seemingly somewhat embarrassed manner after hesitating for a long time.

Bai Yunfei however said smilingly: "What you want to say isn't this, right? Ha ha, don't worry, I'm only returning to do some things I must do. You don't need to think about going with me to help me. Just stay with your precious Ling'er properly. You've got to treat her well. After dealing with those things, I'll go on a journey. But before that, I'll find you again and give you the scroll."

“You... Oh, dear, alright, you must always be careful. If you want me to help you in something, come find me anytime. You’re my benefactor, and more importantly, my friend. I...”

“Alright, since we’re friends, you don’t need to say much. I’ll definitely come find you again. Don’t make any more fuss... I’m leaving now!”

Watching Bai Yunfei’s silhouette gradually disappearing, Li Chengfeng’s eyes had a trace of worry again. He sighed gently: “Alas... When you talked about returning to Luoshi City, your eyes had a hint of hatred. How could I have not noticed it? I couldn’t be more familiar with this feeling... Yunfei, you must not let anything bad happen to you. I owe you too much. Give me a chance to repay you!”

On a path in a forest, Bai Yunfei was going at full gallop, but his eyes were somewhat unfocused. It seemed he was recalling something, his expression sometimes embarrassed, sometimes angry and sometimes sorrowful...

“Soon... I’ll have my revenge very soon. Zhang Yang, now I’m not someone you can kill like an ant anytime you wish anymore. I’ll make you pay dearly for what you did!

“The world is unfair. Good and evil are the same. Since Heaven doesn’t punish evil, I’ll punish you for your crimes!”

## Chapter 23: A Trend of the House of Zhang; Coming to the Rescue

---

The Blackwood Stronghold had been burnt to ashes by a large fire and all the bandits had been exterminated!

This news spread to various places at a very fast speed as if it had wings. The villages in the vicinity of Mt. Blackwood, which had normally been tyrannized by the bandits, were all jubilant because their abducted women had returned safely, and more importantly, because that loathsome bandit den no longer existed.

The major merchants in Ganling City and Talus City were so excited that they celebrated this too. From now on, they finally did not have to be anxious when transporting goods between the cities.

Unlike these excited, joyful people, the Zhang mansion in Talus City appeared to be somewhat gloomy at the moment. This oppressive atmosphere was created by Zhang Zhenshan, who was sitting in the head seat in the living room reading a letter in his hands with an unsightly expression.

After reading the letter, he lowered his head and pondered in silence for a while. Then he raised his head and looked at the housekeeper on one side, saying: "Make some preparations. I need to leave for Snowpeak City immediately!"

"Yes, master."

The housekeeper answered then hurriedly went to instruct his subordinates to make preparations. When he walked out of the door, he happened to bump head-on into a person. He lowered his head and saluted at once, saying: "Young master."

"Humph." That person replied casually with a snort then stepped into the room. Hiding his arrogant, bossy expression, he bowed slightly in salute to Zhang Zhenshan and asked carefully: "Father, you... want to go out?" His voice seemed to contain some

anticipation.

This man had fair and clear complexion and was handsome, but he could not conceal the brutality and ruthlessness which occasionally flashed in his eyes—this was none other than Zhang Yang!

Seeming to have something on his mind, Zhang Zhenshan said casually, “Yeah, I’m taking a trip back to the school...”

Then he cast a look at his happy-looking son, frowned and said solemnly, “You’re thinking that after I leave, you can idle about and run amok all day long, right?”

“Er...” Zhang Yang had not expected his father to be able to see through his own mind. With a somewhat flustered expression, he momentarily did not know what to say.

“Humph! You think I don’t know what you normally do? All day long you visit brothels and sap your spirit by seeking pleasure! That girl from the house of Liu is already about to become a mid-stage Soul Warrior, but you’re not even a late Soul Personage yet!

“You’re pretty talented, but you don’t put effort into practice. In the future, how can you establish a foothold in the school? How can you make me give you the Zhang family?!”

Reprimanded by his father, Zhang Yang did not dare to talk back at all. With an obsequious smile, he nodded again and again as if he was really listening to his father’s teaching.

“I will sincerely follow your teaching, father. I will definitely train hard later so that I won’t make you lose face.”

“Hm, I hope you can really do what you say. This time it will take me from ten days to a month to return to the school. You must manage yourself well at home. Don’t think that because your mother pampers you, you can do whatever you want. If you still haven’t become a late-stage Soul Personage by the time I return...”

“Please don’t worry, father. I will definitely improve my power

as quickly as possible and reach the late-stage Soul Personage level!”

Zhang Yang’s mouth was full of promises but he was delighted inside. He was already thinking about whether he should go to look for Xiao Cui in the Tower of Ten Thousand Springs or ‘choose’ a girl on the street after getting his ‘freedom’.

... ..

In Talus City, on the second floor of a restaurant on a flourishing main street, Bai Yunfei was sitting at a table near the street. As he ate the foods on the table in a somewhat unconcerned manner, he observed the people on the street.

It had been three days since his return to the city. Thanks to the battle in the Blackwood Stronghold and more than half a month of training, he had already reached the late-stage Soul Personage level, but he wasn't blinded by his new power and the hatred inside him at all. Instead of rushing into looking for Zhang Yang to get his revenge at all costs, he had rested for an entire day then begun to observe carefully around here.

Not far up ahead was the main gate of the Zhang mansion with two big stone lions standing loftily on its either side. With high walls and a luxurious gate, the mansion had quite an air of grandeur about it. At least that was how it was in the eyes of the common people in the city. The people going past the main gate of the Zhang mansion even subconsciously slowed their paces down a bit, seemingly for fear of offending the powerful Zhang family with the noises they made.

“I’ve been observing for two days, but I haven’t seen Zhang Yang appear even once. Is this because he’s been at home all along or he’s not at home at all? Or perhaps... he doesn’t go in and out through the main gate?” Bai Yunfei thought somewhat doubtfully.

Afraid of being noticed by other people, he had not always been looking at the main gate of the Zhang mansion. After all, nobody

knew how many spies and henchmen the Zhang family had in the city, so he had better be careful in everything.

“Oh?” When Bai Yunfei withdrew his eyes and cast a casual look at the street below the restaurant, he noticed something unusual.

He saw three men sneakily following a young girl from behind. In fact, these three men were very careful as they followed her, seemingly accustomed to doing this kind of thing, so the young girl did not notice them at all. If Bai Yunfei was not looking down from a high place, it would not be easy for him to discover this either.

He considered for a while. Seeing that young girl unexpectedly head for a remote place, he stood up without any more hesitation, went down from the restaurant and followed her.

... ..

In a rather secluded alleyway, a brief exclamation suddenly rang out, followed by soft muffled sounds. It seemed someone's mouth had been covered before they could let out a fearful cry.

Two or three people walked by the opening of the alley and obviously heard the strange sounds in the alley, but none of them was interested. Instead, they went away hurriedly with slightly changed expressions, clearly not wanting to ask for trouble themselves.

In the alleyway, two burly men with bushy eyebrows and big eyes and a thievish-looking men with a small stature were gathering around, carrying a burlap sack tied with a rope.

“Ha ha, I didn't expect us to run into such a top-tier bird. Capture her and give her to young master, he'll definitely reward us big time!”

“Yeah, this one isn't as juicy as the chick we helped them capture yesterday, but she's a virgin too. Young master likes this kind of girl. Also, this time young master seemed to have been restrained so much he could not take it anymore. He unexpectedly told us to

use all means necessary to give him women who can satisfy him, including openly kidnapping...”

“Yeah, young master is very impatient. He wants a girl tonight. If not for that young girl who was captured yesterday evening, he’d definitely like this one caught by us the most... Tsk, I really don’t know where the chief caught that girl. That kind of looks can turn anyone on. Too bad, she is young master’s...”

“Alright, cut the crap. Quickly lift her up and get away. Don’t let too many people notice us.” The little man on one side urged somewhat discontentedly, interrupting these two men.

However, what dissatisfied him even more was that these two men did not make a move even though they had stopped talking.

Just when he wanted to turn his head to complain, he saw the two men beside him gradually fall weakly to the ground without a sound. He was greatly shocked, but before he could turn around, he felt a pain at the back of his neck. Afterwards, he fell to the ground unconscious similarly with the whites of his eyes turning up.

The burlap sack was opened again, revealing a young girl who was bound and gagged.

She, who was already weeping buckets, looked at the youngster in front of her with an expression full of terror.

The youngster smiled at her and said gently: “Don’t be afraid. I’m here to save you. Now I’m going to untie you, but don’t let out a shout, understand?”

After saying so, he unfastened the knots on her body, helped her stand up and pointed to the entrance of the alleyway, saying: “Just leave quickly. Later you must be careful when you’re not at home. Don’t go to any remote places...”

Having watched the girl run out of the alleyway, Bai Yunfei lowered his head looking thoughtfully at the three men lying on

the ground.

“According to what they said, it seems there’s still someone who was kidnapped to be given to that so-called ‘young master’... Now that I already ran into this, I’ll save her as well, otherwise I won’t be able to rest easy.”



## Chapter 24: Another Encounter With Zhang Yang and a Battle for Vengeance! (First)

---

The moon hung high in the sky. Various places in Talus City were illuminated by lights.

In a rather luxurious room in the west part of the city, a middle-aged man of a tall stature with wide shoulders and a broad back was looking with a slightly angry expression at two burly men and a thievish-looking little man who were standing with drooped heads in front of him. There were still five or six muscular subordinates behind him.

“In other words, you couldn’t even see who the attacker was before getting knocked unconscious? The girl you captured has also escaped, but you have returned unharmed?”

“Chief, we...”

“Humph! Worthless pieces of shit! You’re unable to achieve anything but liable to spoil everything!” Seeming not to bother listening to their explanations, the middle-aged man gestured for them to stand aside with a wave of his hand and told a man behind him: “Xiao Liu, you go outside and see if someone has followed these three good-for-nothings to come here. Young master is going to be here in a while, don’t make any mistake.”

A while later, Xiao Liu came back into the room and shook his head to indicate that there was nothing unusual outside. Everybody slightly let out a sigh of relief. If someone was drawn to this place, which would make young master unhappy, they would have to bear all the consequences of this.

However, they did not know that in fact someone had already followed those men to this place, and even a very long time ago.

Atop the roof, Bai Yunfei’s entire body was sticking to the surface of the tiles, making it very difficult for someone on the ground to

detect him. When that Xiao Liu had come out for an investigation, he had only gone around the house once without using a ladder to check the roof.

Having followed those three men to this place, because he was uncertain if that girl who according to them had been abducted was here or not, he had not acted impatiently. Instead, he had been on the top of the room, listening to the situation inside.

The chief cast a look at a room whose door was guarded by two subordinates on the second floor, saying: "How's that girl?"

"She's been in the room upstairs all the time. Last night, after crying for a while, she calmed down. Today she has been very quiet and hasn't tried to kill herself either." A subordinate behind him answered, then continued after hesitating for a while: "Chief, she said... she is a disciple of the Green Willow School. Though we don't know if that's true or not, will we really not carry out a check?"

"Humph! The Green Willow School's disciple? How is that possible? That's a school of soul cultivators. How could one of its disciples be captured by us like this? She must have heard about it from someone then tried to fool us into letting her go with it."

After saying so, the chief hesitated for a bit, seemingly to soothe his subordinates and also to soothe himself, then continued: "Besides, our young master Zhang Yang is a disciple of the Glacial School! So what if she's really a Green Willow School disciple? By giving her to young master Zhang, we'll even help to bring about a good deed between the two schools. When she knows young master's identity, perhaps she'll beg to stay by his side!"

On top of the roof, upon hearing that the abducted girl was in this place, Bai Yunfei had wanted to go down and save her immediately. But the conversation afterwards made him freeze right there.

Zhang Yang! That young master mentioned by them was

unexpectedly Zhang Yang?

Moreover, he was going to be here in a while!

Bai Yunfei considered for some time with glittering eyes then suppressed the excitement in his mind to continue sticking to the roof, paying close attention to the situation inside.

Finding something by chance after traveling far and wide for it!

About half an hour later, the sound of an opening door was heard, followed by the chief's ingratiating voice: "You have arrived, young master. The girl you want is already in that room upstairs... Hey, you two, come down. There's no need to stand guard anymore."

"Oh, hopefully you won't disappoint me." An indifferent voice was heard, "The two of you also stay down here. I don't need your protection. Don't ruin my enthusiasm."

The moment Bai Yunfei heard this voice, his entire body shivered. He had to forcefully restrain himself so that he would not make any sound because of his excessive excitement.

"Zhang Yang!"

Bai Yunfei would remember this voice for life. The owner of the voice had changed his life.

"Be cool, be cool!" Bai Yunfei kept warning himself against acting on impulse in his mind as he clenched his fists tightly, his fingernails almost sticking in his palms.

"This is an opportunity. I definitely can't let it pass!" After he took several deep breaths, his almost seething mind finally started to calm down.

"From what he said, it seems he's got two bodyguards. How powerful are they? They're soul cultivators? They most likely are, but I don't know what their levels are. They shouldn't have surpassed the Soul Personage stage, but Zhang Yang himself is a

mid-stage Soul Personage too... If I'm surrounded by them..." Right at this moment, there were footsteps coming from below him. Apparently Zhang Yang was walking towards the room upstairs.

"I came here to save that girl. I can't let her suffer any harm! But if I attack Zhang Yang directly and fail, I'll be surrounded by three soul cultivators. Then... let's take care of the bodyguards first. Besides, I can't give Zhang Yang any chance to run away..."

Pressed for time, Bai Yunfei came up with several ideas almost instantly. In the end he made up his mind. After estimating the direction a bit, he took a step with force.

Zhang Yang was about to go upstairs somewhat eagerly, but his two bodyguards and the other people were in the opposite corner of the hall. The sudden sound frightened all of them greatly. As soon as they looked up, they saw a large number of stone tile fragments shooting towards them!

Half of the ten ordinary people at the scene were knocked down unconscious while the others ran in panic, almost all of them injured. But the next batch of fragments came, seemingly aimed at them on purpose. This time the several injured people could not dodge and were all knocked to the ground unconscious.

However, to soul cultivators, these flying stones were basically not a threat. Zhang Yang, who was standing at the entrance of the stairs, and his two bodyguards, one tall and the other short, all avoided the flying stone fragments very easily.

As the fragments came down all over the air, Bai Yunfei fell down together with them. As soon as he landed, he did a roll to neutralize the momentum of the fall. Then he jumped up straight towards Zhang Yang!

"This is bad! Protect young master!"

Of the two bodyguards coming here with Zhang Yang, the tall

one was called Li Shi and was a late-stage Soul Personage while the short one was called Du Xin and was a late-stage Soul Apprentice. Li Shi was the first to react. Almost at the same time as Bai Yunfei moved, he chased up without any hesitation. A bit slower, Du Xin followed him closely.

This hall was very spacious. Bai Yunfei landed on a place twenty meters away from Zhang Yang but less than ten meters away from the two bodyguards. The three of them were surprisingly fast, at least in the eyes of those ordinary people. In almost the blink of an eye, Bai Yunfei had already dashed out about ten meters.

Li Shi was about to catch up with Bai Yunfei. His hand was already holding a long saber and he thrust it at Bai Yunfei's back.

However, right at this moment, an urgently advancing Bai Yunfei suddenly shot obliquely to the left, avoiding the saber strike. At the same time, he turned around and flicked a blur out of his right hand by making use of the momentum of the turn. Several cold sparkles shot out!

The secrets of success in using flying daggers were speed, steadiness and accuracy!

Having trained hard recently, even though Bai Yunfei could not be said to have reached the peak of perfection in flying dagger techniques, he was already exceptionally familiar with them!

Three upgraded daggers were shot out simultaneously. Despite being astounded, Li Shi reacted surprisingly quickly. With a turn of his saber, a dagger was sent flying.

Only one dagger? Yes, he had deflected only one dagger because the other two daggers were shooting at Du Xin behind him!

# Chapter 25: A Battle for Vengeance!

## (Second)

---

Li Shi reacted very fast. He raised his saber, making a block with it, sending a dagger flying. But the other two daggers were shooting at Du Xin behind him!

Du Xin, merely a late-stage Soul Apprentice, was following closely behind Li Shi. Du Xin had originally thought that Bai Yunfei would be stopped when Li Shi drew his saber. But just as he was about to charge ahead, he suddenly saw the opponent turn strangely out of sight. And in the blink of an eye, two sharp blades were poised to strike at his throat and his heart!

Having basically no time to think carefully, he leaned his body to one side almost instinctively. A dagger flew past his neck, grazing it, but the one aimed at his heart could not be avoided completely. At the last moment, he channeled his soulforce and flexed his muscles, causing his skin to become as hard as a layer of horn.

However, they were all useless! The dagger pierced into his left shoulder almost without hindrance, up to the hilt!

Before he could even let out a groan, he was gagged by yet another dagger that had just arrived!

A dagger had almost pierced through his neck, causing his blood to spurt out unceasingly. His mouth was wide open but no sound came out of it. With popping eyes, he stared desperately at Bai Yunfei not far in front of him, his eyes filled with terror, unwillingness and also bewilderment. He then fell down gradually and died.

Because he had been slightly slower right from the beginning, he could only follow behind Li Shi. Thinking that Bai Yunfei would rush straight up to young master's face, he simply did not expect the opponent to suddenly choose him as the target of his attacks,

much less expect the opponent to be adept at flying daggers and, in addition, to be able to shoot multiple daggers in a row without pausing. There were many things he had not thought about, but he would not have a chance to think again. With just one mistake, he had already lost his life!

With a turn of his body, Bai Yunfei had killed a soul cultivator!

When these two men had dodged the stone tile fragments, he had found out their power levels and instantly decided on how to act. Although a late-stage Soul Apprentice meant nothing to him at the moment, if he was surrounded, a Soul Apprentice would also pose a threat to him.

Therefore he gave up the chance to come straight at Zhang Yang to launch a surprise attack at Du Xin, who was the last to chase up. Afterwards, he even used his waist to block a saber strike from Li Shi without hesitation and threw that final, mortal dagger at Du Xin, shooting him dead.

After sending that dagger flying, Li Shi did not pause at all. Taking advantage of the fact that Bai Yunfei still had not regained his balance, he strode forwards, swinging his long saber out, wanting to force the opponent into dodging to launch a violent attack.

However, instead of dodging, the opponent unexpectedly shot another sharp blade out of his hand with a flick. His long saber then hit the opponent's waist in a hack, but a loud and clear sound of metal clashing against metal rang out. After that, the opponent only staggered half a step before unexpectedly turning around, completely unharmed, and charging forwards!

Since avoiding the first broken stones, Zhang Yang had been standing at the entrance of the corridor, staring at the fight with an ice-cold expression. Even though he was sinister and vicious, he was definitely not a good-for-nothing playboy. Many of the Zhang family's underground forces were handled by him, and he himself

was also a soul cultivator. To his eyes, this kind of situation still could not be considered 'dangerous'.

In the beginning, he had been flustered for a moment, but when Bai Yunfei charged at him after falling down, he could already tell that the intruder was not very powerful, only a bit more powerful than himself, and comparable to Li Shi at the most. He thought that even if he himself did not get into action, the two bodyguards would be able to take down the intruder.

The situation in the beginning did not disappoint him. When the intruder was only halfway through charging up to him, he was caught up by Li Shi. However, just when he pondered whether or not he himself should get into action to resolve this 'trouble' a bit earlier, the opponent pierced through Du Xin's throat with a turn of the body, killing him. That man then unexpectedly withstood a saber strike from Li Shi head-on before charging at him again at high speed!

That indifferent expression on Zhang Yang's face froze instantly. He even began to think of 'fleeing immediately'.

However, when Bai Yunfei had covered just half the distance and was only less than five meters away from Zhang Yang, he was once again caught up by Li Shi and could not pull away.

Worthy of being one of the most competent bodyguards under Zhang Zhenshan, Li Shi kept in mind the order to protect young master's life which his master had given him when he had been about to leave. He did not even take a look at Du Xin, who had fallen down behind him, and was not frightened at all by Bai Yunfei's lightning-fast killing blow either. With nothing but a solemn expression in his eyes, he caught up with Bai Yunfei in an acceleration. Brandishing his long saber, he surrounded the enemy in a sphere of saber blurs.

Only upon seeing that the intruder had finally got entangled in a fight with Li Shi did Zhang Yang let out a sigh of relief and



abandon the idea of running away. However, instead of charging up immediately to fight the enemy together with Li Shi, he backed off and watched the fight between the two of them.

After staring at Bai Yunfei for a while, he pondered in his mind: “I always feel that he leaves me with a slight impression, but I can’t remember who he actually is. Seeing as he obviously came here for me, does he want to kill me? But except for the several flying daggers he shot out earlier, now he doesn’t even have a weapon in his hands. This is too illogical. Is he not good at using weapons? He only relies on close-quarters hand-to-hand combat? Oh? Is that soft armor on his body... a soul armament?!”

In the courtyard, Bai Yunfei was dodging left and right. Even though he had been hit by the long saber, he did not seem to be injured at all. His clothes had been lacerated, revealing a soft armor which was slightly sparkling with a golden light.

Relying on the defense of the soft armor, he wanted to force his way up to Li Shi’s face and fight him in hand-to-hand combat. As someone with obviously a very great deal of combat experience, how could Li Shi possibly let the opponent achieve this? Saber blurs flying everywhere, the large saber was unexpectedly used as nimbly as a dagger by him. The sharp blade of the saber always surrounded Bai Yunfei’s entire body, giving him no chance to break away.

After dogfighting for about ten minutes, the two of them seemed unable to do anything to each other and were still locked in a close battle.

Standing on one side, Zhang Yang was staring at Bai Yunfei with almost glowing eyes. Or rather, he was staring at the golden soft armor on his body with a hint of pleasant surprise and greediness on his face.

“That soft armor on his body is a soul armament! It’s definitely a soul armament! A defensive soul armament... Who could have

expected this? No wonder he seemed very confident earlier. Indeed, Li Shi's weapon simply can't break that soft armor. But, it's not like your whole body is covered in defensive soul armament! You can deal with the attacks from Li Shi alone, but you've forgotten that I'm here!" He said ecstatically in his mind: "It seems he's alone and he isn't hiding his power. He's really just a late Soul Personage like Li Shi. Then, this soul armament... will be mine!"

Having made his decision, Zhang Yang no longer hesitated. He reached out his hand, drawing a dagger from his waist, and flew into the battlefield while shouting loudly: "Li Shi, keep him entangled! I'll deal him a fatal blow!"

This move by Zhang Yang made the expressions of the two current combatants change: Li Shi's face showed a pleasant surprise while Bai Yunfei's face seemed to show some anxiety... and terror.

Seeing the expression on Bai Yunfei's face, Zhang Yang gave a complacent guffaw, saying: "Now you know how tough we are, right? You can only blame yourself for overestimating your power, bringing about your own destruction! You'll pay for this with your own life, and even give me a soul armament!"

While shouting, taking advantage of an opportunity created when Bai Yunfei lowered his body to dodge a saber strike from Li Shi, he swung his dagger and thrust it straight at the back of his head!

Bai Yunfei did a roll and avoided this attack with some difficulty. However, this roll happened to make him end up at a place behind Li Shi on the left hand side. Now the three of them were almost on a straight line with Li Shi ending up between Bai Yunfei and Zhang Yang.

Expressionlessly, Li Shi turned around, charged at Bai Yunfei, who had yet to stand up completely, and brought his saber down

on him in a hack. He knew that the opponent could withstand this blow head-on using the soft armor, but even if he could not injure him, he could make the opponent lose his balance with force, making it impossible for him to maintain his fighting rhythm. In that way, as long as young master kept waiting for an opportunity on one side, they would be able to kill him very quickly!

Bai Yunfei bent his body slightly. Another hole was cut into the clothes on his back by the long saber, revealing the golden soft armor underneath. But this time, after taking the force of this saber strike, his body only shook slightly once. Unlike before, now he did not lose his balance because he could not absorb the impact of a blow anymore!

Li Shi was raising his long saber, preparing to keep up the pressure. Before he could be startled by Bai Yunfei's reaction, his eyes came into contact with Bai Yunfei's eyes, which looked upwards. His face was immediately full of shock.

The moment Bai Yunfei lifted his head, his expression unexpectedly no longer contained the previous anxiety and fear. Even the exhaustion on his face had mostly disappeared. Now, there was only a frosty look in his eyes and a totally stern expression on his face!

Without pausing at all, under Li Shi's astonished look, he took half a step backwards with his right foot while leaning his body forwards and threw a punch with his right fist, creating brief whizz sounds! He seemed to have been saving this punch for a long time!

Overlapping Waves Art, Threefold Fist Force!

Soft sounds of broken bones were heard. Even though Li Shi strengthened the defense of his body at the last moment, he still could not withstand this focus attack. He retreated hurriedly uncontrollably.

Li Shi spewed out a mouthful of blood. His mind was in a daze for

a moment. As soon as he regained his composure, he felt his face hit by a heat wave. An almost dazzling flaming red spear was thrusting straight at him!

Basically unable to avoid the blow completely, at this moment of life or death, Li Shi only had enough time to move aside a little more than one and a half centimeters. At the same time, he put the long saber in front of him, hoping that it could ward off the opponent's incoming spear thrust.

The spear arrived in the blink of an eye and hit the body of the saber, creating an almost inaudible soft ringing sound. It then pierced through the saber without hindrance and went into the left side of his stomach!

Li Shi had known that it would be impossible to avoid getting injured so he had adopted a defensive measure to minimize the injury. Even though the spear had pierced into his stomach, this wound was not fatal at all to soul cultivators. Any soul cultivator who had learned the bones and blood control of the Soul Personage stage could accelerate the recovery speed of his body.

"It didn't hit my vital parts! Luckily, I've still got a chance..." Li Shi's delight only appeared in his heart for a moment before being replaced with endless fear.

The moment the tip of the spear pierced through the body of the saber, Bai Yunfei's eyes flashed with an unnoticeable trace of happiness. He roared inside, "Successful! Now time to... Burst!"

"Bang!!" An explosion rang out from the tip of the spear, or perhaps, from inside Li Shi's body. Blood and flesh splattered around. The entire left side of his stomach had exploded, leaving behind a terrifying gap. The surface of the wound was a burned black area, but red blood still gushed out nonstop from inside the gap.

Li Shi's hand was still holding one half of his broken saber in front of his chest. His expression was full of terror, bewilderment

and disbelief, astonishingly similar to Du Xin's dying expression. His body gradually fell backwards, revealing Zhang Yang behind him, whose face was similarly full of disbelief.

Zhang Yang was looking forwards with a stupefied expression. He even still maintained the position which he had adopted to prepare to charge up. Only when Li Shi's body hit the floor with a thud did he wake up, seemingly with a start. He thudded backwards several steps continuously, extending the distance between him and Bai Yunfei. With a distorted face, he shrieked in a terrified manner, "Soul armament! Another soul armament! And you've got a space ring! You were hiding your power! How is this possible? Why in the beginning didn't you... You did that to stall me!!"

Zhang Yang could also be considered the shrewd type. He had reacted almost in an instant. Only, after understanding all this, he was even more terrified inside.

## Chapter 26: A Battle for Vengeance! (Third)

---

Correct, everything which had happened earlier had been Bai Yunfei deliberately putting on a show! Including not using weapons, including being caught up by Li Shi, including deliberately revealing that the soft armor on his body was a soul armament, and including fighting Li Shi to a stalemate...

All this was done to prevent Zhang Yang from fleeing!

He and Li Shi were indeed comparable in power, but that was true only to the extent that they were on the same level of soulforce! He also had soul techniques and such soul armaments as the soft armor, the Fire-tipped Spear and the Glacial Piercer! It could be said that if he had gone all out right from the beginning of the fight against Li Shi, Li Shi would have been killed earlier by him!

However, he did not do so, because if he had shown that he was very powerful, Zhang Yang would definitely have run away without hesitation after noticing how fearsome he was. Even though he could have killed Li Shi very quickly, he would not have been able to kill him in an instant. As long as he had been stalled for a short period of time, this would have been enough for Zhang Yang.

If the battle had turned into a running fight, it would have been very disadvantageous to Bai Yunfei. Therefore, he could not afford to scare Zhang Yang away and had to draw him into the battle instead!

So, after killing Du Xin with a surprise attack, he engaged in a fight with Li Shi and deliberately acted as if they were neck and neck in power, and even deliberately revealed that the soft armor on his body was a soul armament. Having gone through the battle on Mt. Blackwood, he already somewhat understood how valuable these soul items were. Therefore, using them as a bait, he was able

to lure Zhang Yang into the fight.

In fact, the exhaustion he showed after fighting for a long time was mostly an act, because he basically had not used so much strength and soulforce as the opponents thought he had. The golden soft armor on his body was not only a soul armament but also a +10 upgraded soul armament!

Equipment Grade: Low Rare

Upgrade Level: +10

Defense: 267

Additional Defense: 139

+10 Additional Effect: When attacked, there is a 5% chance of increasing defense by 50% for 3 seconds.

Upgrade Requirement: 64 Soulpoints

This soft armor was none other than the soul armament of Han Xiao, the chieftain of the Blackwood Stronghold. After killing him, Bai Yunfei had naturally obtained this item. Relying on the upgraded armor’s high defense and its occasionally triggered additional effect, in fact the force he had to endure every time he took a blow with the soul armor was negligible.

Of course he could not let the opponent know about this. Moreover, how the situation was deliberately made to look by him caused Zhang Yang to feel that as long as he joined the fight and teamed up with Li Shi, they would definitely be able to defeat the enemy with great ease and obtain the soul armament on his body!

When Zhang Yang finally could not help joining the battle, Bai Yunfei started the actions of the second step without hesitation.

Surrounded by two opponents, if the fight had dragged on, he would really have ended up in a difficult position. Therefore, at the first moment he had to dispose of Li Shi, who had been fighting him for a long time and had already become familiar with his

‘rhythm’. Moreover, he had to do this fast, ruthlessly, surprisingly and in only one blow!

Therefore, he seized a chance and used the soul technique he had been saving for a long time for the first time, knocking him back.

However, the most crucial thing was the follow-up pursuing attack! The Fire-tipped Spear was no doubt powerful, but if it did not pierce into a vital part, he would not be able to kill in one hit. However, if its additional effect was triggered, this would be enough to kill the enemy regardless of where it hit!

But the explosion effect of the Fire-tipped Spear had only a 10% chance of being activated, which could be said to be very low, therefore, Bai Yunfei used the new killing blow he had mastered recently -- Threefold Thrust!

Applying the overlapping attack method of the Overlapping Waves Art to the spear techniques, the Threefold Fist Force was stretched up to the tip of the spear, hence the name ‘Threefold Thrust’.

One attack of the Threefold Fist Force was actually three overlapping attacks. So, a thrust of the spear using the Threefold Thrust was equivalent to three almost continuous attacks, greatly increasing the chance of triggering the additional effect.

Of course, Bai Yunfei did not put all his hopes on this either. Had the effect failed to be activated, he would have revealed his final trump card, the Glacial Piercer, to kill Li Shi at all costs!

However, fortunately for him, when the Threefold Thrust hit the opponent, the Fire-tipped Spear’s additional effect was successfully triggered. Moreover, it caused an explosion after piercing into the opponent’s stomach, killing him right away...

After killing Li Shi, Bai Yunfei did not begin to attack a stupefied Zhang Yang immediately because the side effect of using the Threefold Thrust was rather serious, at least several times greater



than that of using the Threefold Fist Force once. In several breaths after using it, his entire right arm was almost completely numb. Only thanks to this did Zhang Yang have a chance to retreat.

When Zhang Yang began to shriek in terror, he happened to have just recovered. Without saying a word, he charged up immediately, holding the spear in his hands.

At first Zhang Yang still wanted to say something, but seeing the opponent coming at him, he did not dare to be distracted anymore. With an expression full of anxiety, he exerted himself to deal with the incoming spear blurs.

Zhang Yang's dagger looked rather luxurious and even had some small diamonds embedded in its handle, and it did not seem to be of poor quality either. It should be made from top-grade materials. However, it was definitely not a soul armament.

As a disciple of the Glacial School and the young master of the Zhang, even though he normally did not put his effort into training, under the guidance of his father, he had still become fairly powerful. The timings of his offensive and defensive moves were just perfect. Momentarily, he and Bai Yunfei were unexpectedly evenly matched.

Bai Yunfei had fought Li Shi several dozen rounds earlier and had just unleashed his soulforce to use the Threefold Fist Force and Threefold Thrust continuously so his current condition was far worse than before. However, there was no panic on his face at all. Brandishing the spear elegantly, he forced the opponent to retreat every time he wanted to close in on him to attack.

After fighting for a while, facing an incoming thrust, Zhang Yang leaned to one side, avoiding it by a hair's breadth, at the same time he swung his right arm out, aiming to cut Bai Yunfei's throat with his dagger.

However, this strike did not seem to have a good range. If Bai Yunfei leaned backwards slightly, the dagger would not be able to

cut him at all. But, right when Bai Yunfei thought that he could avoid this blow and was preparing to withdraw the spear to attack again, something unusual suddenly happened!

Zhang Yang's unbent right arm suddenly became longer by nearly one and a half inch, thrusting the dagger straight at Bai Yunfei's throat!

This is a soul skill, Long Arm Fist!

It had a very ordinary name, was a soul technique of the lowest tier and was also the only soul technique Zhang Yang had mastered so far. It was not very powerful either. Just as its name implied, it was a soul technique which allowed the arms to stretch a bit further.

However, sometimes it could be unimaginably effective, for example, at present!

Zhang Yang had been restraining himself all along, and only now did he use this soul technique. This was because he wanted to catch the opponent by surprise and put it to the best use possible.

Facing the dagger which was suddenly shifted to aim at the side of his neck, even though Bai Yunfei was startled, he did not panic. He gave up attacking immediately and bent backwards abruptly again. The tip of the blade grazed him, causing a small wound on his chin, several drops of blood oozing out. However, despite having prevented this blow from cutting his throat, he lost his balance and fell backwards.

His eyes glittering with ferocity, Zhang Yang gave the dagger in his hand a flip, instantly switching from a forward grip to a reverse grip, and thrust it straight at Bai Yunfei's throat!

While falling backwards, Bai Yunfei pulled his right hand back. The spear in his hand immediately disappeared. At the same time as Zhang Yang flipped his dagger, he made a flick with his right hand, shooting a dagger straight at Zhang Yang's face.

Seeing that his dagger was about to pierce into the opponent's throat, Zhang Yang already had a look of ecstasy in his eyes. However, when he saw Bai Yunfei suddenly shoot a streak of cold light at him like a flash with a flick of his right hand, he was extremely frightened and could no longer keep up his attack. He then leaned his head to one side forcefully without hesitation, avoiding the flying dagger.

In the blink of an eye, another dagger came at him!

# Chapter 27: A Battle for Vengeance!

## (Fourth)

---

He had just avoided the first dagger, but the second dagger was already coming at him!

His eyes filled with terror, Zhang Yang leaned his body to one side and avoided it with difficulty. Afterwards, he retreated continuously without pausing. Only when there was a distance of over ten meters between them did he stop, still suffering from the shock. He reached out his hand and gave the right side of his face a wipe, scattering several drops of blood. Just then, if he had been half a moment slower, the dagger would not have left only a small bloodstain on his face.

Bai Yunfei placed his left hand on the ground, stopping his body from continuing to fall down, then he stood up again by slightly exerting the strength of his arm. Looking at Zhang Yang, who was standing in front of him staring at him, he had a disappointed expression on his face. It seemed he was lamenting that just then he had failed to kill the opponent.

“He did that on purpose! He did that on purpose again!! How is this possible?! Could it be he saw through my movements? Damn it!” Not daring to take his eyes off the opponent even for a moment, Zhang Yang roared in his mind: “It’s bad. I’m no match for him. I can’t fight him again. Let’s run away! As long as I can get out of here, as long as I can catch someone else’s attention, my helpers will come rushing very fast...”

Having made up his mind, Zhang Yang quickly glanced around. A hint of happiness flashed across his eyes because at the moment he was standing at a place which happened to be less than five meters away from a window!

Staring at Zhang Yang in front of him, just when Bai Yunfei wanted to get into action, the opponent unexpectedly moved first!

His eyes flashing with determination, Zhang Yang adopted a propulsive position. The moment he took the first step, he copied Bai Yunfei by throwing the dagger in his hand out fiercely. Then, simply ignoring the outcome, he bent his body, turned around and rush towards the rear window on the right.

Bai Yunfei avoided the incoming flying dagger just by slightly leaning his body to one side, but this attack indeed made him pause a bit. Looking at Zhang Yang, who was rushing towards the window, his eyes flashed with a trace of derision. With a shake of his right hand, he threw two streaks of cold light straight at Zhang Yang's back.

Of course Zhang Yang could not forget about the opponent's flying daggers. Since the moment he had run away, despite moving extremely fast, he had been paying attention to Bai Yunfei's movements all along. Now, as the two daggers came flying at him, he immediately forcefully changed his direction from charging forwards to moving sideways in an arc, but he still managed to rush up to the side of the window!

Without pausing at all, he crashed into the window, breaking it. When half of his body was already stuck out of the window, he turned his head around and cast a look at Bai Yunfei in the house, who seemed to be too late to shoot another flying dagger out, a faint cold smile appearing on the corners of his mouth. Stepping on the sill of the window with his right foot, he jumped out.

While he was in midair, his nervous heart finally relaxed. As long as he arrived in the street, it could be said he had got out of danger. At that time, even if Bai Yunfei wanted to pursue and attack him, he would only need to draw the opponent to where his helpers were and the roles of the hunter and the prey would be reversed!

However, right at this moment, he saw Bai Yunfei take a fierce swing with his right hand, seemingly wanting to shoot out another flying dagger.

“Ha ha, now you still think you can stop me from running away? At this distance, even if you shoot several flying daggers at once, I can still avoid them! You already...” Before Zhang Yang could finish thinking, the complacent look in his eyes disappeared in an instant and was replaced with endless terror!

The moment Bai Yunfei raised his right hand, a streak of blue light suddenly appeared. It was immeasurably faster than the daggers from before. Almost at the same time as it appeared, it had already covered the distance between the two of them, caught up with Zhang Yang then pierced straight through the knee of his left leg!

Zhang Yang was in midair and was about to land. As soon as the terror in his eyes appeared, he felt a piercing pain then a burst of extreme coldness come from his left leg. After that he could not feel his entire left leg!

All of this takes many words to describe, but it actually happened in the blink of an eye. Zhang Yang’s body finally landed, but he could not stand firmly at all. His left leg bent in a very unnatural manner and he fell to the ground with a thud.

With a stupefied expression, Zhang Yang forgot to use his hands to keep his balance, forgot about his perforated left leg and even forgot to think...

Only when he felt someone walk up to his face then raised his head to make eye contact with Bai Yunfei’s sneering look did he wake up with a start in a frightened manner. Propping his body up with his hands, he moved backwards nonstop while letting out terrified shrieks: “You... you can’t kill me! I’m the young master of the Zhangs. I’m a disciple of the Glacial School. You can’t kill me!”

Bai Yunfei stooped down, grabbed his collar and lifted him up as if he had not heard his words. He then threw him fiercely towards the house. Zhang Yang cut through the air in an arc, went through the window then fell heavily into the hall. Only after sliding ten

something meters, knocking over several chairs and stools, did he stop.

Zhang Yang's left knee had been pierced through completely, but strangely enough, it was barely bleeding. His hands were clutching his left leg, seemingly wanting to prevent the chill from spreading. He was channeling his soulforce with all his might to dissipate that extreme coldness. Even though he felt cold all over, bean-sized beads of sweat kept sliding down his face unceasingly.

Hearing footsteps coming, Zhang Yang raised his head in a terrified manner and saw that Bai Yunfei had already come back into the house. Holding a shimmering blue piercer in his hand, he was walking towards him step by step.

When Zhang Yang saw the Glacial Piercer in Bai Yunfei's hand, even though he was extremely fearful inside, he could not help screaming hysterically: "Soul armament, another soul armament!! How is this possible? Soul armaments are extremely rare. Not even an elite disciple of the Glacial School like me has one! How can you have so many soul armaments? Could it be you're from the Crafting School?! No, impossible!"

Hearing his words, Bai Yunfei seemed to be stupefied. He then stopped in front of him at a distance of two meters and looked down at Zhang Yang, who was sitting on the floor, with an expression still filled with mockery: "What? The great young master Zhang really doesn't remember me? Oh, indeed, it's already been more than a month since that event, how can you possibly still remember such a 'commoner' as me...?"

At this point, the look in his eyes gradually turned ice-cold, but his voice was still leisurely, as if he was chatting with a friend he had not seen for a long time: "Then, do you still remember Uncle Wu? Ah, if I only say Uncle Wu, you definitely don't know who he is. He was the old man who wanted to kill you with a knife because you kidnapped his granddaughter and beat her to death when she was unwilling to endure your insults!

After that, he was captured and brought into the Coliseum by you and was killed by your subordinate Direwolf..." Bai Yunfei continued to say clearly while staring at Zhang Yang: "There was also a youngster in there with him. Because he accidentally offended a young lady of 'yours' the day before, he was thrown into the Coliseum by you as well... Do you still remember?"

When Bai Yunfei mentioned Uncle Wu and Xiao Yu'er, Zhang Yang's expression changed immediately. And when he finished talking, Zhang Yang's whole face was full of disbelief. He cried in fear: "It's you! It's unexpectedly you! No... How is this even possible?! How could you have become so powerful in more than a month? Even if second young master Zheng had helped you, it would still have been impossible!"

"Now you remember, right?" Bai Yunfei gently stroked the Glacial Piercer in his hand, "Then are you ready to pay for everything you did?"

As soon as he said this, Zhang Yang's face went pale. Propping his body up with his right hand, he moved backwards again. At the same time, he raised his left hand and waved it repeatedly in front of his chest, saying: "Wait! Wait! Don't kill me! Don't kill me! I can give you anything you want! Just don't kill me please!"

"Oh? You can give me anything I want?"

"Yes! I can give you anything you want! It doesn't matter if it's gold, beautiful women or..."

"I want Uncle Wu and his granddaughter to be revived, can you do this?"

"This..."

"Forget it, I'll change to another thing."

"Okay, okay, what do you want?"

"I want your life. You can give it to me, right?"



“You... You’re playing with me!”

“Correct, I’m just playing with you! Prepare to pay for what you did to Uncle Wu and his granddaughter with your life!”

“Wait! Wait! That Uncle Wu’s family is in my hands! If you kill me, all of them will die!” Seeming to suddenly remember something, Zhang Yang shouted loudly at the last moment.

Bai Yunfei’s movement came to a halt right away: “What did you say?!”

“I said, that Uncle Wu’s family is in my hands!” Seeing the opponent’s expression, Zhang Yang secretly let out a sigh of relief. He was not so agitated as before when he said, “His family unexpectedly wanted to avenge him. They were captured by me. I intend to have a show similar to last time when the Coliseum is opened again...”

After saying so, seeming to be afraid that Bai Yunfei did not believe him, he immediately added: “When my father knew about what happened in the Coliseum last time, he was very angry. Plus, my competent ‘gladiator’ Direwolf was killed by you, so the Coliseum hasn’t opened again ever since...

“As long as you don’t kill me, I’ll definitely let them go when I return!” Seeing Bai Yunfei’s expression loosen up a bit, Zhang Yang continued hurriedly: “Uncle Wu lost his life to save you at that time in the Coliseum, you can’t leave his family in the lurch!”

Bai Yunfei’s eyes glittering, he seemed to be having a fierce mental struggle. The hand which was holding the Glacial Piercer dropped down slowly. He also withdrew his eyes slowly from Zhang Yang’s body, as if he was being somewhat preoccupied with something.

However, the moment Bai Yunfei took his eyes off Zhang Yang, the latter’s eyes glittered with endless ferocity and hatred showed up on his face. His right hand, which had been concealed behind

his back, was flicked outwards like lightning and there seemed to be something about to come out of the hand.

The moment Zhang Yang's expression changed, Bai Yunfei, his head lowered and apparently lost in thought, raised his head all of a sudden. His eyes glittering, he took advantage of the fall of his right hand and swung it forwards, shooting a streak of blue light at Zhang Yang's right hand, which was just halfway through being lifted up. Even though he made his move later, it arrived at the target earlier. With a 'pu' sound, it pierced through Zhang Yang's right hand then, after leaving a trail of blood, penetrated into the floor!

Two light blue thin needles about ten centimeters long fell to the floor from Zhang Yang's hand. He looked in stupefaction at his punctured hand. Only after a good several seconds did he let out a hysterical, miserable cry. Clutching his right wrist with his left hand, he shrieked in a mixture of fear and anger: "You! You weren't fooled! How is this possible?... You couldn't have known that there were the soul armaments called 'Icesoul Silver Needles' on my body! How could you see through...?"

"How could I see through your ploy, right?" As Bai Yunfei looked at Zhang Yang's distorted expression, the corners of his mouth slightly curved downwards. It seemed he was sneering at Zhang Yang's arrogance, "You think your lies and acting were perfect?"

"These so-called Icesoul Silver Needles were your last trump cards, right? If you still have another trump card, just use it right now, otherwise..."

"Prepare to pay for everything you did!"

## Chapter 28: Stab Zhang Yang to Death!

---

“How is this possible? How is this possible? How could you know what I wanted to do...?” Zhang Yang was looking at Bai Yunfei in stupefaction as if he had lost all of his strength.

Looking down at his stupefied expression, Bai Yunfei curved the corners of his mouth downwards and shook his head gently, saying: “You mean, I ‘couldn’t have’ seen through your movements? Having fallen into this situation, you’re still so arrogant...”

Hearing Bai Yunfei’s taunting words, Zhang Yang trembled slightly. He looked at him somewhat dejectedly and said in a hoarse voice: “Tell me, how did you find out?”

Bai Yunfei stared at him with a vague smile. Zhang Yang looked him in the eye with a defeated expression. It seemed he had abandoned the idea of resisting completely and only wanted to know the cause of his defeat before his death.

Bai Yunfei stooped down, picked up the two ‘Icesoul Silver Needles’ from beside a rigid Zhang Yang and put them away in his space ring.

“Right from when I started to fight you, I found it strange that you, the young master of the Zhangs in Talus City and an ‘outstanding’ disciple of the Glacial School, didn’t even have a soul armament to protect yourself just in case. Though later you took me by surprise and used that arm-lengthening soul skill, I still didn’t see you use a soul armament.”

Bai Yunfei was still looking down at Zhang Yang from a dominating position, seemingly enjoying this feeling of victory.

“So, there were only two possibilities: One was, you really didn’t have a soul armament. And the other was, though you were concealing a soul armament on your body, it was definitely not a

main offensive weapon like a sword or a saber; instead... it was a projectile used for sneak, surprise attacks!”

“But, I obviously said that...”

“You obviously said that ‘not even a disciple of the Glacial School like me has one’, right?” Bai Yunfei immediately cut him short and continued: “These words seemed to have been said because you were in fear and couldn’t believe that I have so many soul armaments. But, think about it from another perspective... You were simply hinting at me that ‘you didn’t have a soul armament on your body’. Too bad, I took note of this.

“This alone would have made me slightly suspicious at most. But unfortunately for you, I had already guessed about this to a certain extent earlier so what you said only made me even more suspicious.

“You wanted to use these projectiles when I went out through the window to give chase, right?” Bai Yunfei said gently then, paying no attention to an astounded Zhang Yang, he continued: “But there wasn’t a very good opportunity at the time, and you noticed that I had no intention of killing you immediately so you let me throw you back into this place, wanting to find a better opportunity to launch a surprise attack on me, right?

“Do you find it strange that I was able to know about this? You seem to have forgotten that I can also use flying daggers. When you attempted to fish out those two needles behind your back, though you thought your movements were very stealthy, too bad for you, I’m pretty familiar with these movements. I even saw through the way you pretended to move backwards right before your surprise attack just now to fish out your projectiles...

“Lastly, you could come up with using Uncle Wu’s family to threaten me. I must say that you reacted really very fast. Too bad, right from the beginning I knew that you were lying!”

“How... How did you know?” Zhang Yang asked subconsciously

with an already ashen face.

“Because when I went to pay my respects to Uncle Wu two days ago, I still saw his family members!”

“So, your hesitation and inattention were all an act to trick me into using my trump cards...” Zhang Yang said in a powerless manner with a dejected expression.

“Correct.”

“But there are still two things I can’t understand. It’s not even been two months, how did you become so powerful in such a short time? Besides, you’ve got a space ring and at least three soul armaments, could it be you’ve really joined the Crafting School?” Zhang Yang kept asking with a soft sigh. After his original ruse had been seen through completely by the opponent, he seemed to have suffered a very serious blow.

However, quite some time after asking the questions, Zhang Yang still did not get an answer. On raising his head to take a look, he saw Bai Yunfei standing with arms crossed and staring at him derisively with a vague smile on the corners of his mouth.

When making eye contact with Bai Yunfei, Zhang Yang felt as though his mind was read, which immediately sent a chill down his spine. He withdrew his eyes unconsciously. At this moment, Bai Yunfei said in an indifferent voice:

“You... are stalling for time in the hope that someone will rush over here to save you, right?”

“How... how so? In my current situation, you can kill me anytime you want.” Zhang Yang panicked for a moment and shook his head repeatedly. He then said with a sad face: “I only want to clear the doubt in my mind before my death so that I can die without regrets...”

“Oh, but your soul will be destroyed, what difference does it make if you know or not? To avoid any accidents, I’d better kill

you right away.” Bai Yunfei said gently as if he was negotiating with Zhang Yang.

Seeing the expression of puzzlement, unwillingness, terror and despair on Zhang Yang’s face, Bai Yunfei finally could not help chuckling, saying: “You’re wondering why after seeing through your tricks I still wanted to talk to you so much earlier, aren’t you?

“I just wanted to see this expression of yours! Great young master Zhang, how do you feel when someone has you in the palm of their hand and can decide your fate as they wish? Have you ever thought that you’d be like this one day?” Bai Yunfei turned his head to look outside the house and said with a chuckle: “I have to thank your subordinates. Because you wanted to come here tonight, they did a detailed ‘clean-up’. Basically nobody has gone past this place, and nobody has come here to check out the sounds of movement earlier...

“At first I still wanted to play with you for a while more, but I’ve run out of patience. I’m afraid if I keep delaying, something unexpected might happen. Therefore...” He reached out his right hand and the Fire-tipped Spear appeared in his hand instantly.

“Prepare to pay for everything you did!”

Looking at Zhang Yang, who was struggling backwards nonstop with a face full of terror, Bai Yunfei slowly walked up step by step to keep up with him while saying: “When I killed that bodyguard of yours just now, you also saw that explosion effect. I can tell you that this spear has only a 10% chance of activating that effect... Will you be slowly tortured to death by me? Or will you be killed immediately by an explosion?

“Repent! And pray!”

As Bai Yunfei stared at Zhang Yang, who was moving backwards mechanically in front of him, his endless fury could not be concealed anymore and it erupted from his eyes. He thrust his spear at Zhang Yang’s left leg.

“This is for what you owe me! I’m not an ant, and you can’t force me to fight for your pleasure as you wish!”

With a soft ‘pu’ sound, the tip of the spear pierced straight through the calf and penetrated into the floor underneath. Zhang Yang stopped and let out a miserable cry. A scorching feeling went into his mind. The previous extreme coldness in his left leg was dispelled instantly, as if a red hot iron bar had pierced through the calf. He even seemed to hear bursts of hissing sounds and notice a faint burnt smell.

With an ice-cold expression, Bai Yunfei was totally unmoved by Zhang Yang’s miserable cry. He pulled the spear back and thrust it at Zhang Yang’s right leg.

“This is for Uncle Wu, who lost his granddaughter because of you and in the end was killed trying to protect me by your subordinate Direwolf!”

Zhang Yang finally could not prop his body up anymore. His arms became weak and he fell flat to the floor. His miserable cries could not relieve the excruciating pain coming from his legs at all.

“This is for Uncle Wu’s granddaughter, who you tortured to death because she was unwilling to endure your insults!”

His right hand was pierced through again. Zhang Yang already had no strength left to struggle. His face full of despair and fear, he begged for mercy intermittently with his mouth.

“This is for the young girl almost violated by you upstairs!”

When the tip of the spear pierced into Zhang Yang’s right hand, an explosion rang out immediately then blood, flesh and stone fragments were sent flying everywhere. The explosion had caused a hole about the size of a washbasin in the floor, and Zhang Yang’s entire right arm had been blown to pieces!

However, he had also passed out, either from the pain caused by the loss of the arm or from the shock wave of the explosion.

“You already passed out? Now you can’t experience the agony of the moment before death anymore. Isn’t this very convenient for you? Forget it. Just die unconscious!” Bai Yunfei looked at an unconscious Zhang Yang with an ice-cold expression. After pulling the spear back, he thrust it out again fiercely with a shake of his hand.

“The last strike is for all the poor people treated like insects, harmed and bullied by you!!”

Flickering a dazzlingly crimson light, the tip of the spear penetrated into Zhang Yang’s chest.

Straight through the heart!



## Chapter 29: The Green Willow School, Luliu, and Yuhe

---

Bai Yunfei looked at Zhang Yang's corpse in stupefaction. Even though he had taken his revenge, his face was full of grief instead of happiness.

"I've taken my revenge... I've finally killed Zhang Yang with my own hands! Uncle Wu... did you see that? I've avenged you. Now you and Xiao Yu'er should be able to rest in peace in the netherworld..."

Raising his head, Bai Yunfei looked up at the numerous bright stars in the pitch-black sky through the hole in the roof. He then closed his eyes and took a deep breath before exhaling slowly. Eventually, the complicated feelings in his heart subsided.

Before he could consider what to do next, suddenly a chill ran down his spine. A feeling of being observed surged into his mind. Moreover, this feeling was vaguely similar to the feeling of when Zhang Yang's father Zhang Zhenshan had glanced at him.

"Who?!" Bai Yunfei turned around abruptly and took several steps backwards at the same time. Holding the Fire-tipped Spear in his hands, he stared hard at the door of the hall.

"Oh? You're really vigilant, aren't you? As soon as you calmed down, you noticed my presence." A lovely laugh came in from outside the door. After that the door was pushed open slowly and a tall, jade green silhouette appeared before Bai Yunfei's eyes.

It was unexpectedly a woman!

She had waist-length silky hair which swayed slightly as she walked as if it was willow branches dancing in a breeze. Her skin was snow-white, her chin sharp. With a faint smile on the corners of her mouth, she was squinting slightly. It seemed she was engrossing herself in sizing up Bai Yunfei in front of her. Her white

clothes were adorned with various jade green patches resembling willow leaves. They were tightened at the waist, revealing her beautiful figure. She was holding a sword about one meter long in her left hand and the scabbard of the sword was also jade green in color.

The appearance of this woman stupefied Bai Yunfei slightly for a moment, but he reacted immediately. Seeing that she did not seem to have any ill intentions, he gently let out a sigh of relief. Just when he wanted to talk, a lovely shout came from upstairs behind him.

“Senior sister!”

Bai Yunfei was stupefied again. Before he could turn around to take a look, he heard a clatter of footsteps ring out behind him. Someone was running down the stairs behind him quickly. Then a fragrant rush of wind went past him as a petite young girl ran by him on one side to throw herself into the bosom of that tall woman.

Upon seeing this young girl, the tall woman seemed to let out a sigh or relief. She raised her right hand and patted her back gently while saying in a soft voice: “Thank goodness you’re safe. I was worried to death. I left for just a few days but when I returned I unexpectedly couldn’t find you. Then I discovered that you had been kidnapped by an underground gang in the city so I turned over almost all the local criminal groups to be able to find this place. Luckily you’re okay... Right, did they do anything to you? Were you bullied by them?”

Only after lying in her bosom for a good while did the young girl lift her head, saying: “No, I wasn’t. They didn’t do anything to me. They said tonight they would give me... give me to their young master. I know you would definitely come to save me so I didn’t do anything either. About half an hour ago, their young master arrived, then, then this person appeared...”

Her voice was clear and melodious, like that of an oriole, and at the moment there seemed to be a slight sobbing tone in it, so it sounded a bit poignant. At this point, she could not help turning her head around to take a look at Bai Yunfei before turning it back immediately in a timid manner. Then she went and hid behind her senior sister with her head lowered. Her beautiful long hair was covering her face, but it could be noticed that she was quietly glancing at Bai Yunfei in front of her.

Catching a glimpse of her beauty and her jade-like face, Bai Yunfei was entranced for a moment.

Seeing the young girl's expression, that tall girl could not help laughing a bit. She raised her head, smiled at Bai Yunfei then slightly nodded, saying: "I am Qiu Luliu, disciple of the Green Willow School's headmaster. This is my junior sister Chu Yuhe. May I know which school you are from?"

Bai Yunfei, however, did not answer her. Instead, he looked outside the house then swept his eyes thoughtfully over the ordinary people who had been knocked unconscious with broken tile fragments by him earlier in the hall.

The girl called Qiu Luliu had not expected Bai Yunfei not to answer her so she was somewhat annoyed, but upon seeing his movements, she was slightly taken aback for a moment. Then, seeming to have thought of something, she said with a smile again: "Mister, I think we shouldn't stay here for long. Why don't we leave first then find another place to talk to each other?"

Bai Yunfei looked at Qiu Luliu and Chu Yuhe, who frequently looked at him from behind her senior sister, then lowered his head in silence for a long time before saying with a nod: "Okay, I need to consult with you about some things too... Let's go."

Pulling Yuhe, Qiu Luliu walked out of the door. Bai Yunfei took a look at Zhang Yang's corpse again and let out a sigh whose implied meaning was unknown to even himself. Then he raised his head.

The look in his eyes had become clear and resolute again. He quickly walked a circle around the hall, picking up all the daggers he had shot out earlier and Zhang Yang's luxurious dagger, then turned around and went out of the hall. After he caught up with Qiu Luliu and Chu Yuhe, the three of them gradually disappeared into the night.

More than ten minutes after their departure, some of the people lying unconscious on the floor of the hall moved slightly then struggled up with caution. Only after confirming that Bai Yunfei and the girls had really left did they finally let out sighs of relief. But then they were somewhat at a loss. Looking at the three corpses on the floor, they were dumbfounded and did not know what they should do.

“Chief... Chief, we, what should we do now? Should we report to the Zhang mansion right away so that they can send men to capture young master's killer?” The little man who had been knocked unconscious by Bai Yunfei on the street said to the chief beside him while patting his chest in lingering fear. He did not even dare to look at Zhang Yang's damaged corpse.

The chief was staring in a trance at Zhang Yang's corpse. The color of his face was changing repeatedly, sometimes ashen, sometimes very red and sometimes deadly white. Hearing the little man's words, he seemed to be woken up with a start. Suddenly his expression looked extremely angry. He turned and sent the little man flying with a palm strike without a warning sign then roared hysterically: “Report? Report my ass!! He's already dead. How can we go there without getting killed? All of us will be buried with young master!”

The little man was stunned by his palm strike and was sitting on the floor looking at him in stupefaction. After hearing his roars, he immediately quivered -- he was so frightened that he regained consciousness.

“Then... then what do we do? Chief...” A subordinate said in a

somewhat trembling voice on one side.

The chief lowered his head and pondered for a long time then raised his head and said to the men around him: “Now that young master was killed in our place, nobody here can hope to escape being held responsible for this. We all know very well how the Zhang family will act. If we are caught, we’ll definitely be killed and buried with young master!”

After saying so, he looked around and continued: “Wake the other brothers up. We’ll leave Talus City right now. Whatever happens, our lives are the most important thing. Let’s run away as far as possible!”

... ..

In a remote alleyway in the eastern part of the city, Bai Yunfei and the two girls were facing each other, separated by a distance of ten meters. Qiu Luliu smiled at him again, saying: “Just now I already introduced us, but you still haven’t told me which school you are from? Though you’re just a Soul Personage, not only do you have an space ring, you also have many soul armaments. Are you a disciple of the Crafting School?”

“The Crafting School again...” Bai Yunfei thought to himself, “Zhang Yang also mentioned this school earlier. It seems to be a school good with soul armaments. If that is the case...”

Bai Yunfei kept silent for a while then, instead of answering her question, he asked in reply: “Earlier, when did you reach the outside of the door?”

“Oh? What? You care so much about me peeking at you earlier?” Qiu Luliu was stupefied for a short while then covered her mouth and let out a couple of giggles: “He he, never mind, I only arrived less than three minutes before that. At the time you were somewhat agitated, but when you calmed down, you noticed me right away. Being already so alert at the Soul Personage stage, you’re really quite something.”

“You... are a Soul Sprite, right?” Bai Yunfei continued to ask.

“Oh? You can even see this? Not bad, I had a breakthrough to the Soul Sprite stage not long ago.”

“Though you’re very powerful, you’d better leave this place with your junior sister soon. Perhaps you still don’t know that the man I killed was the the young master of the house of Zhang in Talus City, Zhang Yang. His father Zhang Zhenshan is also a Soul Sprite and even a man of the Glacial School.” After thinking for a while, Bai Yunfei warned: “Just now in that hall, you mentioned your identities. I think by that time some of the men lying on the floor must have woken up. Though I am the killer, if they are caught by the Zhang family, they will reveal your identities, giving you two the same trouble.”

Hearing his words, Qiu Luliu suppressed her smile and frowned slightly, saying: “What? That man was the young master of the house of Zhang? If so, this will be a bit troublesome indeed...”

## Chapter 30: Schools of the World!

---

Qiu Luliu suppressed her smile and frowned slightly, saying, “What? That man was the Zhang family’s young master? If so, this will be a bit troublesome indeed...”

“But I didn’t do anything. So what if that head of the Zhang family Zhang Zhenshan finds us? What’s so amazing about his Glacial School? Our Green Willow School won’t be afraid of them!” Qiu Luliu only frowned for a short while in the beginning. After thinking for a while, she said in an unconcerned manner, “Plus, that Zhang Yang unexpectedly wanted to violate my junior sister. Luckily she’s okay now, otherwise I wouldn’t have let him go even if you hadn’t killed him!”

“Right, speaking of which, I still haven’t thanked you for saving my junior sister. To find a clue, I had to spend a lot of time. If not for your appearance, heaven knows what would have happened by the time I arrived.” Seemingly not caring much about the Zhang family and the Glacial School behind it, she skimmed over this topic casually and began to thank Bai Yunfei.

“Since you’ve already thought it over, I won’t mention this again. You don’t have to thank me either. At first I indeed specifically went there to save your junior sister, but after I knew that Zhang Yang would come, it was all about taking my own revenge. As a matter of fact, I can’t accept your gratitude.” Bai Yunfei shook his head and said modestly.

“That... that’s not true. If not for your appearance, that bad guy would have been able to go upstairs while senior sister would have only arrived half an hour later. If not for you, I would have been... I, I am very grateful to you for saving me...”

A timid voice came from behind Qiu Luliu. It was the young girl called Chu Yuhe. Seeming to have finally mustered up enough courage, she leaned out and gave Bai Yunfei a salute. Her voice

sounded melodious and refreshing.

She was about sixteen years old, 1.65 meters tall and dressed fully in light green clothes. Her beautiful long hair was hanging down on either side of her face, covering it a bit, her complexion slightly red. She was looking timidly at Bai Yunfei with her big eyes, appearing very lovely.

“Er... you don’t need to thank me, miss. I killed Zhang Yang just to avenge myself. Even though I saved you, it was merely incidental... Er, what I mean is, I am honored to have been able to save you incidentally... Ah, I’m saying you don’t have to keep this in mind...” Bai Yunfei said while gently waving his hand. He felt uneasy being stared at by her timid eyes.

“Pfff...” Chu Yuhe could not help bursting out a laugh when she heard him speak incoherently and saw him wave his hand while smiling in a silly way. Then she covered her mouth immediately and hid behind Qiu Luliu again in a somewhat embarrassed manner, her little face totally red.

Qiu Luliu could not help laughing either, saying, “Ha ha... I didn’t expect you to be such a simple person, mister.”

“Er...” Bai Yunfei was somewhat embarrassed. In fact, when Chu Yuhe had thanked him, the idea of ‘her becoming devoted to him to return the favor’ had popped into his mind, which had startled even himself. He did not know why he himself had such an ‘immoral’ thought. It was his guilty conscience that made him speak incoherently.

Bai Yunfei gave a couple of dry coughs to ease the awkward atmosphere then said with a stern expression, “I want to consult with you about some things, miss. Hopefully you can help me.”

“Oh? What do you want to ask me about? Just tell me. You want to ask me how old my junior sister is and whether she’s married, right?” Qiu Luliu still said jokingly with a smile.



“Senior sister, you...” Behind her, Chu Yuhe immediately pulled her sleeve in a lovely manner to protest.

“Er... Ahem, Miss Qiu Luliu, I want to ask you about that Crafting School. What kind of school is it? And where is it?”

“Oh? Then you’re not from the Crafting School? Plus, you don’t even know these tidbits?” Qiu Luliu asked somewhat doubtfully, no longer joking with him.

“I’m not a disciple of any school. I just came across an elder of the Fate School and managed to obtain a technique to train the soul from him. But I haven’t joined a school.” Bai Yunfei explained.

“What? The Fate School?!” Qiu Luliu shouted softly, her doubtful expression turning into a surprised one.

“Oh, what? The Fate School is very famous?” This time it was Bai Yunfei who asked doubtfully.

“Very famous? Not only ‘very’ famous, I think you’re one of the very few soul cultivators in the entire Tianhun continent who doesn’t know about the Fate School.” Seeing the doubtful expression on his face, Qiu Luliu continued in a somewhat frustrated manner, “The Fate School isn’t one of the ten great schools in the world, but it’s almost on par with them in status. The Fate School believes in fate and pays particular attention to following Heaven’s will. Its cultivation technique is extremely special. According to legend, the people of this school use their souls to sense Heaven’s will and use their ‘fate souls’ to find out the path of fate, thus being able to know the past and predict the future.

“Many schools in the continent consider it an honor to be given directions by the Fate School. Every time they encounter a catastrophe, they all hope to obtain directions from the Fate School. Moreover, every school helped by the Fate School has been able to turn danger into safety in the end. Only, whether they will offer their help depends solely on the word ‘fate’ they believe in. It

can't be forced. Plus, the Fate School seems to never have taken part in power struggles and stay in seclusion perennially so it's quite mysterious. The location of the school is even known to only a few people. Every disciple of the Fate School who goes out to gain experience is desired and courted by the major powers in the world."

Bai Yunfei was somewhat absorbed in listening. He had not expected the Fate School to be such a formidable school.

"Since you were taught by an elder from the Fate School, did you learn that secret method for peeking into the future?" At this point, Qiu Luliu looked at Bai Yunfei with glittering eyes.

"Er... I have to disappoint you, miss. That elder only taught me the most basic soul cultivation technique and gave me this space ring and some soul armament. There wasn't that mysterious secret technique you mentioned at all."

"Oh, I see..." Qiu Luliu said with some disappointment, "That's right. How can the secret technique of the Fate School be taught to an outsider easily? I think it's possible that this traveling elder of the Fate School worked out that he and you are destined to be connected so he conveniently gave you an opportunity to change your life. This kind of thing has frequently happened in the Tianhun continent before."

"It was because we are destined to be connected?..." Bai Yunfei thought for a while about what the old man from the Fate School had said. He could not help forcing a smile inside because now he knew that he owed the Fate School a debt of gratitude.

"That Crafting School is one of the ten great schools in the world you mentioned? What are the ten great schools? And please tell me in detail about the situation of the Crafting School, Miss Qiu." Bai Yunfei continued to ask after pondering for a while.

"It seems you really don't know anything?" Qiu Luliu had no choice but to shake her head and explain as if she was teaching

something to a child, “The ten great schools in the world are the Tianhun School, the Crafting School, the Soul Refining School, the Beast Taming School, the Wind Lightning School and the Five Elements schools.

“The Five Elements schools definitely isn’t the name of a single school. Rather, it’s the collective name of five schools, consisting of the Metal, the Wood, the Water, the Fire, and the Earth Schools. Starting from the Soul Sprite stage, you can control the natural elements. Most soul cultivators are affiliated with one of the five elements, therefore these five schools have been very successful in terms of disciples. Of course, the other five schools have a lot of disciples too. In fact, each individual element school is inferior to the other five schools and is even only slightly stronger than the few schools which are very close to reaching the top ten schools in status.

“However, the five elements reinforce each other and are like birds of a feather. These schools have been in alliance and doing things together since they were created. It’s because of this that they are listed among the ten great schools together. Of course, you could also regard these five schools as a single school, but then it would become ‘top six schools’ instead of ‘top ten schools’.

“The Wind Lightning School is a school that mostly uses techniques related to wind and lightning for cultivation. It’s usually in disagreement with the Five Elements Schools. It fought the Water School once, and when it was winning, the other four element schools came to help the Water School and greatly damaged the Wind Lightning School’s vitality. They have been feuding with each other ever since and both sides’ disciples often fight as soon as they see each other.

“The Beast Taming School is a very special school. The people from this school almost never use their own bodies to fight. Instead, they mostly control soulbeasts. Unlike the other soul cultivators, who can form a spiritual bond with only one soulbeast,

they seem to be able to control multiple soulbeasts directly using a secret technique, just like controlling puppets. Therefore this school is the arch-enemy of all soulbeasts. Rumor has it that a level 8 soulbeast in the depths of the Soulbeast Forest once led an army of soulbeasts and attacked this school's headquarters, wanting to rescue the soulbeasts enslaved by the Beast Taming School. But they had to fight the controlled soulbeasts. According to legend, the Beast Taming School even unleashed a level 8 puppet soulbeast in this battle. In the end, both sides suffered great losses, but I don't know the specific circumstances.

“The Soul Refining School doesn't refine their own souls, but other people's souls! If the Beast Taming School is the arch-enemy of all soulbeasts, this Soul Refining School is the arch-enemy of nearly all soul cultivators! All the people of this school are very evil and malicious. Their cultivation technique is extremely strange. They absorb other people's souls to strengthen themselves. The most powerful people among them can even refine other people's souls to absorb the power of soul essence! Even though the world of soul cultivators is a place where might is right and power talks, the Soul Refining School is publicly accepted as an evil power that everybody has the right to punish!

“The Tianhun School has the same name as the empire. The only reason for this is -- the Tianhun School is a school controlled by the imperial clan of the Tianhun Empire! As a school built with the resources of an empire, it's worthy of being the most powerful school of the continent. In the school, able people are present in large number and new talents never stop coming out. It's also the most ideal school in the eyes of most ordinary soul cultivators. The headmaster of the Tianhun School is the reigning emperor, His Majesty emperor Wu Hong, and at least half of the vassals in the sixteen provinces of the empire came from the school. It can be said that the Tianhun School is the empire's protector. It seems to never participate in power struggles but it checks and balances the powers in the world all the time. In addition to the wise politics

and management of successive emperors, the empire's two-thousand-year prosperity must be due in part to this Tianhun School."

"Prosperity, wise politics and management?..." Bai Yunfei curved his mouth slightly downwards in an unnoticeable manner while thinking to himself with a mental shake of his head, "This is only true in the case of those who are rich and live happy lives. It's just your wishful thinking. Only a few people know about the darkness at the bottom of the society and the painful struggles of those 'lowly' people..."

With her teacher mode on, Qiu Luliu seemed to become more and more excited as she talked. Perhaps because she found the way Bai Yunfei was listening to her earnestly like an obedient child amusing, she covered her mouth and gave a gentle laugh then continued, "Next, I'm going to explain to you the situation of the Crafting School, which is what you want to know the most..."

# Chapter 31: Romance by Rescue Isn't Believable

---

As soon as Bai Yunfei heard that she was going to talk about the Crafting School, he cleared his head of thoughts and focused his attention to listen to her.

Qiu Luliu was very satisfied with his behavior, as if she was a teacher. She gave a gently cough and said slowly: “The Crafting School’s headquarters is located on Mt. Chixia, the highest mountain in Pingchuan Province in the north of the empire.

“Just like in the case of the Fate School, all the big schools are unwilling to provoke the Crafting School and even have to do their best to be on friendly terms with this school. This is only because of one thing—soul armaments!

“Naturally, the Crafting School is good at making equipment. Soul armaments are extremely valuable to ordinary soul cultivators, but I heard that anybody in the Crafting School has at least one soul armaments. You should know that having a powerful soul armaments can increase the power of a soul cultivator by several dozen percent, or even several times! Most of the many famous soul armaments in the continent came from the Crafting School. Even the headmasters of the Skysoul Schools throughout history, who are also the emperors throughout history, have all been using the soul armaments specifically made for them according to their requests by the Crafting School. And the major powers and many powerful figures in the world of soul cultivators want the Crafting School to tailor-make super powerful soul armaments for them so much that they won’t hesitate to offer the school precious materials or to promise to do something for it in return.

“There are definitely other powers and individuals capable of making soul armaments in the continent, but even if two soul

armaments are of the same tier, the one made by the Crafting School will still be slightly better. However, the Crafting School won't rashly make soul armaments for other people, firstly because it's very difficult to make soul armaments and also because they're unwilling to let soul armaments become too widespread. Of course, to say 'widespread' is a bit too exaggerating, but looking from a certain angle, the Crafting School can indeed control the number of low-tier soul armaments in the world of soul cultivators, so it can be said that this school is one of the fulcrums of the major powers in the world of soul cultivators.

“The Crafting School is exceptionally strict about disciple admission. It almost only accepts soul cultivators whose soul essence has an affinity with the element of fire. And they still have to be extremely talented in craftsmanship to be able to obtain the secret special crafting methods in the school. Otherwise, they will become an outer disciple at most, practicing ordinary crafting methods. Even so, when any disciple of the Crafting School goes down from the mountain to gain experience, regardless of whether they are an outer disciple or an inner one, few people will provoke them, because you just don't know how many soul armaments this relatively weak soul cultivator in front of you actually has on their body. Fighting enemies of higher levels and killing them by using many soul armaments is not difficult to disciples of the Crafting School at all.”

Having said so much, Qiu Luliu seemed to be somewhat tired. Only after pausing for a while did she say smilingly again: “That's the basic situation of the Crafting School. So... you intend to go and ask to join this school, right?”

“Oh? How do you know?” Bai Yunfei blurted out subconsciously upon hearing her question. He was actually digesting the large amount of information which had just been obtained.

“You paid such a close attention to the Crafting School. If I still couldn't guess it, wouldn't I be a big fool?” Qiu Luliu gave him a

glare somewhat discontentedly, as if she was blaming him for underestimating her intelligence.

Bai Yunfei lowered his head in silence again for a long time. Just when Qiu Luliu somewhat impatiently wanted urge him, he lifted his head and cupped one fist in the other hand to the two girls, saying: "Thank you so much for explaining these things to me, Miss Qiu. I think the city will be plunged into chaos very soon. I've still got something else to do. The two of you should also leave quickly."

Seeming not to have expected him to suddenly suggest leaving, Qiu Luliu was stupefied for a while then said: "Yeah, it's about time I returned to my school as well. This time, when learning through experience outside, I found this extremely talented junior sister so it's been a worthwhile trip. I also want to bring her back to my school as quickly as possible to let my master see this good disciple I took in on her behalf."

It turned out this was what had happened. Previously Bai Yunfei had found it strange that Chu Yuhe was the same as an ordinary person despite being a disciple of the Green Willow School. It turned out her training was yet to start. However, unexpectedly, an ordinary person's talent for cultivation could be tested directly? He had not thought that this was possible before.

"Oh, good. It's time for us to say goodbye! Later if I have a chance, I hope I can see the two of you again!" After saying so, Bai Yunfei turned around and walked down the alley, heading for the outside.

"Wait... Wait! Mister, you still haven't told us your name!" Chu Yuhe ran forwards two steps and shouted to Bai Yunfei's silhouette. Seeing him about to leave from behind Qiu Luliu, she had immediately become somewhat impatient.

Bai Yunfei's body jerked slightly, but he did not turned around. He raised his right hand and waved it backwards, saying: "I am Bai



Yunfei. Miss Yuhe, after returning to your school you have to train hard, so that later nobody can insult you easily!”

Watching Bai Yunfei’s silhouette gradually going away, Chu Yuhe was somewhat entranced. There was a faint trace of depression on her face.

Qiu Luliu walked up to her side, gently patted her head and said smilingly: “What’s wrong, junior sister? Could it be you like this mister?”

“No... That’s not true! Please don’t talk nonsense, senior sister...” Chu Yuhe turned her head in a non-compliant manner and explained with a totally red face, “I’m just, just grateful to him for saving me... At the time, that bad guy was about to go upstairs but you still hadn’t come to save me. There was already a trace of despair in my heart. I even prepared to kill myself to protect my purity...”

Qiu Luliu’s expression froze. She held Chu Yuhe to her bosom in an embrace and said with a face full of pity: “I’m sorry. It’s my fault. If I hadn’t insisted that you should stay here then gone and inspected the destruction of that Blackwood Stronghold, you wouldn’t have been kidnapped by those people. In the end I even came here too late. Luckily you are all right, otherwise I’d be regretful for the rest of my life.”

Chu Yuhe raised her delicate little face and shook her head, saying: “No, you’re not at fault, senior sister. It was only because I didn’t listen to your advice by going out alone for a walk in the street that I was captured. Besides, aren’t I okay now? You don’t have to reproach yourself, senior sister...”

At this point, she could not help leaning her head to look in the direction of Bai Yunfei’s departure, mumbling: “Luckily he appeared. When I was almost in despair... he came down from heaven and single-handedly fought against three soul cultivators...”

Seeing her expression, Qiu Luliu was somewhat concerned. She righted her body, put her own hands on her shoulders and said seriously: “Junior sister, I have to warn you that you can’t believe in this rescue romance thing! Many young aristocrats and playboy soul cultivators have used this trick to cheat girls into falling for them.”

At this point, seeing a slight discontented expression emerge on Chu Yuhe’s face, she continued hurriedly: “Er... Of course I’m not saying that Bai Yunfei is this kind of person. He’s really a hero, plus he’s a real gentleman instead of someone who wants to be repaid as I thought at first. However... because he doesn’t take the rescue of you to heart, you definitely must not take him into your heart. This is very dangerous. You can’t fall for him... You already know his name, right? Bai Yunfei, he’s like a white cloud floating in the sky. You can’t make him stay...”

“What are you taking about, senior sister? I don’t like him... You’re thinking too much...” Chu Yuhe explained herself in a somewhat embarrassed manner after being warned by Qiu Luliu this way.

“Alas... I hope so. Anyway, later the two of you probably won’t have a chance to meet again so you’ll slowly forget him.” Knowing that it was useless to say more, Qiu Luliu sighed with a shake of her head.

Chu Yuhe looked at the empty alleyway in a somewhat stupefied manner again. Even she herself could not tell clearly how she was feeling in her heart.

“I really won’t see him again...?”

## Chapter 32: Soul Warrior Stage and Acupoints

---

The night was not over yet. Only, the bright moon had already moved from one side of the sky to the other. Even the insects in the grass were making much less noise than earlier, as if they had fallen asleep because of being unable to endure the loneliness of the late night.

Bai Yunfei went out of Talus City right after bidding farewell to the two girls.

In front of Uncle Wu's grave...

"Uncle Wu, I have fulfilled my promise to you. I already killed Zhang Yang with my own hands. Now you and Xiao Yu'er can rest in peace in the nether world...

"Uncle Wu, later I probably won't be able to come see you again. I have no intention of staying in Talus City and even in the Azure Cloud Province. I want to leave this place to look for the path of my own life.

"I have decided the destination. Hopefully I can live the kind of life I want to live at that place...

"Uncle Wu, though we only spent half a day together, you gave me a warm feeling similar to what my grandpa had given me. In the end, you even died to save me... I will engrave the words said by both my grandpa and you in my heart!"

Bai Yunfei kowtowed three times respectfully to Uncle Wu's grave. When he stood up, the sorrow on his face gradually faded away, replaced with an unparalleled determination!

"I'm leaving now, Uncle Wu. No matter what problems I will have to face in the future, I will definitely live free and with a clear conscience!"

The moment Bai Yunfei turned around and left, a subtle change suddenly occurred in his body. His body, which had always been slightly bent unconsciously, was now perfectly upright. That trace of confusion and sadness in his eyes had disappeared. Now his clear eyes were filled with confidence and resolution.

With the death of Zhang Yang, Bai Yunfei had taken his revenge and his state of mind had changed quietly again. He was already no longer that lowly and weak coolie who had struggled for survival by moving rice sacks in a rice store. Instead, he was now a powerful soul cultivator who could fight for his ideals!

An invisible aura was emitted from his body. Within this small area, the remaining several insects which were crying suddenly became quiet. Even the moonlight in the surroundings seemed to ripple because of Bai Yunfei's aura.

"I broke through... The Soul Warrior stage!" As Bai Yunfei felt the surging soulforce in his body, he was somewhat stupefied. He raised his right hand, holding it before his eyes, and clenched it with force. It seemed he was making sure if this feeling was real or not, "For the last two days, no matter how I have practiced, my soulforce hasn't increased at all. I also guessed that this was the sign of me being about to break through to the Soul Warrior stage. Originally I planned to go to Li Chengfeng's place then use the Upgrade Technique under his protection to break through this final barrier. Who would have thought I would have a breakthrough in this way?!"

"Looks like in addition to the increase of soulforce, a stage breakthrough is closely related to the state of mind as well. It's good that I understand this now. Later it would save me many detours..."

Bai Yunfei walked up a hillside, turned to take a look at Talus City, which was still shrouded in the darkness of the night, then turned around and went in the other direction.

“Talus City is about to be thrown into chaos. I can’t let the Zhang family discover my whereabouts. After saying goodbye to mom and grandpa again, I’ll leave immediately...”

... ..

The next day, the entire Talus City was plunged into extreme chaos and panic.

This was because almost all of the various underground forces in Talus City had been turned over the previous night!

Normally these dens of bullies had fearsome reputations and nobody would dare to provoke them, but it was said that a woman had single-handedly stormed these places and injured countless gangsters. The bosses of some gangs had even almost been crippled. And the enemy’s goal was only to find a person, a young girl kidnapped by a certain gang in the city.

How could a woman do this kind of thing? She certainly could, because she was a soul cultivator! Moreover, she was an extremely powerful soul cultivator! It was said that the boss of the Axe Gang, who was also a soul cultivator of the Soul Apprentice stage, had been unable to withstand even a single strike from the opponent and got one of his legs broken directly!

However, this was definitely not the main cause of the chaos in the city.

The main cause of the chaos was that the young master of the house of Zhang, Zhang Yang had been killed in the same night!

His body was discovered in the headquarters of a gang in the city. Zhang Yang and his two bodyguards were all dead and the members of the gang in charge of that area had all disappeared!

When Zhang Yang’s mother heard this news, she almost passed out. And when she really saw her son’s damaged corpse, she fainted immediately. Only after her servants hurriedly gave her emergency treatment did she finally slowly wake up then throw

herself on Zhang Yang's corpse and weep in agony.

“Send for master right away! Mobilize all the forces! I want everybody to carry out a search!! Search for those runaways of that gang and find out who killed my son! I want his entire family to be buried with my son!!”

Therefore, Talus City was plunged into chaos. Almost every family was interrogated and searched by the Zhang family's men. Even those gangs which were dependent of the Zhangs all dragged their injured bodies around looking for the runaways.

At first, the people in Talus City were all at a loss, but after knowing about what had happened, they were somewhat flustered and accepted in fear to be interrogated and searched by the Zhang family's overbearing men.

However, there was an unutterable 'pleasant surprise' in their heart—Zhang Yang had unexpectedly been killed! Could it be a certain deity had shown up and heard their prayers?

Of course, no matter how excited they were inside, they could not show it. Even though Zhang Yang was already dead, the Zhangs were still around. Therefore, they could only wait until the investigators had left to shut the doors, look up to the sky and laugh quietly then pray that the 'great benefactor' who had killed Zhang Yang would not be captured.

Talus City was in turmoil, the Zhang family's men were anxious and nervous and the common people in the city were secretly celebrating—but the initiator of everything, Bai Yunfei, was hurrying to Li Chengfeng's house.

After going quickly for a day, he was already very far from Talus City. He found a farmhouse in hope that he could stay there for a night. The farmhouse owner agreed very readily and refused to accept the reward money Bai Yunfei took out. He received him very enthusiastically. Even though the dinner was simple, Bai Yunfei was able to experience the honesty and enthusiasm of this

family.

At night, Bai Yunfei sat with legs crossed on the bed. Holding a gray scroll in his hand with his eyes closed, he was studying the acupoint control method of the Soul Warrior stage.

A long while later, he slowly opened his eyes, but they were full of doubt. Only after staring at the scroll in his hand in a daze for a while did he put it away in the space ring.

“The final stage of the Three Stages of Body Control is greatly different from the skin-flesh control and bone-blood control from before... Unlike the skin, the flesh, the bones and the blood, these so-called acupoints aren’t so easy to find at all. Even though I know where they are, I just can’t feel them.

“Plus, why does my mind feel familiar with some acupoints? It seems like I knew them before... That eye-related ‘Mingmu’ acupoint, why do I feel that it should be called ‘Jingming’ acupoint? And that ‘Danchi’ acupoint in the elbow, I feel that its name is ‘Xiaohai’...”

“I always feel that there seems to be memories not belonging to me hiding in my head. They should have appeared together with that ‘Equipment Upgrade Technique’, but they are extremely vague and seem to be hiding in the depths of my mind. I just can’t take the initiative and examine them...

“But they don’t seem to do any harm. Plus, that feeling of familiarity with these acupoints in my mind can help me sense their existence better.

“But even though I’ve meditated several times, I still can only manage to sense the ‘Mingmu’ acupoint in the eyes. Worse still, I can barely sense its existence and can’t control it... Could it be I’m not talented enough?”

If Han Xiao, the chieftain of the Blackwood Stronghold killed by Bai Yunfei, knew what he was thinking, perhaps he would be

stimulated so much that he would go back from the dead then vomit three liters of blood and die again. In the past, he could only sense the existence of the first acupoint after spending a whole month. Of course, Han Xiao was really not talented enough, but even most of those who were fairly talented would need several days to be able to sense the first acupoint when they tried to learn the acupoint control method after reaching the early-stage Soul Warrior level.

However, Bai Yunfei had needed less than a day before he could vaguely sense then first acupoint. What kind of ‘talent’ was this? Of course, at the moment Bai Yunfei still did not know at all how great a help this vague feeling of familiarity with various acupoints in the body would be to his cultivation...

“I can’t even sense the several most basic acupoints, how can I still practice the Wave Treading Steps?... Alas, I really look forward to this body-maneuvering soul technique. I want to practice it sooner to check it out.” With a turn of his wrist, a white scroll appeared in his hand—it was none other than the last soul technique scroll in the space ring.

The Wave Treading Steps was a high-human tier soul technique which used several acupoints in the legs as the basis in coordination with a special soulforce channeling method and a special footwork pattern to increase the user’s speed and dexterity. Body-maneuvering techniques caused no direct damage but they could play an extremely important role, whether when you were fighting, giving chase or fleeing.

Bai Yunfei looked at the scroll in a daze for a long time, fantasizing about how this soul skill would turn out to be. Only after that did he put the scroll away in the ring, pat his forehead and say to himself: “I thought too much again. If I want to practice this soul skill sooner, I have to learn how to control these several dozen most basic acupoints as early as possible. At least I have to be familiar enough with acupoint control before practicing this soul



skill...”

In fact, there were only about ten something basic acupoints that needed to be controlled at the early-stage Soul Warrior level, but Bai Yunfei was studying a ‘textbook’ given to him by that old man from the Fate School. Some of the acupoints recorded in it were relatively ‘precious’. In ordinary, small schools of soul cultivators, even only the headmasters can learn cultivation methods which used these acupoints.

However, Bai Yunfei did not know this. He only thought that they were ordinary acupoints that a Soul Warrior had to control...

# Chapter 33: Meeting Li Chengfeng Again

---

In the morning of the next day.

Bai Yunfei slowly opened his eyes after practicing for a whole night. At that moment, his eyes seemed to flash with a trace of light. They then returned to normal, seeming not to have undergone any change, but the expression in his eyes also seemed to be clearer than before.

“It’s really inconceivable. I can only control the Mingmu acupoint, and worse still, at an elementary level, but my vision is already much better than before. Not only can I see farther now, I can also see much more clearly...” Bai Yunfei thought to himself as he looked around for a while.

“Then next I’ll study those several basic acupoints in the arms first. According to what that scroll says about their effectiveness, if I can control those several acupoints proficiently, I should be able to use the second level of the Overlapping Waves Art called Ninefold Fist Force with relative ease!”

In fact he could already use the Ninefold Fist Force earlier when he had still been a late-stage Soul Personage, but the price would be too high. After just one use, his arm would be paralyzed for half a day, and even worse, it would hurt excruciatingly. Therefore, he had only used the Threefold Fist Force in the battle earlier.

“If I can use the Ninefold Fist Force proficiently, I’ll become much more powerful. And if I can even use the Ninefold Thrust... then unless something unexpected happens, basically every time I thrust the Fire-tipped Spear out, its explosion effect will be triggered. At that time...” At this point, Bai Yunfei could not help starting to fantasize again.

After bidding farewell to this simple and honest family, Bai Yunfei continued to head for Li Chengfeng’s house.

He trained along the way. After taking several detours confusedly, in the evening of the fifth day, Bai Yunfei finally arrived in Li Chengfeng's current village again.

Seeing Bai Yunfei again, Li Chengfeng was naturally very happy. The other people in the village also showed special enthusiasm for him when they knew that he was the visitor because they considered him their 'benefactor'. The entire village held a 'welcoming banquet' for Bai Yunfei as if they were celebrating a festival, making him feel quite embarrassed.

At night, it was pleasantly quiet in the village. Most of the people had already turned out the lights and gone to sleep. On a small hillside outside the village, Bai Yunfei and Li Chengfeng were sitting with legs crossed.

"Not long ago, a good several batches of men suddenly showed up around here one after another and asked people in the village about that Blackwood Stronghold. Luckily I had already instructed them earlier so they all handled this pretty well. Besides, I had already hid those horses deep behind the mountain when noticing that the situation had been abnormal. Luckily it seemed those men didn't think that a village like ours would have something to do with those bandits, so they all left after casually asking some people..." Li Chengfeng slowly recounted what had happened recently while gazing at the several dots of lamplight yet to be put out in the village.

Bai Yunfei nodded, saying, "Yeah, you did a great job. We definitely can't let them know that we were behind the destruction of the Blackwood Stronghold, otherwise the village will be put in danger. But I think they won't pay attention to this place again. After all, nobody would suspect a small village like this one."

Then he turned his right hand over. The three scrolls appeared in his hand. He held them out to Li Chengfeng, saying, "You've already reached the Soul Personage stage. Tomorrow you should start practicing the second stage of body control, the bone-blood

control. You can also practice the soul skill in this scroll. The last scroll requires you to reach the Soul Warrior stage to practice. Just leave it there for now.”

“Oh? Is it okay to give me all of them?” Seeing him hand over three scrolls at once, Li Chengfeng asked doubtfully as he received them.

“Never mind, of course I have remembered all the contents before giving them to you. Now I don’t need them anymore. I’ll stay in the village for a while and wait until I have become proficient in acupoint control to leave. During this period of time, you can ask me if you have any questions about cultivation.” Bai Yunfei said smilingly.

Li Chengfeng gave his wrist a shake and the three scrolls disappeared. They had been sucked into the space ring in his finger -- it was none other than the former space ring of Han Xiao, chieftain of the Blackwood Stronghold.

“Right, have you finished doing what you wanted to do when returning to Talus City this time?” Li Chengfeng asked in a seemingly very casual manner.

Bai Yunfei nodded, saying, “Yeah, I’m done with it. I won’t go back to that place anymore. I intend to leave Qingyun Province directly in a while and go to Pingchuan Province, which has a school of soul cultivators called the Crafting School. I want to go there to study under a master.”

“Oh, it’s a good idea to leave too. You’re like a floating white cloud. A small place like this can’t make you stay, right?” Li Chengfeng added smilingly as if he was joking, “Unfortunately, I’m still too weak, otherwise, I’d really want to go on a journey with you...”

“Give me a break...” Bai Yunfei scolded jokingly, “You just got married not long ago, but you’re already thinking about the teeming world outside? Don’t tell me you’re willing to part with

your precious Ling'er? And if you want to travel the world with your family now, even I will disagree with you. Can you protect Ling'er?"

"Er... I wasn't serious about that." Li Chengfeng scratched his head in an embarrassed manner, "Of course I'm aware of these things so you can rest easy. Before making a breakthrough to the Soul Warrior stage like you, I definitely won't consider leaving.

"However, now that I've already got this kind of power, I can't stay in this hamlet for life. Eventually I'll have to go and experience the outside world. At that time, can we still meet again?" Li Chengfeng said in a longing tone while looking up at the numerous stars in the sky.

"That goes without saying! We'll definitely meet again. At that time, you can't be too weak!" Bai Yunfei said smilingly, "I just got a one-step head start on you, and nothing more. When the time comes, you can go to the Crafting School to find me. Or if you join another school, make a name for yourself, I'll come and find you at that time...

"Right, I've learned a bit about schools in the world recently. I'll tell you about them so that later you'll be well aware of the situation..."

Bai Yunfei then told Li Chengfeng carefully what he knew, including the information on the ten great schools, before continuing, "I don't know much about the Soul Sprite stage after the Soul Warrior stage either. I only know that from the Soul Sprite stage, you can control the power of the natural elements. It seems when you make a breakthrough to this stage, you'll have to choose the type of element you'll want to control, and this will have something to do with the attributes of your soul essence. In short, after reaching the late Soul Warrior stage, you'd better choose a school and train under a master's expert guidance. If you grope about in the dark by yourself, you can easily run into problems."

Li Chengfeng was somewhat stupefied. Only after a good while did he murmur, “The outside world is really splendid! I’ll definitely train a bit faster then go and experience that big world!”

“Hey! Did you really hear what I said?”

“Uh, mm, I did. You don’t have to worry. I’ll be careful...”

“... ..”

... ..

Just like that, Bai Yunfei then stayed in this hamlet. However, he did not come here to enjoy a quiet, comfortable lifestyle at all. He knew that he would have to leave this place and Qingyun Province soon.

What he had to do now was practice, practice and practice, to master the acupoint control method and become proficient in his soul techniques. He had to make every effort to improve his power so that later he could face the ever-present threat of being hunted down...

# Chapter 34: Explode! Explode! And Explode!

---

In the next several days, Bai Yunfei trained almost as hard as he would in a 'closed-door session'.

He studied the method for controlling those 'basic' acupoint in meditation almost all the time. And at night, his time was not wasted either. Instead of sleeping, he spent time increasing his soulforce. Because Bai Yunfei spent nearly all his daytime studying acupoints, he basically did not have time to improve his soulforce. However, he had his own method for improving his soulforce with ease!

This method was naturally the Equipment Upgrade Technique. At the moment, he was staying in this hamlet near Li Chengfeng so he did not have to worry that there would be danger after he passed out. Therefore, he used the Upgrade Technique to exhaust his soulforce directly every night. The next day, by the time he woke up from his unconsciousness, his soulforce would have already improved -- this was really convenient.

However, there was a little trouble, namely, the numerous items stored in his interspatial ring had almost been used up by him in just several days. Nearly all of these ordinary items were destroyed before they could reach +10, turning into piles of scrap metal as if they had been in existence for countless years before this.

Later, Bai Yunfei had no choice but to change his method. Before going to sleep, he practiced the body control or the soul skills to use up most of his soulforce, then he used the Upgrade Technique to exhaust his remaining soulforce. Because of this, every night he would 'jump around' like mad before going to bed. The villagers who did not know what was going on even thought that he had too much energy and a well-meaning auntie even suggested introducing a girl to him to help him...

However, the result of such 'arduous training' was: after seven

days, he could already more or less control the several acupoints in his arms and manage to use the Ninefold Fist Force without suffering too much from the side effect. At last, he had accomplished the first goal. Next he would have to train the acupoints in his legs then begin to practice the Wave Treading Steps.

His soulforce had been increasing steadily by twenty something points a day. It had been twelve days since he had reached the Soul Warrior stage. In the first five days, which was also the time it took him to go from Luoshi City to this village, he only used the Arte of Training the Soul to improve his soulforce. After the last seven days, now the numerical value of his soulforce was about 1500 points. Bai Yunfei guessed that the threshold for the middle Soul Warrior stage should be about 1600 points. In other words, he would reach the middle Soul Warrior stage in a few days.

In terms of items, although the chances of successful upgrades were extremely low, after many upgrades, he still ended up with more than ten +10 items such as sabers, swords and sticks.

Perhaps inspired by Bai Yunfei, Li Chengfeng trained very hard too. He even spent much less time with his precious Ling'er. However, Ling'er was a good wife so she did not complain about this at all. She was also sincerely happy upon seeing the joyful expression he had when training together with Bai Yunfei.

By the time of Bai Yunfei's arrival, Li Chengfeng had already been a Soul Personage for a while. Recently he had been practicing the bone-blood control method and the Overlapping Waves Art he had just obtained, all while having to improve his soulforce through cultivation. Even so, after the first two days, he still broke through to the mid-stage Soul Personage level. His power had been increasing steadily. This even made Bai Yunfei wonder if he might also possess a shortcut capable of improving soulforce like the Equipment Upgrade Technique...

This day, in the afternoon, Bai Yunfei went into the mountain



forest behind the village alone, found a secluded place and sat down with legs crossed -- at the moment he wanted to do an important thing -- upgrading his items -- upgrading those +10 items!

All along, Bai Yunfei had considered +10 the limit of the upgrades. Now that he already had quite a few +10 items, he decided to upgrade them to even a higher level so that he could gather even more information about the Upgrade Technique. Anyway, these were all ordinary items so even if they exploded, he would not be too distressed by this.

Gently taking a breath, he turned his wrist over. A dagger appeared in his hand.

“Let’s get started with a +9 dagger... Upgrade.”

Upgrade Successful
Equipment Grade: Normal Upgrade Level: +10

“... ..”

The information appearing in his mind made Bai Yunfei happy inside, “I was pretty lucky. The first upgrade was successful, then let’s follow it up with the next...

Upgrade Failed
Equipment Destroyed

Seeing the dagger in his hand turn into scrap metal, Bai Yunfei was somewhat disappointed.

“Alas! As expected, it’s not so easy to succeed...”

He took out another +10 dagger.

“Upgrade.”

Upgrade Failed
Equipment Destroyed

He took out another +10 dagger.

Upgrade Failed
Equipment Destroyed

Another one...

Upgrade Failed
Equipment Destroyed

And another....

Upgrade Failed
Equipment Destroyed

“ ... ... ”

.....

“Let’s go all out! This time I’ll definitely succeed. Let’s upgrade these Icesoul Silver Needles!”

“Upgrade!”

“... ..”

.....

After half an hour, there was already a large pile of scrap metal in front of Bai Yunfei. And he was grinding his teeth looking at a saber about one meter long in his hand with an expression full of anger.

Equipment Grade: Normal

Upgrade Level: +11

Attack: 31

Additional Attack: 56

+10 Additional Effect: Attacks have a 3% chance of inflicting knockback.

Upgrade Requirement: 30 Soulpoints

This large saber was none other than the one used his battle against hallmaster Zhong. There were still some nicks on the edge of the blade and there was a hole through the blade caused by the Glacial Piercer.

After staring at the large saber for a good several minutes, Bai Yunfei finally could not help standing up with a whoosh. He threw the saber fiercely to the ground and shouted abuse at it, “F\*ck you! Is there a mistake here?! Five +10 ordinary items of mine and even the two Icesoul Silver Needles were destroyed! They were soul armaments! Soul armaments, damn it! Both of them were destroyed! Now the only thing left is this crappy saber?!”

“Damn it! Damn it!”

The more Bai Yunfei thought about it, the more agitated and

angry he became. He raised the large saber and roared in a deep voice, “Upgrade!”

Upgrade Failed
Equipment Destroyed

The large saber turned into scrap metal and drifted to the ground, which emptied his hand.

Bai Yunfei’s expression stiffened then became even more unsightly, his eyes almost filled with blood. With a shake of his wrist, the Glacial Piercer appeared in his hand.

“I, I...”

Because he was holding the Glacial Piercer with too much force, his hand was almost white and blue veins had popped out of his arm. His entire body was trembling slightly.

Bai Yunfei’s expression changed repeatedly. After struggling for more than ten minutes, he was finally able to suppress the impulse in his mind. He sat down on the ground again dejectedly, put the Glacial Piercer away then looked at the pile of scrap metal in front of him in a daze.

After a long time, seeming to have thought of something, he turned his wrist over and an object appeared in his hand -- it was angular, dazzlingly red and chillingly cold -- it was none other than one of those bricks!

Bai Yunfei had a special feeling for bricks. After all, in the beginning, only because he had accidentally upgraded that brick to +10 had he been able to catch Direwolf by surprise in the Coliseum and kill him to survive. Therefore, he had been keeping a brick in the interspatial ring. Even though it was not that brick, it could be considered a commemorative object.

“Hah...” Bai Yunfei gave a self-derisive laugh, slightly shook his head and thought in his mind, “Upgrade...”

Upgrade Successful

“Er...” Bai Yunfei’s expression stiffened a bit, but he did not care too much about this success. He continued to think in a somewhat frustrated manner, “Upgrade.”

Upgrade Successful

“I... Upgrade again!” His expression changing, Bai Yunfei roared like mad.

Upgrade Successful

“... ..”  
“... ..”

After being stupefied for half a minute, Bai Yunfei acted the same as before. He stood up with a whoosh, threw the brick to the ground fiercely, stamped his foot and shouted abuse.  
“F\*ck you! Are you kidding me?!?!”

# Chapter 35: +13 Brick! Hurling!

After being stupefied for half a minute, Bai Yunfei acted the same as before. He stood up with a whoosh, threw the brick to the ground fiercely, stamped his foot and shouted abuse.

“F\*ck you! Are you kidding me?!?!”

... ..

Only after another five minutes was Bai Yunfei finally able to calm his trembling heart and body down. As he picked up the brick, half of which had been sunk into the ground, and brushed the soil from its surface with his hand, he almost burst into tears.

“If I had known it, I would have upgraded the Glacial Piercer...” Staring at the brick in his hand with a complicated expression, Bai Yunfei started to regret upgrading it in his heart.

With a thought, the properties of the brick showed up in his mind.

Equipment Grade: Normal  
Upgrade Level: +13  
Attack: 9  
Additional Attack: 132

+10 Additional Effect: Attacks have a 1% chance of confusing the target for a maximum of 3 seconds.  
(When attacking the head, the chance of confusion increases to 5%).

+12 Additional Effect: Attacks have an 8% chance of stunning the target for a maximum of 5 seconds.  
(When attacking the head, the chance of stunning increases to 15%).

+13 Additional Effect: Attacks have a 30% chance of hurling the target through the air.  
Upgrade Requirements: 50 Soulpoints

“This...” The gloomy expression on Bai Yunfei’s face disappeared in an instant and was replaced with an extremely astonished one, as if he did not dare to believe the information in his mind.

After being astonished for ten something seconds, he put the brick down on the ground again in a somewhat stupefied manner then picked it up once more and examined it. He put it down again, picked it up once more and examined it...

After doing so several times, he was finally sure that this was real. Holding the brick with both hands, he murmured, “This... can also be considered a small compensation for the losses. Though both the Icesoul Silver Needles were destroyed, this one’s additional effects seem not bad either. At least I didn’t lose all those items for nothing...

“Then, let’s go and test its power next!” Bai Yunfei’s dejection had been swept away. He unexpectedly looked a bit excited now. With his face filled with a desire to test the brick, he carried it running towards the village.

Li Chengfeng was lifting a large wooden barrel with each of his hands, running back and forth in the village. Normally, when full of water, the barrels could only be moved slowly with difficulty using a pole by the villagers, but they looked as if their weight did not exist in his hands -- he had just finished his training and was using his break time to help the villagers collect water.

When he had just filled the water tank of a family and was about to go and collect water again, he saw Bai Yunfei rushing back in haste from the mountain behind the village with a brick in his hand and a face full of expectation.

“What’s up, Yunfei?” Seeing him like that, Li Chengfeng asked in a somewhat confused manner.

“Ah, I just got a good thing. Chengfeng, stop what you’re doing first and come test its power with me.” Bai Yunfei said to him while weighing the brick in his hand.

“Er... this one? A brick?” Li Chengfeng asked doubtfully without reacting.

“Yeah, this one. Don’t ask. You’ll know after checking it out. Let’s go!” After saying so, Bai Yunfei went impatiently towards a vacant area outside the village.

“Oh, alright...” Seeing him so eager, Li Chengfeng became a bit curious. He put the wooden barrels down and followed him.

“You put up a good defense first. I’ll hit your shoulder with it to see what will happen.” Having arrived in the vacant area, Bai Yunfei said after thinking for a while.

Despite not knowing what Bai Yunfei had in mind, Li Chengfeng still channeled his soulforce without saying a word, causing the flesh of his shoulder to wiggle slightly for a while. When he had already prepared his defense, he thought doubtfully to himself, “What did he mean? He wants to hit me with that brick? How can this kind of attack be effective against a soul cultivator? Or there’s something special about that brick? But no matter how I look at it, it’s just an ordinary brick...”

Just when he was still guessing to himself, Bai Yunfei walked up to his face and raised the brick in a simple manner without using any technique then smashed it down on his shoulder.

“Bang!”

“Ah!”

Before a soft collision sound could ring out completely, Li Chengfeng’s surprised, painful cry was heard. He unexpectedly could not help taking two steps backwards while massaging his left shoulder nonstop. As he grimaced in pain, he drew in breaths of cold air.

“How is this even possible?! Just now this brick... Yunfei, you didn’t use the Overlapping Waves Art, right? Just like the Threefold Thrust, this was... the Threefold Smack?” Li Chengfeng



asked while staring at Bai Yunfei with a face full of bafflement. He had channeled his soulforce and made the pain in his left shoulder disappear.

“Smack my ass! Just now did I look like I was using a soul skill?” Bai Yunfei snapped then said to himself in an engrossed manner, “Um, but... Threefold Smack? Ha ha, I’ll think about it...”

Li Chengfeng was somewhat speechless. Such a powerful soul skill would really be applied to this brick?

“Yeah, let’s continue. This time you must defense yourself properly.” After thinking for a while, Bai Yunfei said again.

Li Chengfeng was stupefied, “We’ll still test it? What do you actually want to do? Alas... Alright, come hit me again.”

Just like before, Bai Yunfei hit Li Chengfeng’s shoulder with three continuous strikes. This time, Li Chengfeng had already prepared himself by strengthening his defense so despite still feeling a little pain, he did not even move half an inch. He looked doubtfully at Bai Yunfei, who would stare at him hopefully for a few seconds whenever hitting him with the brick.

After the third hit, Bai Yunfei looked at the brick in his hand rather disappointedly and said to himself, “Strange... Why hasn’t it happened yet?”

He then raised his head again looking at Li Chengfeng and said smilingly, “You’re really lucky, Chengfeng...” After that, he smashed the brick down once again.

“Oh? What do you mean? My luck...” Li Chengfeng said in puzzlement, but before he could finish what he was saying, something unusual suddenly happened just when this blow landed on his shoulder!

When Bai Yunfei felt a strand of soulforce flow into the brick in his hand, his eyes brightened, “Here it comes!”

Li Chengfeng, who had still been nonchalant just then, suddenly

flew into the air without finishing what he was saying as if he had been rammed into head-on by a big truck... er, big horse carriage. He flew away more than three meters then, after landing, slid away nearly ten more meters before he finally stopped.

Li Chengfeng sat on the ground with his mouth half-open. He was not injured, but he had been somewhat stupefied by this sudden situation.

“Ha-ha, it was finally activated. This is the ‘hurling’ effect, isn’t it? It’s even more formidable than I thought, ha ha...”

Bai Yunfei’s slightly complacent, happy laughter woke Li Chengfeng up with a start from his stupefaction. He stood up and looked at the brick in Bai Yunfei’s hand with an astounded expression, asking, “Yunfei, what happened just now? My body suddenly flew backwards uncontrollably but I’m not injured at all... Could it be this brick was the cause of this?”

“Yeah, you’re right. It’s miraculous, isn’t it? Ha ha, I’ll explain this to you in a while. Come, let’s continue...” Bai Yunfei stopped talking to himself when hearing his questions then walked towards him again with a totally excited expression.

“Wait, wait! I quit. This is a strange thing. I don’t want to play with it anymore...” Li Chengfeng looked at the brick in Bai Yunfei’s hand, which seemed to be slightly emitting a red light, and said while waving his hands repeatedly. Bai Yunfei’s longing expression had given him the creeps.

“Alas... How can you be like this? It won’t hurt you... That hurling effect just now only has a 30% chance of being triggered.” Seeing Li Chengfeng backing off continuously, seeming unwilling to cooperate with him in his ‘experiment’ again, Bai Yunfei thought for a while then had no choice but to change his tune, saying, “Alas, forget it. How about you hitting me? At least this is okay, right? I’ll have a taste of its effect myself.”

“Er... is this really okay?” Li Chengfeng was stupefied and

stopped retreating. Looking at the brick held out to him by Bai Yunfei, he received it hesitantly. As he weighed it in his hand, a hint of curiosity gradually appeared in his eyes. He then raised his head, saying, “Alright, I’ll help you test it. What should I do? Still hit your shoulder with it? How much force should I use?”

“Let me think... Don’t hit my shoulder. Hit my forehead, okay? But don’t use a lot of force. Just hitting me gently is enough.” Bai Yunfei said after thinking for a while.

“Forehead? Alright, then get your defense ready. I’m hitting you now...” Li Chengfeng was a bit stupefied then said somewhat uncertainly.

“Yeah, just do it, but wait for a while after every time you hit me. Don’t hit me again until I tell you to.” Bai Yunfei lowered his head slightly and warned.

“Oh...” Li Chengfeng slowly held out the brick in his hand and smashed it on Bai Yunfei’s forehead with a small force.

“Bang!”

Although he used a very small force, when the brick hit Bai Yunfei’s forehead, it created a strange soft sound.

Afterwards, just like what had happened to Li Chengfeng earlier, Bai Yunfei flew away a good distance with slight buzzing sounds as if he had been rammed into by a galloping big horse carriage.

Looking at Bai Yunfei, who was sitting on the ground in some confusion, then looking at the brick in his hand, Li Chengfeng was stupefied for a short while then suddenly laughed out loud with his hands holding his stomach.

“What did you say? The hurling effect has an activation chance of less than one to three, right? Ha ha... then looks like I’m really way luckier than you, ha ha!!”

Bai Yunfei struggled up from the ground, brushed the dirt off his body and said in a somewhat embarrassed manner, “Er, that was

unexpected, unexpected... Let's continue.”

“Continue? Alright, alright. Get ready, here I come.” This time Li Chengfeng appeared to be very active and even to be quite enjoying himself. Regardless of what this so-called ‘hurling’ effect actually was, at the moment he found it very interesting and especially delightful.

“Yeah, hit me.” When Bai Yunfei saw that Li Chengfeng’s face was full of expectation, the corners of his mouth twitched in an unnatural manner.

“Hopefully... all the effects will be tested soon...” He prayed to himself in his mind.

## Chapter 36: +13 Brick! Stunning! And Confusing!

---

When Bai Yunfei saw that Li Chengfeng's face was full of excitement, the corners of his mouth twitched in an unnatural manner.

“Hopefully... all the effects will be tested soon...” He prayed to himself in his mind.

After the two of them positioned themselves well, Li Chengfeng continued to hit Bai Yunfei's forehead gently with the brick again and again—his face full of expectation.

When the third blow landed, Bai Yunfei suddenly felt a strange force surge into his head. Before he could react, he felt a wave of dizziness. Suddenly there was only an expanse of golden light before his eyes and he ended up seeing stars. His mind was in chaos and the defense of the skin and flesh on his forehead, which had been reinforced with soulforce, also disappeared in the blink of an eye. He took two steps backwards uncontrollably and was about to topple.

When Li Chengfeng smashed the brick down this time, he felt a strand of soulforce flow into it in an uncontrolled manner. Then he saw Bai Yunfei retreat continuously with unfocused eyes and about to fall down. He hurriedly grabbed his shoulder to help him regain his balance and asked in a somewhat frightened manner, “Yunfei? Are you okay?”

By the time he finished his questions, Bai Yunfei had already recovered. He shook his head, stood upright again and said “I'm alright” before immersing himself in contemplation.

“Chengfeng, just now how long was I in this stunned state?” A while later, Bai Yunfei lifted his head and asked.

“Stunned? Ah, a very short time, only about three seconds...” Li

Chengfeng was stupefied then answered after thinking for a bit.

“Three seconds! But the stunning effect can last for a maximum of five seconds, so in other words, the duration of this effect varies according to the target... In this case, if the target is a bit more powerful than me, he can only be stunned for one second, or even half a second... However, at that level, even half a second of stun would be enough for me to turn the tide in combat...” Bai Yunfei muttered to himself while pondering with glittering eyes.

Seeing the doubtful and concerned look in Li Chengfeng’s eyes upon raising his head, he said laughingly, “Don’t worry. I’m okay. I’ll answer the questions in your mind in detail soon. There’s still one thing that needs to be tested. Let’s continue.”

“Er... continue? Alright, I’ll wait for your explanations.” Li Chengfeng said while nodding in a frustrated manner.

Afterwards, Bai Yunfei experienced the hurling effect twice and experienced both the hurling effect and the stunning effect simultaneously once before finally experiencing the anticipated confusing effect.

The moment this effect was triggered, what Bai Yunfei was seeing suddenly distorted and his mind was in confusion, as if many things had been crammed into it all of a sudden. However, this was not as serious as being stunned because he could still control his body and the soulforce in it, but he also felt a severe lack of coordination.

Shaking his head, he walked forwards half a step and tried reaching out his hand to Li Chengfeng in front of him, but caught nothing.

This strange feeling then disappeared and the world before his eyes returned to normal. Bai Yunfei suddenly noticed that at some point he himself had already moved to a place about two steps away from Li Chengfeng on Li Chengfeng’s left-hand side. But he was not facing Li Chengfeng either. Instead, he had turned right.

“Are you okay, Yunfei? What happened just now? Why did you suddenly seem to lose your sense of direction?” Li Chengfeng walked up to his face and asked in a curious manner.

“I’m okay...” Bai Yunfei shook his head then lowered it to ponder again.

“This is the ‘confusing’ effect, right? It’s similar to stun, but there’s also an obvious difference...”

“Yunfei, what are you thinking? Do I still have to hit you?” Seeing no reaction from Bai Yunfei for a long time, Li Chengfeng could not help asking.

Bai Yunfei raised his head to take a look at him and scolded jokingly, “Are you addicted to hitting? Don’t hit me again. I’m already done with my research. Just give me the brick.”

“Oh...” Li Chengfeng handed the brick over to Bai Yunfei in a somewhat unwilling manner with a disappointed expression on his face.

The corners of his mouth twitching, Bai Yunfei put the brick away, not knowing whether to cry or laugh about this. He then sat down and said, “Alright, now I’m going to answer all your questions.”

Hearing this, Li Chengfeng immediately became interested. He sat down next to him and asked with a face full of curiosity, “Good, good, quickly tell me what happened. How can this brick be so marvelous? Right... Now that I think about it, the two daggers you gave me seem to be quite special as well. I feel they’re similar to this brick...”

Bai Yunfei nodded, “Correct, the two daggers I gave you, this brick, and my Fire-tipped Spear and Glacial Piercer, they all have at least one ‘special effect’.”

“What do you mean?” Li Chengfeng showed that he did not understand.

“Er... they are a kind of effect that is totally out of the ordinary and unimaginable.” Bai Yunfei felt silent for a short while, but he really did not know how he should explain so he had no choice but to give an example, “Take the brick just now for example. Do you think that kind effect which mysteriously sends people flying is in the ordinary? There are also your two daggers. The effect of one of them is ‘attacks have a 2% chance of slowing the target’s speed for 10 seconds’. Do you still remember the first time we teamed up and killed that hallmaster Zhong? In the end, it was only because you triggered this effect were we able to kill him.”

Seeing a pondering expression appear on Li Chengfeng’s face, Bai Yunfei continued, “The other dagger can reduce the recovery speeds of the wounds caused by it. And my Fire-tipped Spear has an explosion effect. In fact, these weapons themselves didn’t possess the effects. I am the one who ‘gave’ them the effects. I’ve got a special ability which causes them to possess these special effects... Now, do you understand after I explained it this way?”

“I... still don’t understand the specifics.” Li Chengfeng shook his head confusedly, “But simply speaking, you have an unimaginable ability which added extra, unimaginable effects to these things, right?”

“Er... that’s right. Your summary is very accurate.” Bai Yunfei said with a nod after thinking for a while.

“Oh, this...” Li Chengfeng was not so astounded or curious as Bai Yunfei had thought. Instead, he pondered calmly for sometime before saying again, “This should be your secret, right?”

Bai Yunfei was stupefied then answered, “Yeah, until now, you’re the first and also the only person who knows this secret of mine.”

“Um, I got it. Don’t worry, Yunfei. I definitely won’t tell anyone about this secret.” Li Chengfeng said resolutely after falling silent again for a while.

Bai Yunfei smiled and hit his shoulder with a punch, saying, “Of



course I wouldn't have let you know about it if I didn't trust you. Why did you give me such a guarantee as if I don't trust you?"

The two of them then chatted for some time about the various effects of the weapons. Li Chengfeng was obviously very curious about this. He even almost failed to resist the urge to take out those two upgraded daggers and cut himself to personally experience their effects. However, Bai Yunfei did not mention the specific details of the Upgrade Technique because they were too difficult to explain. And Li Chengfeng did not ask about them either.

"Right, Chengfeng, can you take a trip to Talus City tomorrow?" Bai Yunfei said to Li Chengfeng, seeming to have suddenly thought of something.

"Oh? Go to Talus City? What do you want me to do?" Li Chengfeng asked doubtfully.

"You go there and buy some daggers. 'Cause you already decided to use the dagger as your weapon of choice, I'll make two powerful daggers for you!"

"Really? Very good! I'll go there tomorrow!" Li Chengfeng agreed in excitement, his eyes brightening.

"Yeah, just go to the 'Treasure Weapon Shop', the largest weapon store in the city. It has the best weapons, and you'll have to buy top-quality ones. Take this money, buy as many as possible and bring them back." Bai Yunfei handed a moneybag over to him. After hesitating for a while, he continued, "When you're in the city... observe if there's any news about me, but be careful so that you won't make somebody notice you."

Without ceremony, Li Chengfeng received the moneybag and put it away in his space ring. Hearing what Bai Yunfei said towards the end, he was stupefied and slightly frowned, but this only lasted for a moment. Afterwards, he seemed to have thought of something and his expression returned to normal. He said with a nod, "Okay, I got it. I'll be careful."

.....

## Chapter 37: Movement From the House of Zhang and Incoming Peril!

---

Two days ago, on the tenth day after Zhang Yang's death, in courtyards belonging to the house of Zhang in Talus City,

The family head Zhang Zhenshan was sitting in the head position in the hall staring at the five men kneeling in front of him with a cold, stern expression. The look in his eyes was sharp as a blade. Nearly all of those five men were trembling from head to toe, their cold sweat streaming down.

"Humph!" After maintaining this suffocating atmosphere for more than ten minutes, Zhang Zhenshan let out a cold snort. The five kneeling men's bodies got a shock almost simultaneously. It was obvious they were even more frightened than before.

"You've... done very well. Less than ten days, you were able to run so far away in such a short time. It took me so long to find you..." Zhang Zhenshan said in an indifferent tone. It was impossible to tell how he was feeling, but all the people present knew that he could casually kill someone anytime now.

"Tell me, how did my son die? And who killed him?" When these questions were asked, even though his tone was still calm, it could not conceal the sorrow he was doing his best to conceal anymore—how could the pain of losing a son be concealed easily?

The five men kneeling before him were naturally those gangsters who had been knocked unconscious by Bai Yunfei right in the beginning of his attack on Zhang Yang then later run away for fear that the Zhangs would hold them responsible for Zhang Yang's death. Although they had tried every means possible to flee, in the end they had still been captured and brought back by the Zhang family's men.

Even the chief of that gang was among these five people.

“Mas... Master, the death of young master Zhang Yang... really had nothing to do with us! That killer specifically came there to target young master. Besides, he is an extremely powerful soul cultivator! We were knocked out to the floor right in the beginning. It really had nothing to do with us! Master, please spare our lives...”

The chief had no choice but to begin to entreat in fear after hesitating for some time. The four people kneeling behind him were so frightened that they did not even say a single word.

“I didn’t ask you about these things!” There was a trace of fluctuation in Zhang Zhenshan’s tone. It seemed he was somewhat impatient.

“Yes, yes... We will tell you everything, master. Hopefully, hopefully you could give us a chance and spare our lowly lives for the moment. We are willing to do our best to help look for young master’s killer!”

“You’re not in a position to bargain!” Zhang Zhenshan’s tone became much more serious. It seemed he could snap and let the fury in his heart explode anytime.

The chief’s entire body trembled once. He did not dare to implore anymore and continued at once, “Yes, yes... That day, the killer suddenly fell down from the roof and knocked out all of us ordinary people with stone tile fragments...”

“What? In other words... none of you saw his face and you don’t know who he is either?” Zhang Zhenshan frowned and said in an ominous tone.

“No, no, actually, I woke up at the last moment, when that man was about to leave, so I heard some things...” The chief hurriedly said again, “That man was alone in the beginning, but a woman appeared at the end of the fight. She seemed to have come to save the young girl captured by us. She and young master’s killer didn’t seem to know each other but in the end they left together!”

“That woman said she, she was a disciple of the Green Willow School called... Qiu Luliu. The young girl caught by us is her junior sister Chu Yuhe...” The chief said earnestly, seeming to be trying hard to recall the situation at the time.

“What? Green Willow School?!”

Zhang Zhenshan’s expression changing for the first time, he suddenly stood up and said in a totally astounded tone.

However, after calming down, he immediately frowned again and said doubtfully, “You said she came to save someone? And you kidnapped her junior sister? Humph! If that was really the case, how could you have kidnapped someone from the Green Willow School?! You want to draw the Green Willow School into this to fool me, right?!?”

“No, no! Master, how could I dare lie to you? That woman really said so. I heard it very clearly!” The chief explained hurriedly.

Zhang Zhenshan stared at his expression and thought to himself, “Looks like he’s not lying. It was really the Green Willow School? Qiu Luliu... elite disciple of the Green Willow School, this time she should be out to gain experience, which means the abducted girl is most likely a commoner she just took in for her school. Plus, looks like she was the one who destroyed nearly all the gangs in the city the other night just to look for that girl. If so, everything makes sense now... Even if she was not in league with my son’s killer, they left together in the end so she definitely knows his identity and whereabouts!”

He was planning in his mind but his expression remained unchanged. After regaining his composure, he said indifferently, “You still haven’t told me any specific information about that killer. Is it because you don’t know anything or you don’t want to tell me?”

“That man was really very careful and didn’t mention his identity at all. I’m, I’m really not hiding anything. Master, if you

find someone from that Green Willow School, you'll definitely know who he is. Please spare my lowly life, master!" The chief entreated miserably.

Right at this moment, a fearful, trembling voice came from behind him, "Mas, master... I, I know some information about that killer's identity..."

"Oh? Quickly tell me!" Zhang Zhenshan frowned and said in a stern voice.

"Before, before killing young master, that man said something..." This man did his best to search his memory for a while then intermittently recited the conversation between Bai Yunfei and Zhang Yang before the latter's death that day.

Zhang Zhenshan listened in silence all along, but the bodyguard standing beside him became more and more surprised. At the end of the recitation, his face was already full of disbelief—this was none other than one of the two men who had captured Bai Yunfei and brought him into the Coliseum before.

When that man had finished talking, this bodyguard hesitated for a while then clenched his teeth. Not daring to conceal anything, he walked to a place in front of Zhang Zhenshan and said in a low voice: "Master, I think I know who that man is..."

After that, using a low voice, he told Zhang Zhenshan everything he knew about Bai Yunfei, including how Bai Yunfei had offended Liu Meng in the beginning, how Zhang Yang had ordered him to bring Bai Yunfei into the Coliseum by force, how Bai Yunfei had fought in the Coliseum, and what had happened to Uncle Wu and Xiao Yu'er.

"What? It's that man?!" After listening to his account, Zhang Zhenshan said with a totally shocked expression, "It's unexpectedly him... But how is this even possible? At that time I also saw him on the street and I got a faint impression that he was merely a weak commoner. Could it be that second young master

Zheng helped him? Impossible, second young master Zheng wouldn't have done so much for a commoner he hadn't known before. Or... he had a lucky encounter and became powerful?

“Forget it, let's ignore these things first. Now that I know his identity, it's already enough!” Temporarily putting aside the doubts in his mind, Zhang Zhenshan raised his head to stare at that man and said indifferently with an ice-cold expression, “So this means you watched that man kill my son without doing anything and then continued to lie on the floor playing possum?”

That man was rejoicing that he himself had provided useful information and was feeling that in the end he should be able to save his own life, so when he heard such words from Zhang Zhenshan, his expression immediately froze. His entire body then quivered and his heart was filled with endless terror. He waves his hands repeatedly in panic and said in a trembling voice, “No... That's not true. Master, I...”

“Humph! Worthless trash, go apologize to my son now!” Zhang Zhenshan simply did not let him finish what he was saying. In an instant, his expression became extremely hostile, as if the man in front of him was his son's killer.

A blur then flashed across everybody's eyes and Zhang Zhenshan appeared in front of that man. He reached out his right hand, grabbed the man's neck and lifted him up into the air effortlessly.

A mass of cold air then spread out from his body. It was definitely not just a feeling of coldness. Instead, it was a real mass of ice-cold air. The temperature in the hall suddenly dropped and everybody cold not help trembling once.

A visible white mist then appeared around Zhang Zhenshan's right hand. The man Zhang Zhenshan was holding in mid-air was struggling nonstop and because he was being held by the neck his face had become very red. Now his face unexpectedly turned pale slowly and became covered with thin ice patches bit by bit.

Eventually he stopped struggling, his hands dropping down powerlessly.

Zhang Zhenshan loosened his grip and this man immediately fell to the floor. His body was obviously very stiff, as if he had been frozen to death in a world of ice and snow!

“Idiot...” The chief secretly sighed as he looked at the corpse of this man. Even though his face was full of terror like the other people’s, there was still a vague trace of... happiness on it.

Zhang Zhenshan swept his eyes over the remaining four people and said coldly, “As for the four of you, I’ll spare your lowly lives for now. If you contribute substantially to the search for that man, then I won’t kill you. Otherwise... you’ll be buried with my son!”

He lifted his head and instructed the subordinates beside him, “Immediately make a portrait of that man and find out who he really is then mobilize all the forces and men to carry out a search for me! Every city, every town, every village... Even if you have to turn over the entire Azure Cloud Province, you must find out where that man is for me!!”

... ..



## Chapter 38: Initial Success With the Wave Treading Steps!

---

In the evening of the fifth day after Li Chengfeng left for Talus City.

in a groove behind the village, under the illumination of the setting sun, a ghost-like silhouette was moving back and forth amidst the trees, sometimes rushing forwards, sometimes moving sideways, sometimes backing off. And sometimes it even dashed straight up a large tree then ‘ran’ down as if the tree was the flat ground or turned to one side and moved forwards nearly horizontally.

This silhouette was moving extremely fast, almost creating a long blur, but strangely enough, there were no sounds of footsteps. Only the sounds of the clothes flapping could be vaguely heard. If an ordinary person came across this scene, he would most probably shout “Ghost!” then run away like crazy.

This silhouette was of course not a ghost. It was none other than Bai Yunfei.

Since Li Chengfeng had left for Talus City, he had been feeling a trace of uneasiness in his heart. For five days in a row, instead of using the Upgrade Technique again to improve his soulforce, he had spent nearly all his time studying and practicing the acupoint control method.

A greatly increase effort naturally led to highly effective training and great results. One day ago, he had finished practicing the various major basic acupoints in his legs, finally meeting the demands he had placed on himself earlier, and had begun to practicing the soul technique called Wave Treading Steps.

This long-awaited soul technique indeed did not disappoint him. Even at the most elementary level of mastery, it already made him

so unimaginably fast and nimble.

Only when Bai Yunfei saw smoke begin to curl upwards from the kitchen chimneys in the village did he stop training. Wiping the sweat from his forehead, he felt extremely comfortable.

“It’s really like seeing an oasis in the desert... Now that I have this Wave Treading Steps, I’m even more confident of dealing with the upcoming crisis!” While pondering to himself, Bai Yunfei walked towards the village, from which the smell of food was wafting out gradually, “Very soon, I’ll have to say goodbye to this tranquil lifestyle! It’s highly probable that I won’t be able to avoid the Zhang family’s manhunt. But in my current state, I’m not afraid of them either! I’m going to counter soldiers with arms, water with an earth weir! When I leave this Qingyun Province, I’ll be like a free fish in an endless sea, a flying cloud in the limitless sky!”

At night, Bai Yunfei was lying on the bed with the back of his head resting on his hands, looking at the several beams of moonlight shining into the house and pondering over the current situation.

“It’s kind of strange... It’s already been seventeen days since I killed Zhang Yang. Why haven’t the Zhang family’s men found this place yet? Even if those gangsters tried their hardest to run away, not all of them would have been able to escape. It would have taken the Zhangs several days at most to chase them down. Then, using their confessions and the Zhang family’s power, it would have been easy to find out who I am. At that time, the Zhangs would have carried out a large-scale search. According to what I thought at first, it would have taken them around ten days at most to find this place...

“This means... it’s possible that when I killed Zhang Yang, Zhang Zhenshan wasn’t at home at all! Plus, he was quite far away from Talus City! There was no decision maker in the Zhangs so they had to wait for Zhang Zhenshan to return, wasting several days...

“If that is the case, didn’t I miss an opportunity to escape? If I hadn’t stayed at this place and had run away immediately...

“That’s not true either. I know absolutely nothing about the extent of the Zhang family’s influence. Plus, I know very little about the world outside. If I had only recklessly wanted to run away, I surely would have had no time to practice, giving up the chance to become several times more powerful in such a short period. If I had chosen to face a danger that could show up anytime in a relatively weak state, it would have been a mistake... Now I’m hiding in this remote place, training hard and making the best use of my time to become more powerful, only this is the correct choice!

“It doesn’t matter what has happened, the fact that the Zhangs has been slow to act is a good thing to me! At least now I’ve already mastered the method for controlling over twenty basic acupoints and even become proficient in the Ninefold Fist Force, learned the Wave Treading Steps and almost reached the middle Soul Warrior stage... My power has increased at least by several times!

“I can already leave anytime now. At least I’ll have to leave before the Zhangs finds this place. I can’t cause the village any trouble...

“After Chengfeng returns, I’ll be able to know the Zhang family's movements. I’ll stay for three more days at most then leave this place.”

... ..

The next day, soon after he ate breakfast, he saw a travel-worn and weary Li Chengfeng hurriedly return with an obviously exhausted expression on his face. Given his current level of power, this meant he had been spending soulforce nonstop without hesitation on the way to rush back at a faster speed than he should have.

In addition to exhaustion, there was even more anxiety on his

face. As soon as he returned to the village, without even greeting Ling'er, he gave Bai Yunfei a hint with his eyes then turned around and walked out of the village.

Seeing him like this, Bai Yunfei was already able to guess a bit. He waved to Ling'er, hinting at her that she did not have to worry about Chengfeng, then followed him.

“Yunfei, I already guessed that you went back to Talus City to take revenge, but I didn't expect your enemy to be the Zhang family's young master... You're really terrific!” Seeming to be really very tired, Li Chengfeng flopped down onto the grass and said to an incoming Bai Yunfei while shaking his head in a frustrated manner.

“Oh, you even know this already? That's right, I killed the Zhang family's young master Zhang Yang because... he deserved to die! Let's not talk about this. Just tell me the current situation in Talus City first. What are the Zhang family's movements?” Seeming to have guessed earlier that Li Chengfeng would say so, Bai Yunfei asked the most important question instead of wasting time explaining.

“Yeah, so what if you killed him. I can also tell that Zhang Yang was definitely a scoundrel. Even though those commoners in Talus City don't dare to talk about him openly, there are traces of happiness hidden in their eyes. I was able to see that.” Li Chengfeng did not mind either and nodded without continuing to ask about Zhang Yang.

“Now your portraits have been posted everywhere in Talus City. Even the men of the mayor's mansion have been mobilized to look for your tracks. Besides, the Zhangs has sent out a lot of men. They have already begun to spread out in all directions to go into every town and village to look for you...

“I think it will take them just a few days to find this place. What do you plan to do, Yunfei?”

Li Chengfeng asked in a slightly concerned manner after telling Bai Yunfei the general situation he had discovered.

“Oh, this is not far from my expectation. If so, I’ll leave here within two days...” Bai Yunfei pondered for a while and said.

“You really have to run away?”

“Yeah, I must run away so that I won’t cause the village any trouble.” Bai Yunfei nodded then put this topic aside, asking, “Right, how many daggers did you buy? What is their quality?”

Seeing that Bai Yunfei had already made a decision, Li Chengfeng did not mention this topic again. He turned his wrist over, taking out a dagger which sparkled with a cold light, gave it to Bai Yunfei and said, “I did what you said and bought all the top-grade daggers in that Treasure Weapon Shop, about a hundred in total. Some of them are even better than this one.”

Bai Yunfei received the dagger and gave it a thought. The basic information about it appeared in his mind.

Equipment Grade: High

Attack: 43

Upgrade Requirement: 3 Soulpoints

He nodded slightly, saying, “Yeah, not bad, it’s indeed a high-quality dagger.

“Just give me your space ring directly. Within the next two days, I’m going to make two upgraded daggers for you. Then I’m going to leave...”

# Chapter 39: +12 Daggers!

---

After receiving Li Chengfeng’s space ring and letting him go to have a rest, Bai Yunfei wasted no time shutting himself in his room and beginning to upgrade those daggers.

Upgrade, upgrade, upgrade again, every time his soulforce was about to be used up, he would stop upgrading the daggers and use the Arte of Training the Soul to recover his soulforce. This way, even though his power did not improve so easily and quickly as it would have if he had used up his soulforce, he was able to reduce the amount of time he was unconscious.

To upgrade a dagger to +8 would need about 100 soul points on average. At the moment, Bai Yunfei had over 1500 soul points, which was approaching the soulforce value of the middle Soul Warrior stage. So, from the early morning until dinner time in the evening, he was able to upgrade thirty-six daggers to +8 in total.

Dragging his slightly exhausted body along, he hurriedly ate dinner then returned to his room to continue with the upgrades.

He turned his wrist over and a rather luxurious dagger appeared in his hand. It was none other than one of those several top-grade daggers Li Chengfeng had mentioned.

Equipment Grade: Superior

Attack: 76

Upgrade Requirement: 6 Soulpoints

Bai Yunfei had seen two superior items before, one being his space ring and the other being the dagger embedded with gems used by Zhang Yang. Moreover, that dagger’s damage was 85 points, even a bit higher than this one’s. However, it had been destroyed a few days ago during an upgrade session.

“Normal, high, superior, rare, inheritance, these are the item grades I’ve seen so far...” Staring at the dagger in his hand, instead of upgrading it immediately, Bai Yunfei summed up the information about item grades.

“The previous three’s damages are all under 100, but the low-rare Glacial Piercer’s damage is over 200. This means... there should still be an item grade in between?

“Does a damage of over 200 fall within the scope of soul armaments? To upgrade the first three item grades needs very little soulforce, but as the upgrade level goes up, the required soulforce increases bit by bit too. However, within the range of soul armaments, a rare item or above requires a fixed amount of soul points to upgrade...

“A high-grade dagger’s original damage is comparable to a +10 upgraded normal dagger’s damage, but... why is the +10 upgraded normal dagger obviously more powerful? Is it because... of the small amount of soulforce poured into it? It’s impossible to pour soulforce into non-soul armaments, but after I upgrade them, this becomes possible. Though only a small amount of soulforce can be poured into these items, they will indeed become more powerful.

“This means, the power of a soul armaments depends not only on the numerical values of its properties but also on the way it is used...

“Then, let’s continue. I must make high-level upgraded items as quickly as possible. There is not much time left. Hopefully I won’t be so unlucky like last time.

“I can rely on nothing but luck every time. Could it be there’s no method for increasing the chances of successful upgrades? Damn...

“Upgrade...”

... ..

The next day, Bai Yunfei shut himself in his room again,

upgrading the items for an entire day.

In the morning of the day after, Li Chengfeng looked at the locked door with a trace of worry in his eyes. Just when he wanted to go over and call Bai Yunfei out to eat breakfast, the door was pushed open from inside with a creak and Bai Yunfei walked out with a slightly tired yet totally excited expression.

“Yunfei, you... Could it be you’ve succeeded?!” Seeing Bai Yunfei come out, Li Chengfeng was stupefied for a moment but then he reacted by asking with some anticipation.

“Yeah, I was pretty lucky so in the end I succeeded. Let’s go check them out!” After saying so, Bai Yunfei was about to go outside.

“Wait, wait! Yunfei, you look tired already. You should wash your face first then have a meal before going. There’s no need to hurry.” Even though Li Chengfeng wanted very much to find out immediately what effective weapons Bai Yunfei had created, he still suppressed the curiosity in his heart and said while pointing to the breakfast on the table.

“Oh... That’s fine too. I’m a bit tired indeed. Let’s eat breakfast first.” Looking at the foods on the table, Bai Yunfei nodded then said to Ling’er on one side, “Right, Ling’er, there’s a lot of scrap metal in my room. I’d appreciate it if you go and clean it out.”

After having breakfast, Bai Yunfei looked much more vigorous. He and Li Chengfeng then went to a vacant area outside the village impatiently.

Seeing that Li Chengfeng’s face was full of expectation, Bai Yunfei laughed and shook his wrist. A dagger appeared in his hand.

Equipment Grade: High

Upgrade Level: +12

Attack: 45

Additional Attack: 176

+10 Additional Effect: Attacks have a 3% chance of blinding the target for a maximum



of 3 seconds.

+12 Additional Effect: When clashing with the weapon of another, this weapon has an 8% chance of severing it.

(The chance of triggering this effect is in inverse proportion to the grade of the enemy weapon. It is ineffective against weapons of the Inheritance grade and higher).

Upgrade Requirement: 61 Soul points

After confirming the weapon’s properties once, Bai Yunfei gave it to Li Chengfeng, saying, “Take this first. I’ll explain to you in detail in a while.”

He turned his wrist over again and another dagger appeared in his hand.

Equipment Grade: Superior

Upgrade Level: +12

Attack: 78

Additional Attack: 202

+10 Additional Effect: Attacks have a 4% chance of creating an illusion.

+12 Additional Effect: In downward attacks with the tip of the blade, the damage dealt is doubled.

Upgrade Requirement: 66 Soulpoints

Because of the information having just appeared in his mind, Bai Yunfei could not help grinning and said to Li Chengfeng, “Hey Chengfeng, why do I feel that you’re luckier than I am? This time, though most of the daggers I tried to upgrade for you were destroyed, one of these two remaining daggers was among those several top-quality daggers. Besides, its effects even make me kind of jealous...”

Li Chengfeng was stupefied for a moment then said in a somewhat embarrassed manner, “Perhaps you should keep and use it. In fact... the two daggers you gave me earlier are very good too.”

“Oh... those two were destroyed already.”

“... ..”

“Ha ha, I’m just kidding. I already said I’d make upgraded items for you, how can I possibly keep it? Plus, do you think I’ll still be short of this kind of upgraded item?” Bai Yunfei said laughingly, “Also, I didn’t touch those two daggers because I knew that you would want to keep them as a memento.

“Alright, now I’m going to explain to you the effects of these two daggers. You’ve got to understand and remember them, so that when you use them in combat later, you’ll know exactly what to do.”

... ..

## Chapter 40: Researching Item Stats Again

---

“Alright, now I’m going to explain to you the effects of these two daggers. You’ve got to understand and remember them, so that when you use them in combat later, you’ll know exactly what to do.”

Bai Yunfei then carefully explained the effects of the two daggers to Li Chengfeng. After making sure that the latter had understood and remembered them, he put the dagger in his hand away and replaced it with a +8 normal dagger, saying, “Let’s test their effects in detail now. There are still some things I don’t understand. I need to study them more carefully...”

“Oh, then how do we test them?” Li Chengfeng nodded repeatedly and asked expectantly.

“There’s no need to fight or something. We’ll only research its effects. I’ll use this dagger to defend and you’ll attack me with the dagger in your hand. Just do it slowly. You should already understand this, right? I remember when we were testing the brick last time, you quite enjoyed hitting me with it...”

“Ha ha, I already know what to do, let’s get started.” Li Chengfeng laughed in an embarrassed manner and said.

“Yeah, let’s begin.”

Li Chengfeng raised his dagger and slowly brought it down towards Bai Yunfei. Bai Yunfei also raised the dagger in his hand and blocked this ‘attack’ from him.

“Hm, use a little less force. Let’s continue.” Bai Yunfei looked at the nick that had just appeared on the blade because of the collision and warned.

The two daggers then hit each other this way about a dozen times. The dagger in Bai Yunfei’s hand was already full of nicks. After all, the dagger in Li Chengfeng’s hand towered over it in

terms of damage.

Another slight sound of collision was heard. Bai Yunfei subconsciously wanted to say “It still hasn’t come, continue.” Only, when he had just opened his mouth and these words had yet to come out of it, everything before his eyes turned black and he could no longer see anything.

“Blinding!” After being stupefied for a second, Bai Yunfei reacted instantly by shouting, “Stop!”

In fact, Li Chengfeng had noticed it as soon as this effect had been activated because at that moment, a strand of his soulforce had flowed into the dagger uncontrollably.

Bai Yunfei did not channel his soulforce to resist. Instead, he carefully experienced this ‘blind’ state. Three seconds passed very quickly. The light reappeared and the world in front of him returned to normal.

“How was it, Yunfei? Just now it was the blinding effect, right?” Seeing that the dagger in Bai Yunfei’s hand had remained unchanged, Li Chengfeng knew that the triggered effect should have been ‘blinding’.

“Yeah, you’re right. It was the blinding effect. The whole world suddenly turned into darkness and I couldn’t see anything, but the other senses were left intact.” Bai Yunfei carefully recalled the feeling just then, “This effect is exceptionally useful. If such a situation suddenly occurs during combat...”

“Let’s continue. We’ll test that ‘severing’ effect now.” Bai Yunfei thought for a while and said.

After another dozen collisions, the moment the two daggers hit each other again, Li Chengfeng had a happy expression, saying, “Here it comes!”

Almost at the same time as he said those words, Bai Yunfei felt his hand lighten. The moment the two daggers had come into

contact, there had been no sound of collision at all. The dagger in Li Chengfeng's hand had completely cut through the dagger used to block by Bai Yunfei at one stroke as if cutting through a piece of tofu.

Li Chengfeng looked at the dagger in his hand then at the fallen half of the blade on the ground in a somewhat stupefied manner and murmured, "This... is the 'severing' effect? It cuts through the opponent's weapon directly?!"

Bai Yunfei looked at the half of the dagger in his hand. The cut surface of the blade was smooth. Obviously the dagger had been cut in half without hindrance.

"This +12 additional effect is really terrifying. Severing... though it's hard to trigger if the enemy's weapon is of high-grade, only inheritance grade equipment and above can prevent it from being triggered completely.

"In other words, it can 'sever' all the soul armaments of the same grade as the Glacial Piercer as well!"

... ..

Afterwards, the two of them began to test the effects of the other +12 dagger.

During the test, when Li Chengfeng thrust his dagger out and activated the 'illusion' effect, Bai Yunfei saw obviously that the dagger was aimed at his heart. But when it was about to reach him, it was aimed at his stomach!

The illusion effect made the opponent see an illusory strike as a real strike, confusing the opponent's vision, allowing the user to attack another place by surprise!

As for the other effect, namely, 'in downward attacks using the tip of the blade, damage is doubled', it was self-explanatory so they did not have to specifically do extra research on it.

The two of them tested the effects again and again in that vacant

area for an entire morning. Only when they had understood all the effects completely did they stop.

“I’ve made my decision! These two daggers will be called Severing and Illusion respectively!” Sitting on the ground, Li Chengfeng looked at the two daggers in his hand and said all of a sudden.

“Ha ha, they are yours, of course you’re the one to name them. Did you choose their names according to their effects? Yeah, pretty good names.” Bai Yunfei laughed and said with a nod on one side.

“Yunfei, you’re really terrific. How did you do this? Even the sharpness of these daggers has been improved by god knows how much compared to before, not to mention those marvelous effects.” Caressing the two daggers in his hands admiringly, Li Chengfeng could not help sighing with emotion.

“Yeah, the damages of these two daggers are almost comparable to that of the non-upgraded Glacial Piercer, which means they should have already reached the threshold of soul armaments. However, I’m not sure if they can actually be counted as soul armaments or not. After all, now I still don’t know much about soul armaments.”

At this point, seeming to think of something, Bai Yunfei took out an space ring, held it out to Li Chengfeng and said, “Take your space ring. I upgraded it a bit too. But I didn’t upgrade it to the point where an additional effect would appear because if I had tried and failed, it would have been destroyed for nothing.”

Li Chengfeng received the ring and said doubtfully, “This one can also be upgraded?”

“Just put it on and experience it a bit.” Bai Yunfei laughed and suggested that he experienced it himself.

The moment Li Chengfeng put the ring on his finger, he was obviously stupefied. Afterwards, he looked at his own body and at

the ring on his finger somewhat doubtfully. Then he turned to Bai Yunfei and said with uncertainty, “Yunfei, why am I feeling...”

“You’re feeling that your body is lighter and lithier than before, right?” Bai Yunfei said smilingly, “Your feeling is not wrong at all. The rings I upgrade won’t provide additional damage or defense, but they will increase the body’s ‘attributes’. The one on my finger increases ‘strength’ and yours increases ‘agility’.”

After Bai Yunfei had upgraded this space ring of Li Chengfeng’s to +8, its additional attribute was an increase of 18 points to agility.

“Though the number of additional points is not large, something is still better than nothing. Too bad I don’t have time, otherwise I’d still be able to experiment a bit with the attributes of various kinds of jewelry after they are upgraded to high levels...” Bai Yunfei said with some regret.

When Li Chengfeng heard these words, his expression immediately darkened. He said, “You’re prepared to go? When?”

Bai Yunfei thought for a while and said, “Tomorrow. I’ll have a good rest tonight and leave tomorrow morning.”

“You’re not going to say something to the people in the village?”

“No, I’m not. There’s no need to disturb them. I don’t like a farewell scene with too many people.” Bai Yunfei shook his head, “After I leave, you must warn the people in the village that, if the Zhang family’s men come and ask questions, they must not show any weak points and must act as if they don’t know me.”

“Yeah, I got it. Don’t worry. Everybody has the previous experience of dealing with people who come here to probe so there won’t be any problem.”

... ..

# Chapter 41: Leave....Peril is Coming?

---

At night, Bai Yunfei was lying on the bed, carefully summing up the information about the Upgrade Technique he had obtained in the last few days.

“When the upgraded equipment reaches levels +10, +12 and +13, they will gain an additional effect respectively. Even though the one reaching +13 is just a brick, because the previous two levels always come with an additional effect each, I think when an equipment reaches level +13, another effect will be added to it.

“From 10 to 12 is a step, but when it reaches 13, an additional effect will appear right away. Doesn’t this mean that from level 13 onwards, every time the equipment reaches the next level, it will gain an additional effect? But... now I really don’t have the ability to test this conjecture! It’s already so difficult to upgrade an equipment to +13...”

“Upon reaching +12 and +13, a non-soul weapon’s additional damage will increase almost exponentially. I wonder if the same thing happens to soul armaments or not. Alas, now I can only make guesses because I don’t have so many soul armaments to test them... My Icesoul Silver Needles were destroyed before I could even use them once...

“There are also those various additional effects. They are definitely not always effective, especially the ones come with durations. If the opponent is powerful, he can totally recover before these periods of time end.

“For the moment, I can only gain these bits of information. In the short term, I won’t have time to research in this way again. Tomorrow I’m starting to wander the outside world!”

Bai Yunfei sat up and took out a dagger from his interspatial ring.

“There are still ten something daggers left. They should be just



enough for my soulforce to be used up once more...

“Then, let’s break through this final barrier to reach the middle Soul Warrior stage tonight!

“Upgrade!”

.....

... ..

In the early morning of the next day, when the first strand of sunlight stroked his face, Bai Yunfei opened his eyes slowly.

He sat up, raised his right hand in front of him and clenched his fist, his eyes showing a satisfied expression.

“Middle Soul Warrior stage... I’ve already made every preparation possible. Zhang family... it doesn’t matter how great your influence is, it won’t be so easy to catch me!”

Outside the village, on a hillside, Bai Yunfei looked at Li Chengfeng and Ling’er in front of him in silence for a long time before saying, “Let’s not say more goodbyes, so that we won’t get emotional. Chengfeng, I believe one day we’ll eventually meet each other again. Both of us will make names for ourselves in the big world outside!”

Li Chengfeng kept silent for a while then said with a forced smile, “Alright, then I won’t say much either. Yunfei, you must take care of yourself and make a name for yourself a bit early. Later I’ll wander the outside world with Ling’er. If we can’t manage it, we’ll go and seek refuge with you.”

Bai Yunfei took another look at that tranquil hamlet in the distance, took a breath softly, exhaled slowly then said smilingly to the two of them again, “Then... I’m leaving now!”

After saying so, he turned around and strode away without further hesitation.

Watching Bai Yunfei’s silhouette gradually going away, Ling’er

turned to one side and asked Li Chengfeng somewhat doubtfully, “Brother Xiao Feng, did brother Yunfei run into some problem? Where does he want to go? Why didn’t he stay here and let us help him?”

Li Chengfeng was also watching Bai Yunfei’s silhouette with a somewhat complicated expression. After keeping silent for a long time, he sighed gently, withdrew his eyes and stroked Ling’er’s beautiful hair lovingly.

“Yunfei has his own decisions. He won’t change his mind because of other people. Besides... such a small place as Azure Cloud Province can’t tie him down. Now he has run into a small problem, but I believe he’ll definitely get through this safely!

“The outside world is splendid and the vast sky is limitless. Eventually they’ll let him fly at will like a white cloud!”

... ..

The Crafting School was located in Great Plains Province in the north of the Skysoul continent. The Great Plains Province was separated from Azure Cloud Province by another province called Northern Cliff Province, so there was an extremely long way to go.

After leaving the village, Bai Yunfei immediately headed north. In order to avoid those men from the Zhang family who were looking for him everywhere, he only followed mountainous paths, tramping over mountains and through ravines, hoping that he could get out of Azure Cloud Province in the best-case scenario, namely without being detected.

However, he also knew that this was almost impossible. In terms of finding ways alone, he would have to frequently go to populated places to ask questions so that he would not go in the wrong direction, not to mention he would have to replenish the various daily life necessities in his interspatial ring.

Alas... it is quite troublesome to have a slightly poor sense of

direction...

After three days like this, with Bai Yunfei practicing the Wave Treading Steps along the way, he had already gone a very long way.

Having crossed a wooded mountain top, Bai Yunfei climbed up a large tree and looked around. His eyes suddenly brightened. He then jumped down with a happy expression and scurried towards the foot of the mountain.

“I’ve finally found a place with a lot of people. Judging from its size, it should be a town. Let’s stay there for a night to have a good rest, eat some tasty foods and conveniently ask for direction!”

However, when he had just run away a short distance, he slowed down abruptly with a thoughtful expression.

“However, I don’t know if the Zhang family’s forces are present in that town or not. But this place is very far from Talus City. Plus, it’s a remote place, so they shouldn’t be there... I won’t stroll around outside and will only find a hotel to rest for a night then leave tomorrow. Yeah, there shouldn’t be any problem...”

After making his decision, he sped up again without hesitation heading for that small town not far up ahead.

.....

In the evening in the town of Old Well, on a bustling street of the small town, a youngster who looked travel-worn and weary was going slowly with his head slightly lowered, making it impossible for other people to see his face clearly. He was looking around in a seemingly curious yet actually alert manner.

After quickly buying the necessary goods and materials from various business shops, Bai Yunfei went to the only hotel in town.

In the rather spacious hall of the Happy Arrival Hotel, a few customers were sitting at several tables. As soon as the servant standing at the counter saw a visitor come in, he ran up

solicitously and said with a big smile, “Welcome, sir! May I ask if you stop for a meal or to stay in the hotel?”

Bai Yunfei cast a look at him then lowered his head and walked towards a table in a corner while telling him, “I’m here for both! Bring me all the best foods in your hotel and prepare a room for me. I’ll rest in there after having dinner.”

When he finished talking, he had already walked up to that corner. He then sat down on a stool and did not talk again, putting up an unsociable facade.

The servant looked at Bai Yunfei doubtfully several times, seeming to have rarely seen such a strange guest. Bai Yunfei frowned and said discontentedly, “Why are you still there?!”

“Ah, yes! Yes! Please wait a minute, sir. Your food will be ready very soon!” The servant said repeatedly. It seemed that only now did he react.

Bai Yunfei touched his stomach, which had already begun to protest, and thought in his mind, “I can finally eat a good meal...”

“Er, sir...” A shout rang out in front of him. Bai Yunfei was surprised for a moment. As he lifted his eyes and looked, he saw that the servant had turned around and come back.

“What’s up?”

“Sir, I just want to ask if you need a jar of wine?” The servant bowed in an ingratiating manner and looked at Bai Yunfei with a broad smile, “Our hotel’s vintage Nu’er Hong has a mellow taste and a fair price. It will definitely satisfy you, sir!”

Bai Yunfei was surprised. The first and the only time he had drunk wine had been when he had paid a visit to Uncle Wu’s grave that night. It was during that time that his soulforce awakened completely, turning him into a soul cultivator.

“Whatever. Just bring me a jar then. But quickly get me the food first.” Bai Yunfei did not mind either and said casually.

“Alright! Please wait a minute, sir. Your food will come very soon!”

After returning to the counter, the servant whispered to the innkeeper behind it. It seemed he was reporting on the food and drink the guest had ordered to his boss.

However, Bai Yunfei, who had lowered his head because he did not want to be noticed by other people, did not notice that after the innkeeper heard the servant’s words, his expression changed slightly. He glanced at Bai Yunfei in an unnoticeable manner then took out a portrait from under the counter and secretly compared him with it...

## Chapter 42: I've been tricked!

---

This hotel was rather efficient. Bai Yunfei only had to wait for a while before various foods were brought to him one after another.

Holding a big bowl of cooked rice, Bai Yunfei began to eat quickly almost to the point of wolfing the foods down.

When he was eating with gusto, he saw that waiter come with a jar of wine. After putting it in front of Bai Yunfei, the waiter said ingratiatingly, "Sir, here is your wine."

Bai Yunfei picked up a piece of meat, put it in his mouth then took two mouthfuls of rice and said indistinctly, "Oh, just put it there..."

After saying so, he continued to wipe out the food on the table without caring about the waiter.

The waiter did not leave right away. Instead, he filled a bowl with wine for Bai Yunfei solicitously and said respectfully, "Sir, since the way you eat is so... generous, you must be a sympathetic man. I've always admire the heroes who eat big and drink big like you the most. Sir, please allow me to show you my respect with a bowl!"

"Eat and drink what? I'm not a Liangshan bandit." Finding what he said laughable, Bai Yunfei could not help blurting out.

"What? Liangshan?" The waiter asked doubtfully.

"Er... Cut the crap! Quickly go and mind your own business! Just put the wine there. When I want to drink it, I'll drink it. Don't disturb me when I'm eating!"

Bai Yunfei's movements paused for a moment then he said impatiently. However, he was thinking to himself doubtfully, "Liangshan? What is that? How could I have blurted out these words? This must be because of those strange memories in my mind acting up..."

That servant's expression froze for a moment and his eyes flashed with a trace of disappointment. But he returned to normal immediately and said "Please enjoy your meal" before retreating.

Only after eating three big bowls of rice in a row did Bai Yunfei begin to slow down. And only after eating another two bowls of rice did he feel that this was just about enough. Now he was already 80% full. A soul cultivator's appetite was really unusual. After he had become powerful, he had found himself becoming increasingly more able to eat, and he had guessed that this could have something to do with his high consumption of energy. However, if he wanted, he could go on for two or three days with just some water without eating anything, and this would not affect him much either.

Having nearly eaten his fill, only now did Bai Yunfei remember that there was still a jar of wine off to one side.

Lifting that already full bowl of wine, he gave it a slight sniff and felt that it was a bit pungent, but a mellow scent indeed floated into his nose. After hesitating for a while, eventually he still held the bowl at his mouth with a bit of curiosity.

That innkeeper and that servant in fact had been paying careful attention to Bai Yunfei's movements from behind the counter. Previously, when they saw that he had only been eating the foods without touching the bowl of wine on one side, they were both worried inside.

"Damn it, could it be this man doesn't like wine? If I had known this earlier, I would've drugged the foods!" The innkeeper, either consciously or unconsciously, cast a look at Bai Yunfei and said to himself in a low voice.

"This drug must be mixed into water to be able to affect him in the fastest way possible. Boss, let's continue to wait. He already ordered the wine so he'll definitely drink it." The servant said in a low voice then quietly took a look at Bai Yunfei and said with

pleasant surprise, “You see, boss, he’s about to drink it!”

Seeing Bai Yunfei finally raise the bowl of wine, both of them secretly let out sighs of relief then could not help getting somewhat nervous again.

Bai Yunfei tilted the bowl a bit and took a mouthful of wine. He immediately felt as if a flame had slid into his stomach from his throat. There was unexpectedly a scorching sensation burning in his chest, causing his expression to become very unsightly. He put the bowl down at once and drank several mouthfuls of soup continuously. Only now did he feel much better, but his face gradually reddened...

The innkeeper and the servant were dumbfounded immediately, This man unexpectedly cannot drink wine!!

Bai Yunfei looked at that bowl of wine on the table, shook his head and mumbled, “Alas, I was too agitated that evening so I couldn’t even remember this is what wine tastes like? It’s not very good. Why do so many people like to drink it?”

Afterwards, he did not touch it anymore and continued to eat the foods leisurely. He intended to fill the remaining 20% of his stomach then go and have a good rest.

“Oh?? Why does it feel a bit wrong?” After eating for a while, Bai Yunfei suddenly had a vague feeling that something was amiss, “My head seems a bit dizzy... What’s going on? Am I too tired?”

Bai Yunfei shook his head doubtfully and decided to go into his guest room to sleep. However, as soon as he lifted his head slightly, his heart froze a bit -- all the people who had been eating their meals at the several tables in the hall had unexpectedly left at some point. Now, aside from the innkeeper and the servant behind that counter, he was the only person in the entire hall!!

“This is wrong, this is wrong... I’ve got a situation!” Bai Yunfei patted his dizzy head gently, “At first I was obviously alright,



then... the wine! But I only drank a bit of wine, how can it make me so dizzy? Right, that waiter... was quite strange. It seemed he was afraid that I wouldn't drink this wine.

“Add to that the situation in the surroundings at the moment, why do I have a vague feeling of familiarity with this in my heart?

“This is bad, I've been tricked!”

Bai Yunfei was frightened inside. But when he had just understood his current situation, a loud shout rang out from the place of the counter.

“He's already found out! Come out quickly! Catch him!”

As soon as the innkeeper finished shouting, a large group of men with weapons in their hands rushed in from the kitchen on one side and from outside the entrance then surrounded Bai Yunfei.

After confirming Bai Yunfei's identity earlier, the innkeeper had immediately informed these men of this and they had rushed over quietly. At first they had planned to wait until Bai Yunfei had drunk all the wine and the drug had taken effect to tie him up directly. However, Bai Yunfei unexpectedly did not drink and only consumed a little bit of the wine before he stopped touching it. When that tiny amount of drug took effect, Bai Yunfei also noticed the abnormal situation, therefore that innkeeper had no choice but to call everybody out.

Bai Yunfei only panicked for a moment in the beginning. By the time those men rushed out, he had already calmed down. He secretly channeled his soulforce to dispel that slightly unwell feeling in his head. At the same time, he cast a look at the situation around very quickly.

Thirty something men were surrounding him and they all looked quite strong. At least they could be considered experts among ordinary people.

The leader was a man about thirty years old with small eyes. He

was none other than Zhao Ping, one of Zhang Zhenshan's competent subordinates and a mid-stage Soul Personage. He looked at Bai Yunfei, his eyes flashing with a hint of astuteness, and shouted loudly, "He's drunk some of the drug already. Don't give him time to recover! Catch him right away!"

However, the moment he shouted, Bai Yunfei let out a cold snort and unexpectedly took the initiative by charging towards him before the other people could act!

Bai Yunfei was extremely fast. When Zhao Ping finished talking, he was already about to charge up to his face. His expression changing greatly, Zhao Ping retreated hurriedly and drew a short sword about two feet long at the same time. Without hesitation, he thrust it at Bai Yunfei.

Bai Yunfei swung his right hand upwards. When it went up, it was already holding a small and exquisite dagger. With a loud and clear ding, the dagger warded off the incoming short sword.

Just when he wanted to make another move, he suddenly noticed something happening beside him. A large saber was being swung at his extended right arm. It turned out someone on the side had reacted by starting to attack him.

Bai Yunfei had no choice but to halt for a moment and withdraw his right hand to avoid this saber strike. He had not expected these men to be able to cooperate with each other so well tacitly. Almost at the same time as that large saber was swung at him, Zhao Ping's short sword was thrust at him again. Bai Yunfei had no alternative but to hurriedly back off two steps to avoid this attack.

However, with this backward movement, he retreated into these men's encirclement again!

## Chapter 43: Fleeing and...Worrying

---

That feeling of dizziness in his head slowed down Bai Yunfei's movements slightly. In a moment of carelessness, he was forced back into the encirclement.

The captain of this group of men was none other than Zhao Ping. And the dark-skinned man who had reacted earliest just then by swinging his saber at Bai Yunfei was the vice captain Wei Xu, a late-stage Soul Apprentice.

After forcing Bai Yunfei to retreat, not giving him a chance to channel his soulforce to regain his composure, Zhao Ping shouted loudly again "Catch him!" then took the lead and charged at Bai Yunfei.

In his current condition, the Fire-tipped Spear was unsuitable to be used. Moreover, there was little panic in his heart. Even though the enemy vastly outnumbered him, he had already noticed that they did not have any soul cultivator more powerful than him.

He flicked a stool beside him up with his foot and threw it at a batch of men who were charging at him on the left. Taking advantage of when they dodged it, he rushed over at high speed with a push of his feet.

These men obviously were all very experienced fighters. They were even several times more formidable than the bandits Bai Yunfei had killed before. Knowing that they would be put at a disadvantage if they let him come near them, they immediately retreated several steps. The men who used long weapons then quickly held their weapons out, blocking Bai Yunfei's way.

Bai Yunfei's body halted for a moment. Originally he had wanted to jump out over them, but because some attacks were already coming at him from behind, he had no choice but to turn around to ward them off.

After raising his dagger to block Zhao Ping's incoming short sword, he leaned to one side, avoiding a saber hack from Wei Xu, and forced him to retreat with a kick. At the same time, he withdrew his hand and grabbed a long spear which was being thrust at him. Blue veins popping out of his right arm, he made a fierce horizontal sweep with the spear, forcing the people who were charging up back.

Bai Yunfei shook his head with force. There was already a furious look in his eyes. If he had not been drugged by them, it would not be impossible for him to use all of his power and so he would not be surrounded like this!

After being forced back, Zhao Ping did not stop at all. Holding his short sword, he charged up again. When his sword was about to hack at Bai Yunfei's neck, Bai Yunfei's body suddenly tilted to one side in a strange manner. The moment Bai Yunfei almost hit the ground, he sprung back up like a roly-poly toy. Then he took steps, his legs turning into several blurs. When he turned around, he unexpectedly had already closed in on Zhao Ping.

This was none other than the Wave Treading Steps!

Bai Yunfei raised his dagger and thrust it at the midpoint between opponent's eyebrows! Terrified, Zhao Ping hurriedly lifted his sword to block it, but he suddenly felt a pain in his lower abdomen and was sent flying with a kick!

Just when Bai Yunfei wanted to chase and attack him, a large saber was swung at him horizontally. He gave a cold snort. In an instant, his body tilted backwards, turning into a bunch of blurs, avoiding several incoming weapons successively. Then he dashed out from among these several men, went straight up to Wei Xu's face and threw a punch without pausing at all!

After taking a swing with his saber, Wei Xu only saw a blur before his eyes. In no time, the opponent went up to his face with an attack that was already about to hit him! In panic, he made a

block by raising his large saber and holding it in front of his chest, wanting to ward off this punch with the blade of the saber.

Bai Yunfei's eyes flashed with solemnity and blue veins popped out of his right arm. Carrying along short buzzing sounds, his arm hit the blade in an instant. There was a soft crack as the large saber was shattered directly. Before Wei Xu could rejoice at having blocked this punch, he was immediately knocked over one meter into the air by the punch as if he had been hit by a force of thousands of pounds then fell down towards the rear of the battlefield. After spouting a mouthful of blood in midair, he fell to the floor and did not move at all. Although he was still alive, he was also powerless to fight again.

Overlapping Waves Art, Threefold Fist Force!

Bai Yunfei was in no mood for fighting. Taking advantage of the opportunity created when everybody had frozen with shock because of the strike just then, he took steps continuously, running towards the entrance of the hotel in a blur.

Before he could reach the entrance, his way was blocked again by an incoming short sword—this was none other than Zhao Ping, who had been sent flying with a kick by him earlier.

Facing an obstructive sword, Bai Yunfei's galloping body suddenly came to a halt in a strange manner. Under the opponent's look of disbelief, it leaned backwards then, with his feet being the center, moved in a semicircle like a round object moving in a bowl. When he stood upright again, he was already on the other side of the short sword!

His eyes glittering with coldness, Bai Yunfei swung the dagger in his hand and thrust it at the opponent's heart resolutely!

It was simply too late for Zhao Ping to withdraw his sword to make a block so he had no choice but to clench his teeth and move aside about an inch. He then let out a painful groan as the dagger penetrated straight into his left shoulder.

Bai Yunfei's eyes flashed with a hint of disappointment. Casting a quick glance at those men who had now reacted and were charging straight at him, he suddenly lifted his left leg and kicked Zhao Ping in the stomach again.

A deep bang rang out. The dagger was pulled out, creating a trail of blood, and Zhao Ping's body was shot towards the men who were chasing up like a cannonball. Those men were immediately thrown into disorder.

After sending Zhao Ping flying, Bai Yunfei turned around and rushed out of the door without hesitation.

As soon as he set his foot outside, a black blur suddenly shot out from the shadow beside the door without a warning sign, going straight towards him!

Frightened, Bai Yunfei hurriedly raised his dagger to his chest. At the same time, he changed his footwork, moving away to one side.

That tiny black blur and Bai Yunfei grazed each other. However, it seemingly did not want to attack him at all. When they were passing each other, Bai Yunfei suddenly felt a chill on the back of his right hand, which was being held in front of him. It seemed a small mass of liquid had hit the back of his right hand.

The moment he got out of the hotel, he cast a glance backwards and saw that blur fall to the ground—it was unexpectedly a small gray animal looking like a squirrel.

All the men in the hotel looked on hopelessly as Bai Yunfei disappeared after several dashes. They then looked at their captain and vice captain, both of whom were wounded, and looked at each other in blank dismay, not knowing what they should do.

Zhao Ping was sitting on the floor with his teeth clenched in a cold sweat. That kick thrown by Bai Yunfei just then had been really powerful. If he was an ordinary man, he would probably have passed out by now.

“He already got away. Why are you still standing there?! Quickly go check Wei Xu over!” Only after a dozen seconds did Zhao Ping take a deep breath and manage to scold in a raised voice.

Seeing his subordinates run over to check Wei Xu out like a swarm of bees, Zhao Ping shook his head in a frustrated manner. He then silently channeled his soulforce to heal the injuries on his body. At the same time, he sighed to himself in his mind.

“Alas... I miscalculated. According to the information obtained earlier, this man was obviously just a late-stage Soul Personage when he killed young master. But now it looks like he’s broken through to the Soul Warrior stage. Having a breakthrough in such a short time, perhaps he was already at the peak of the Soul Personage stage when he killed young master...

“He was so difficult to stall. In the entire fight, I could only thrust my sword out a few times. He simply didn’t give me a chance to draw him into a dogfight. Plus, the move he injured Wei Xu with should have been a soul skill! And that ghost-like body maneuvering skill was a soul skill too! He’s obviously powerful but he wasn’t interested in fighting at all. Though in the end he had a big advantage, he still ran away without hesitation... This man has quite an extraordinary mind too.

“According to our investigation, two months ago he was still a mere commoner. What kind of lucky encounter did he actually have?!

“It will be hard to find him now. After he was tricked and surrounded, we still managed to let him get away. Luckily my ‘tracking gray rat’ has already left a ‘mark’ on him so he won’t be able to escape! Now we only need to wait for master to arrive. Afterwards, we’ll just use the tracking gray rat to find out where he is...

“The tracking gray rat’s saliva is effective for three days. A courier pigeon was already released. Given master’s speed, he

should arrive tomorrow evening. That man definitely doesn't know about this so after running away for a day at most, he'll relax his vigilance. And then master will have enough time to catch up with him!

“Not bad... Now looks like this is not a complete failure either.”

... ..

After escaping, Bai Yunfei did not dare to pause at all. Instead, he estimated the directions a bit and ran all the way. Only after running for nearly four hours did he finally stop on a bank of a small river.

Using the Wave Treading Steps unceasingly for such a long period had almost exhausted his soulforce so he had no choice but to stop and rest for a while before he could make other plans.

In fact, if he had wanted it, all the people in that hotel would have been killed. But he did not know if the enemy had reinforcements or not so he would have been in more danger if he had stayed in there longer. Moreover, it would have been pointless to kill them all too, therefore right from the beginning he had only wanted to flee.

That faint feeling of discomfort in his head had already gone away. Bai Yunfei was sitting on a large rock, silently recovering the soulforce he had used.

“I'm still too inexperienced in the outside world. Who would have thought I would fall into the enemy's trap so easily? Fortunately, I don't drink, otherwise...” Recalling that feeling of being drugged, Bai Yunfei still could not help having a trace of retrospective fear.

“Damn it, just how great is the Zhang family's influence? How can they have so many men in such a small town? Could it be every other town is like this too? Impossible, there are too soul cultivators in that group of men. Even if the Zhang family had a



greater influence, it would still be impossible for them to send this kind of manpower to every town. This means... I was too unlucky?" At this point, Bai Yunfei could not help shaking his head in self-derision, feeling rather frustrated.

Actually, he indeed was too unlucky to have arrived in this town of Old Well instead of another town. It just so happened that Zhao Ping's group was looking for his whereabouts nearby. After receiving the secret message from that innkeeper, they immediately rushed over...

"Now that my whereabouts have been exposed, I believe Zhang Zhenshan will definitely rush over right away. It's bad. I still can't stop. I must run even faster away!

"Plus, that small animal at the end of the fight was really quite strange. The liquid left on my hand at the time seems to be its saliva. Why did it want to do this?" Bai Yunfei held his right hand before his eyes and observed it carefully under the moonlight but it seemed totally unchanged.

When he put it under his nose and took a sniff, he suddenly frowned, "There's a slight odor. Could it be... Tracking!"

At this point, Bai Yunfei's expression became unsightly. He stood up and went to the edge of the river, reached out his hands into the water and scrubbed them nonstop. Then he took out his laundry powder and scrubbed them with it again. Only after washing his hands for ten something minutes and their skin had almost reddened did he stop.

He sniffed his right hand again and could no longer detect that strange smell. Only now did Bai Yunfei relax a bit. However, there was still a trace of worry lingering on in his mind.

"Looks like I'll have to plan even further to be able to escape!"

## Chapter 44: Three Days of Tracking and Approaching Mortal Danger

---

In the evening of the next day, in that hotel,

Zhang Zhenshan was sitting at a table with a frosty expression listening to Zhao Ping, who was quickly giving a report on Bai Yunfei's situation beside him.

After he finished listening to the report, Zhang Zhenshan felt silent for a while then suddenly stood up and waved at the tracking gray rat, which was gnawing on a small fruit on the table. The little animal stopped its movements and raised its head to look at Zhang Zhenshan. It was obviously somewhat hesitant, but after Zhao Ping verbally urged it a bit, it quickly climbed on Zhang Zhenshan's shoulder.

"Master, do you want to get into action immediately?" Zhao Ping could not help saying on one side, "To run all the way to this place, you must have used a lot of your soulforce. It would be better for you to rest for a while."

"I can handle myself!" Zhang Zhenshan frowned slightly and said expressionly then walked out of the hotel without hesitation.

Watching Zhang Zhenshan's silhouette quickly getting away, Zhao Ping sighed gently and murmured, "As a Soul Sprite, master should have no problem dealing with a soul cultivator of the Soul Warrior stage. But I always feel that that man is still hiding something. When we fought last time, he certainly didn't use all his power. Hopefully master won't lose himself due to his desire for vengeance..."

... ..

Tracking gray rats were first-tier soulbeasts, the lowest-ranked soulbeasts. They were basically harmless and almost unable to level up, but they were highly valued by some people because they

had a special ability, namely tracking!

If a target's body was stained with their saliva then for the next three days, no matter where the target run to or hide, they could always find the target's location accurately.

Moreover, unless their saliva was washed off with a special liquid medicine, it would be impossible to get rid of it!

In less than three hours, under the guidance of the tracking gray rat, Zhang Zhenshan had arrived at that place on a bank of that small river where Bai Yunfei had taken a rest last night.

After arriving at this place, the tracking gray rat suddenly let out low squeaks. Zhang Zhenshan halted his steps doubtfully and saw this little animal jump off his shoulder, run to the edge of the river and stop for a while, seemingly unsure about something, then run back and forth in that area. He could even see that its little nose seemed to be twitching again and again.

“That man was unexpectedly so vigilant. He carefully washed off the tracking gray rat's saliva at this place!” Seeing the little animal's behavior, Zhang Zhenshan had a somewhat unsightly expression. He gave a cold snort then quietly waited for the gray rat to search, “So what if he did that? Without washing himself with that special liquid medicine, he can only make me spend a bit more time at most. It's impossible for him to escape!”

Sure enough, several minutes later, the tracking gray rat suddenly rushed up along the small river while squeaking excitedly then trotted on Zhang Zhenshan's shoulder again. With a happy expression, Zhang Zhenshan dashed in that direction without hesitation.

His speed had already reached its maximum. As he moved at full gallop, he created buzzing sounds that could even be heard from very far away in the quiet night. The tracking gray rat on his shoulder was also clutching his collar tightly with its little front paws while curling up into a ball so that it would not be thrown

off.

Chasing nonstop for an entire night, only in the morning of the next day did Zhang Zhenshan stop. After resting for two hours and letting the tracking gray rat confirm the direction a bit, he continued to give chase...

Only when the sun went down behind the mountains and the moon began to rise did Zhang Zhenshan stop again in a grove. He took some food out from his space ring and ate it. At the same time, he recovered his spent soulforce.

However, now there was already a vague trace of anxiety on his face.

“Damn it! Just how far away has that man run? He should have run nonstop for a day at most. Seeing that nobody was chasing him, he should have relaxed his vigilance and slowed down... But even though I’ve been chasing at my top speed, I unexpectedly still haven’t found any trace of him!

“If I miss this opportunity, I don’t know when I’ll be able to find him again. If he runs out of Azure Cloud Province, it’ll be near impossible for me to avenge Yang’er!

“Two days has already passed. There’s only one day left. I’ve got to catch up with him tomorrow no matter what!”

The next day, which was also the last day of the time limit for the tracking, Zhang Zhenshan even gave up rest to chase at full speed with all his might nonstop.

In the afternoon, when there was only less than half a day left until the deadline of the tracking, Zhang Zhenshan’s expression became more anxious. There was already even a tinge of despair on his face, “Could it be... I really can’t catch up with him?”

Right at this moment, the tracking gray rat on his shoulder suddenly began to cry in a low tone. Noticing its unusual behavior, Zhang Zhenshan hurriedly stopped and looked at it in a slightly

nervous manner.

The little animal sniffed its nose cautiously, let out two cries again and waved its claws gently, seeming to be somewhat excited.

“We’re getting close?! I’ve finally come near that man!!” Seeing the little animal’s behavior, Zhang Zhenshan could not help shouting in pleasant surprise.

Putting the little animal back on his shoulder, he galloped forwards again.

An hour later, when he was climbing over a small mountain, the gray rat suddenly raised the pitch of its cries a lot, appearing especially excited. Zhang Zhenshan was delighted inside. He looked down the mountain carefully and saw that on a meadow at the foot of the mountain, a silhouette of a person was running towards a forest up ahead.

That person seemed to be a young man. At the moment, even though he was not running at high speed, he was definitely not running slowly either.

As Zhang Zhenshan looked at this silhouette, his entire body began to trembled slightly, his expression was almost distorted and endless hatred and fury erupted from his eyes.

“It’s him! It’s definitely him! Finally, you’ve let me catch up with you! I won’t let you get away. Now pay for the death of my son with your life!!”

... ..

That night, after discovering that the enemy might be tracking him, Bai Yunfei ran quickly for two whole days. Except for when he had to stop to take a rest, he did not stop at all!

Moreover, he did not know if this was a psychological effect or not, but when he sniffed at his right hand again after a period of time, he unexpectedly vaguely noticed that strange odor. This discovery made him worried even more in his mind. Almost every

time he stopped, he would scrub his hands nonstop for over ten minutes, as if this was the only way that could make him feel a bit more at ease...

Two days later, he finally could no longer endure running at high speed day and night. After having a good rest for half a night, he slowed down while continuing to go forwards.

It must be said that thanks to using the Wave Treading Steps unceasingly for two days and nights, his mastery of this soul skills had improved at an unimaginable rate. If he had practiced this technique as usual, even though he was not lazy at all, it would have taken him at least ten days to reach his current level of proficiency with the Wave Treading Steps.

At noon, right after climbing over a mountain, he ate some food then went forwards in this rather large meadow. There was a forest not far up ahead. Bai Yunfei intended to go through this forest to see if he could find a populated place.

Looking at this seemingly endless area of grass and trees in front of him, Bai Yunfei almost felt like crying and murmured:

“This is really... Where am I actually at now?”

## Chapter 45: Go All Out! Fight!!

---

Looking at this seemingly endless area of grass and trees in front of him, Bai Yunfei almost felt like crying and murmured:

“This is really... Where am I actually at now?”

Now he could only be sure that he was indeed heading north, but he had no clue where he was at the moment. He just wanted to go through this forest as quickly as possible and find a populated place to ask for directions.

Just when Bai Yunfei was about to use the Wave Treading Steps to accelerate, his body froze all of a sudden. Seeming to have detected something, he turned around!

He saw a tall silhouette of someone running towards him extremely fast from a distance of more than a thousand meters!

“That direction... is the path I took to come here! This is bad! It’s the pursuers!” Bai Yunfei’s expression changed. He was stunned for just a moment but that person had come another hundred meters closer to him and now he could see his face vaguely.

“This man is so fast, almost as fast as I am when using the Wave Treading Steps to the utmost. Plus, his face looks somewhat familiar...” As his mind was racing, suddenly Bai Yunfei’s expression changed greatly and there was even shock in his eyes. He could not help blurting out, “It’s him! Zhang Yang’s father Zhang Zhenshan!!”

This shock was not a trivial matter. He even took a step backwards uncontrollably with the first thought in his mind being “Turn around and run away.”

However, he abandoned this idea as soon as it appeared and stared at Zhang Zhenshan, who was getting closer and closer to him. Although his expression was still solemn, his eyes were glittering and his mind was working overtime on how he should

respond to this.

“At this point, I can’t run away! If I turn around, my aura will be weakened and I’ll have already lost half of the mental battle. Afterwards, I’ll only be thinking about running away so I won’t be able to fight with determination! This will allow the enemy to dictate everything. Turning my back to a pursuing enemy is a bad choice!

“Be cool, be cool!!

“At that time, the old man from the Fate school said that Zhang Zhenshan is an early-stage Soul Sprite. The Soul Sprite stage has the ability to control the natural elements so the Soul Warrior stage just can’t compare with it. How can I possibly beat him?... But I don’t have to beat him. I only need to injure him, even if I’ll be injured in the process too! As long as I still have the ability to run away! As long as I make it impossible for him to pursue me, this will be enough! He wants to kill me, but I only need to grasp an opportunity to run away—in terms of goals, I’m already at a slight advantage!

“Though I’ve been running away at such a high speed, he’s still managed to catch up with me. This means he must’ve been chasing nonstop day and night, but I just had a full rest—in terms of condition, I’m at another slight advantage!!

“He has to endure the pain of losing his son and is hell-bent on getting revenge but I can deal with him calmly—in terms of mentality, I’m at a slight advantage again!!

“I’ve got upgraded items whose effects are inconceivable to him—in terms of weapons, I enjoy another slight advantage!!!

“If so...

“Let’s go all out! Fight!!”

Several thoughts flashed across his mind. In fact, this only took as long as it would to breathe a few times. When Bai Yunfei made



his decision, Zhang Zhenshan was already less than a hundred meters away from him!

Because this was a flat area, making it simply impossible for him to approach the enemy without being detected, at first Zhang Zhenshan had thought that Bai Yunfei would run away. He had even been ready to pursue and attack him. However, after noticing him, the enemy unexpectedly did not look like he wanted to run away at all.

“Could it be he knows that he can’t run so he gives up? Or... he wants to fight me?!” As Zhang Zhenshan ran fast, the enmity and fury in his eyes intensified, “Very good, since he’s so cocky, this saves me from having to chase and attack him too. I’ll avenge the death of my son right here!!”

Bai Yunfei had a solemn expression. He had already seen that tracking gray rat on Zhang Zhenshan’s shoulder and immediately understood, It’s indeed because of this small animal!

When Zhang Zhenshan closed in on Bai Yunfei, the animal jumped down from his shoulder and landed on the grass on one side of the path.

His eyes glittering, Bai Yunfei reached out his right hand and the Fire-tipped Spear appeared in his hand. After he channeled his soulforce into it, the crimson handle of the spear slightly flashed a red light and a heat wave spread out. Even Zhang Zhenshan, who was already just ten meters away from him, looked a bit surprised by this. Afterwards, Bai Yunfei unexpectedly did not wait for the enemy to come. Instead, he pushed his feet against the ground and rushed up!

Without saying a word, he launched his attack immediately!

When Bai Yunfei took out the Fire-tipped Spear, Zhang Zhenshan was surprised for a moment because he had heard from Zhao Ping that Bai Yunfei should use daggers but now he was using a spear and, moreover... it was a soul armament!

Given Zhang Zhenshan's discernment, he was instantly able to tell that this crimson spear was no ordinary weapon. He was awed inside, but there was no trace of wavering in his heart at all—since the opponent was merely a Soul Warrior, he had sincerely never thought that he would be unable to take him down—even though the enemy had a soul armament, the outcome would still be the same!

Facing Bai Yunfei's spear thrust, Zhang Zhenshan's eyes flashed with a hint of disdain. Without slowing down his forward charge, he slid his feet, making his body lean to one side, and avoided this strike very easily.

Just when he wanted to take two step forwards to close in on the opponent, this spear thrust, which still had some momentum left, was suddenly swept horizontally with the tip of the spear aimed at his throat!

Frowning slightly, Zhang Zhenshan had no choice but to give up charging forwards. With a step of his right foot, he dashed to one side and leaned backwards at the same time. The tip of the spear then almost grazed his chin.

Taking advantage of the moment this spear move ran out of momentum, Zhang Zhenshan let out a cold snort and pushed backwards with his right feet. His body suddenly returned to an upright position. At the same time, he reached out his right hand, curled his fingers to form a claw and thrust it at Bai Yunfei's throat!

Zhang Zhenshan carried out this counterattack extremely fast, bringing his hand to the enemy's throat almost in the blink of an eye, then made a grab with force!

But he was only able to grab a trace of a blur!

Bai Yunfei simply had not pulled the spear back to make a block. Right after his horizontal spear sweep was avoided, he made the Fire-tipped Spear disappear by putting it away in his space ring. At

the same time, he took steps continuously with his feet, making his body lean backwards as if he had lost his balance. But the moment he was about to hit the ground, his body slid to the right in a strange manner and sprung back to an upright position simultaneously like a roly-poly toy.

This was none other than the Wave Treading Steps!

This claw strike had been avoided by Bai Yunfei, but Zhang Zhenshan's expression had remained unchanged. The moment Bai Yunfei stood upright again, he made a reverse sweep with his hand, still aiming at the enemy's throat directly!

Bai Yunfei's eyes flashed with fierceness. Instead of dodging with the Wave Treading Steps, he raised his right hand like lightning. A short blue piercer suddenly appeared in his hand and he thrust it straight at the enemy's incoming right claw!

Zhang Zhenshan's expression changed. It was already too late to withdraw his hand so he gave a cold snort and slightly leaned his hand to one side. The Glacial Piercer stabbed against the palm of his hand but unexpectedly could not pierce into it. Instead, it slid away, creating several friction sparks in the process!

This time, it was Bai Yunfei whose expression changed, showing a look of worry. Moving his feet continuously, he swayed his body, creating several blurs, and hurriedly backed off five or six steps then stared hard at Zhang Zhenshan's right hand.

Now that hand was unexpectedly wearing a white glove which covered the entire surface of the fist and allowed only the fingertips to be seen!

"That glove unexpectedly was able to withstand an attack of the Glacial Piercer without being damaged. It's a soul armament! Moreover, it's of a higher grade than the Glacial Piercer!"

After Bai Yunfei retreated, Zhang Zhenshan unexpectedly did not chase and attack him. Instead, he was also staring at Bai Yunfei's

right hand, or to be exact, staring at the Glacial Piercer in his hand. There was even more amazement in his eyes than in Bai Yunfei's. He could not help saying in a surprised manner, "Glacial Piercer!! The Glacial Piercer is unexpectedly in your hands! Then... you were the one who destroyed the Blackwood Stronghold!!"

As soon as these words were said, Bai Yunfei could not help getting stupefied for a moment. He then reacted immediately, his eyes flashing, "He knows the Glacial Piercer! Then... he's related to the Blackwood Stronghold! Or I should say, the Glacial School is related to the Blackwood Stronghold! That's right. The 'school' those bandits mentioned is the Glacial School. That Blackwood Stronghold was unexpectedly backed by the Glacial School!!"

"You destroyed the Blackwood Stronghold so that I was called back into my school to discuss this matter. Then you took advantage of my absence from Talus City to kill my son!!" Seeming to have understood everything, Zhang Zhenshan said in a mixed tone of amazement and wrath.

Bai Yunfei was stupefied for a moment again, his eyes flashing a couple of times, but he was in no mood to explain to the opponent that this 'cause and effect relationship' he had just reasoned out was incorrect so he slightly curled his lips, saying, "The stronghold was already destroyed, your son is already dead, what's the point of talking about them now? I won't go easy on you just because you guessed right..."

"Humph! You're about to die but you're still acting calm! You've got the Glacial Piercer so Han Xiao's Goldsilk Soul Armor must be on your body, right? That and the spear you were using earlier... Could it be you think that you can beat me or escape from my hands just because you've got many soul armament?"

"Don't waste time trying to make me waver with your words. I know exactly what to do. But you, just moments ago you attacked me without saying anything, yet now you're talking so much. Why? Oh, let me think..." Bai Yunfei said sneeringly then

pretended to ponder for a moment.

“Could it be you’ve used too much soulforce chasing me all the way to this place? Earlier, you relied on that initial surge of momentum to fight a bout with me, but you failed to take me down, so now... you want to seize an opportunity to recover your soulforce?”

As soon as he said these words, Zhang Zhenshan’s expression stiffened. But right at this moment, when a look of amazement appeared in his eyes, Bai Yunfei suddenly gave a laugh. The Fire-tipped Spear reappeared in his hands. At the same time, he pushed his feet against the ground with force and rushed up to attack first again!

The amazement in Zhang Zhenshan’s eyes lasted only for a moment. Even though the opponent had seen through his ploy, he did not panic at all—even if he did not recover his soulforce, he could still kill the enemy!

Bai Yunfei charged up to the opponent’s face almost instantaneously. He then thrust his spear out nonstop, creating an area of spear blurs that surrounded the opponent completely.

Zhang Zhenshan’s eyes flashed with a trace of disdain again. He moved his hands continuously. Almost every time he waved his hand, he hit the tip of the spear, even skillfully and easily. This stormy wave of attacks from Bai Yunfei was unexpectedly withstood effortlessly by him!

After Zhang Zhenshan blocked ten something attacks in a row, there was more and more disdain in his eyes. When he knocked away the spear yet again, he suddenly caught hold of the front end of the spear with a grab. Taking advantage of this opportunity, he took a step forwards, immediately closing in on Bai Yunfei’s face. He then lifted his right hand and threw a palm strike at the enemy’s heart!

The moment he grabbed the spear’s handle, Bai Yunfei’s eyes

flashed with a tinge of light. When the opponent took a step forwards, he immediately took half a step backwards and twisted the spear forcefully with his right hand, which was holding it. Upon withdrawing the Fire-tipped Spear, he put it away in his space ring like lightning. Then he raised his right fist. The moment the opponent threw a palm strike at him, blue veins popped out of his right arm. Staring at the opponent's palm, he struck a fierce blow!

Overlapping Waves Art, Ninefold Fist Force!!

## Chapter 46: The Gap in Power!

---

Facing this palm strike, which was aimed at his heart, Bai Yunfei suddenly took half a step backwards and clenched his right fist. Blue veins popped out of his arm and he struck a blow!

Overlapping Waves Art, Ninefold Fist Force!!

However, the moment Bai Yunfei threw this punch, which he had been planning for a long time, in front of him, Zhang Zhenshan's eyes flashed with a trace of derision!

Just before the fist and the palm could collide with each other, when they were a very short distance apart, this palm suddenly turned into two palms, then four palms, which were respectively aimed at Bai Yunfei's two shoulders, heart and face!

Under the astounded look in Bai Yunfei's eyes, the palm strike aimed at his heart and his fist came into contact. But his right fist went straight through this palm—it was an afterimage!

Facing the palm strike aimed at his face, Bai Yunfei had no choice but to lean his head to one side hurriedly. Half of this palm then went past his face—this was also an afterimage!

Before he could have another reaction, an inconceivably great force already hit his left shoulder—only this palm strike was real!

What shocked him even more was that, as this palm strike came into contact with him, in addition to that enormous force of impact, there was also an even more formidable chill rushing into his body. When this chill entered his body, Bai Yunfei even felt that his soul was frozen for a moment!

All of this sounds complicated but in fact it happened and ended in the blink of an eye. Bai Yunfei's right hand was even still maintaining its forward striking position, but his entire body was sent flying backwards like a disconnected kite, almost creating a blur.

“Humph! Ignorant kid! You think you can fool me just because you’re a little smart? Don’t overestimate yourself!” The derision in Zhang Zhenshan’s eyes intensified. Just when he wanted to lift his feet to give chase, he suddenly stood still, the expression on his face stiffening then turning into one of disbelief.

This was because while in midair after being sent flying, when Bai Yunfei was about to fall to the ground, he did a flip and landed feet first on the ground. Only after bending his knees to a half-crouch position with his hands placed against the ground and sliding backwards three or four meters was he able to stop.

As Bai Yunfei raised his head looking at a totally astounded Zhang Zhenshan in front of him, a streak of blood flowed out from a corner of his mouth. He had an urge to spout a mouthful of blood but he suppressed it forcefully.

“I misjudged it... Am I still really too naive? He’s a Soul Sprite and the head of the Zhang family with so much combat experience. How could it have been so easy for me to trick him?... In the end I was tricked by him instead. If not for his attack being inclined towards the centerline of my body and hitting a place that happened to be within the defensive range of the Goldsilk Soul Armor, my shoulder could have been crippled...

“Under the defense of the +10 upgraded Goldsilk Soul Armor, I was still injured so seriously. Plus, the most fearsome thing was that chill. If not for the defense of the Goldsilk Soul Armor giving me a small gap of time to channel my soulforce to resist it, it would probably have gone into my body by now. Then, even if I wouldn’t have been frozen all over, my movement speed would have dropped sharply!

“This is the power of the Soul Warrior stage? The power of elemental control...”

Now Bai Yunfei had already stood up. He wiped the blood off the corner of his mouth and took out the Fire-tipped Spear again then



stared hard at Zhang Zhenshan in front of him. Zhang Zhenshan watched all of this with a lingering astonished and doubtful expression.

“How is this even possible?! After taking that palm strike of mine, it unexpectedly seems he’s just slightly injured! Even though I’m not in my best condition, a Soul Warrior shouldn’t have been able to withstand the force of a palm strike from a Soul Sprite like me so easily!

“Right! He’s wearing Han Xiao’s Goldsilk Soul Armor on his body! But that armor is merely a low-human tier soul armament, how can it have such a high defense? Could it be... the amount of power I can use at the moment is even lower than I thought?”

Both men had their own thoughts and seemed to be considering countermeasures. For a short period of time, the situation unexpectedly turned into a deadlock.

Bai Yunfei did his utmost to channel his soulforce to disperse that trace of coldness in his body. At the same time, he cast a glance at the Fire-tipped Spear in his hands in an unnoticeable manner, his eyes flashing.

“I didn’t expect to be able to draw the scorching heat in the Fire-tipped Spear into my body! Just now, to disperse that trace of coldness in my body as quickly as possible, I subconsciously tried doing this and was unexpectedly successful!! But I was unable to discover this earlier... In that is the case, it just happens to be of some help in this fight!

“I can’t wait any longer. Both of us are recovering, but he’s definitely faster than I am! I must not let him return to his best or I’ll be in even more danger!”

At this point, Bai Yunfei clenched his teeth and gave the Fire-tipped Spear a shake. Using a strange footwork pattern, he turned into a string of blurs and rushed towards Zhang Zhenshan!

“He saw through me again? He’s obviously weaker than me but he has attacked me first the times in a row. This man’s mental ability is indeed exceptional!” Watching Bai Yunfei charging at him, Zhang Zhenshan’s eyes flashed with a hint of surprise. He then gave a cold snort and rushed up.

Knowing that the opponent was adept at using fists and palms to attack, this time Bai Yunfei watched out for his forceful approach all the time right from the beginning. Relying on the Wave Treading Steps’ speed and dexterity, brandishing the spear, he was unexpectedly able to force Zhang Zhenshan to retreat every time he wanted to charge up.

The Fire-tipped Spear had an extremely high damage and even an explosion effect, but most of its damage was focused in the tip and it needed to hit the target in straight thrusts for the explosion effect to be triggered. Right from the beginning Zhang Zhenshan had been able to tell that this spear was no ordinary weapon so he did not block the thrusts of the spear head-on like how he had blocked the stabs of the Glacial Piercer earlier. Therefore, even though Bai Yunfei looked very lively as he fought, he was unable to do anything to the opponent at all.

The two of them fought for several dozen bouts continuously. Because Zhang Zhenshan was afraid of the power of the Fire-tipped Spear, he was unable to counterattack for the time being, but he handled Bai Yunfei’s attacks with skill and ease. However, Bai Yunfei became more and more anxious as the fight progressed. He could already tell that the opponent was deliberately dragging out the fight. If this continued, he would undoubtedly use more energy than the enemy and the situation would become more and more disadvantageous to him.

Worried inside, Bai Yunfei could not help attacking much faster. After Zhang Zhenshan avoided another spear strike, Bai Yunfei suddenly repositioned his feet, taking half a step backwards and withdrawing the Fire-tipped Spear. Blue veins popped out of his

right arm. It looked like he had exerted his strength in the blink of an eye. He then thrust the spear out all of a sudden at a speed unexpectedly several times greater than earlier!

Threefold Thrust!!

Facing this fast spear thrust, which was aimed at his stomach, Zhang Zhenshan's eyes flashed with a trace of amazement, but he did not panic at all. The moment the tip of the spear about to come into contact with him, his entire body moved sideways without a warning sign, avoiding this blow easily! Then, with his body slightly leaning forwards, he unexpectedly rushed up to Bai Yunfei's face in the blink of an eye!

Without lifting or lowering himself, and without a warning sign, he had moved sideways then rushed up just like that! It even appeared as if he had not made any movement!

A body-maneuvering soul skill, Ice Treading Steps!

Using this footwork pattern was like skating on ice. It did not require the user to sway left and right confusingly like the Wave Treading Steps, nor did it allow the user to move so fast as the Wave Treading Steps did. It only made it possible for the user to slide without any warning sign and in a surprising manner. When it was in use, the user's body did not rise or fall, so unless you observed by staring at his feet, you would not notice any strange movement—but who would only stare at the opponent's feet during combat?

Another focus attack with the spear had been avoided. Before Bai Yunfei could even bemoan this, the enemy had already 'slid' up to his face!

His eyes flashing with killing intent, Zhang Zhenshan raised his right hand and threw another palm strike, aiming for Bai Yunfei's head!

The palm of his hand seemed to be surrounded in a layer of frost.

The wind created by the palm spread out, sending a mass of cold air to Bai Yunfei, causing his hair to stand on end—this palm strike was probably even several times more fearsome than that palm strike from earlier!

Bai Yunfei's pupils dilated. It was already too late to withdraw the spear so he clenched his teeth and pushed his feet against the ground with force. His body then suddenly jumped up backwards. Even though he would be in a difficult situation to ward off the enemy's follow-up attack, he had to avoid this palm strike first! Because he jumped up, this palm strike which originally had been aimed at his head was now aimed at his chest instead.

With this backward jump, he was able to create a distance of about an inch between him and the palm. It looked like he had eventually avoided this palm strike by a hair's breadth!

However, just when this palm seemed to run out of momentum, Zhang Zhenshan's eyes focused and he let out a light snort. His right shoulder seemed to tremble slightly then his entire right arm seemed to wiggle in an unnoticeable manner. In just a moment, this already outstretched right arm unexpectedly became longer by more than two inches all of a sudden!

Under the astounded look in Bai Yunfei's eyes, this palm hit him squarely in the chest!

## Chapter 47: Strike back!

---

Just when the incoming palm strike seemed to run out of momentum, that already outstretched right arm unexpectedly became longer by more than two inches all of a sudden!

Under the astounded look in Bai Yunfei's eyes, this palm hit him squarely in the chest!

This is the soul skill Long Arm Fist!

It was none other than the low-tier soul skill used by Zhang Yang in the past, who at that time could only lengthen his arm by an inch at most. Now Zhang Zhenshan was using it and had made his arm longer by nearly three inches!

Even though it was a low-level soul skill, its power still varied according to the power of the user!

Bai Yunfei's body was once again sent flying with a burst of buzzing sounds!

Bai Yunfei did another flip while in midair and landed on the ground. However, this time his actions were performed in a much more helter-skelter manner. Only after propping himself up with the Fire-tipped Spear and sliding another four or five meters was he finally able to stop.

He raised his head. A flush rushed up his face, which looked a bit pale at first. Eventually he could no longer endure it and spouted out a mouthful of blood.

Lifting his hand and wiping the bloodstains off the corners of his mouth, Bai Yunfei stared at Zhang Zhenshan, who was walking towards him slowly, with a trace of bitterness in his eyes: "The gap is too big!! We're simply not on the same level, whether in terms of combat experience or technique usage. If he hadn't used too much soulforce earlier and become less powerful as a result, those two palm strikes alone would've been enough to take me down..."

Zhang Zhenshan put his right hand behind his back and it trembled slightly in an unnoticeable manner. After channeling his soulforce to recover from the side effects of forcefully modifying a soul skill, he walked towards Bai Yunfei step by step while saying tauntingly: “What’s wrong? Now you already know the gap between us, right? Arrogant ignorant brat, though you’ve got several soul armament and my power has weakened, I can still kill you with ease!

“But I won’t let you die so easily. You tortured and maimed my son to death so I’ll make you suffer all kinds of torments until you wish you were dead. Then I’ll snap your limbs one by one and let you die with a damaged corpse!!” The more Zhang Zhenshan talked, the more agitated he became. Towards the end, he almost shouted the words. His eyes were virtually blood-red and his face was full of ferocity. Only, under that look of hatred in his eyes, there was also a trace of... sorrow.

Looking at Zhang Zhenshan, who seemed to be immersed in madness, Bai Yunfei slowly backed off expressionlessly. However, Zhang Zhenshan was advancing even faster so after just several steps, the two of them were already about to stand face to face.

While retreating, Bai Yunfei slightly glanced around. All of a sudden, his eyes flashed with a trace of light. He took a deep breath, channeled his soulforce and used the Wave Treading Steps. His body turned into a string of blurs and moved obliquely two meters to the left then halted abruptly. Staring at Zhang Zhenshan, who had chased up to a place three meters ahead him, he lifted his right foot and threw a fierce kick!

The great force of the kick shot a basin-sized rock under his feet along with a layer of dirt towards Zhang Zhenshan!

Giving a cold snort, Zhang Zhenshan immediately moved half a step to the left without rising or lowering his body. However, right after he dashed sideways to avoid this flying rock, his pupils dilated all of a sudden because he saw Bai Yunfei charging up

closely after the rock at a speed even faster than that of the rock and thrusting the spear out!

The moment that rock flew up to Zhang Zhenshan's left side, the tip of Bai Yunfei's spear was already about to reach him. Just when Zhang Zhenshan wanted to dodge again, his eyes suddenly flashed with a trace of astonishment -- the target of this spear strike was unexpectedly not him, but... the rock by his side!

Blue veins popped out of Bai Yunfei's right arm, which he was holding the spear with. The various muscles of this arm bulged out greatly in the blink of an eye, raising the thrusting speed of the arm to its maximum. Almost without an interval, he executed two spear thrusts continuously!

Threefold Thrust!

Threefold Thrust!!

When the first strike hit the rock, it only shook a bit. However, when the second strike hit it, an explosion suddenly rang out at the moment of contact!

Almost at the same time as a trace of surprise appeared in Zhang Zhenshan's eyes, this explosion rang out by his side. Under the astounded look in his eyes, a mass of fire burst out from inside the rock. The basin-sized rock then shattered into countless tiny fragments which were shot out in all directions!

A rock very close to him had suddenly exploded, sending a heat wave and a large volley of fragments flying at him!

The area covered by the rock fragments was so large that Zhang Zhenshan did not have enough time to avoid them. He could only use the Ice Treading Steps at the last moment and quickly slide backwards. At the same time, he crossed his hands, making a block in front of his face, and channeled his soulforce to enhance his defense, causing his whole body's skin and muscles to wiggle slightly.

A series of cracks was heard. The sharp pains coming from various places on his body astonished Zhang Zhenshan even more: “Just the rock fragments shot at me are already so powerful!”

The attack of the rock fragments lasted only for a breath’s time. Zhang Zhenshan kept backing off. He moved his hands away from in front of his face, but what came into his field of vision was a dazzling red light!

Bai Yunfei’s eyes glittered with killing intent. The tip of the Fire-tipped Spear, which was emitting a red light, looking as if it was shrouded in a red fireball, was being thrust straight at Zhang Zhenshan!

Finally, for the first time there was an expression of shock on Zhang Zhenshan’s face. This crimson spear was already less than three inches away from his chest so he would not have enough time for him to avoid it while retreating hurriedly. After thinking for a moment, he showed a resolute expression, reached out his left hand in the blink of an eye and held it before his chest. When it came into contact with the tip of the incoming spear, he suddenly caught hold of it in a grab!

Then he tilted his palm. Muscles bulging out on his left arm, he pushed it up fiercely at an angle. At the same time, he repositioned his feet, dashing out obliquely in the other direction!

Before he could loosen his grip, the tip of the spear slipped in his hand. When he let go of it and hurriedly backed off, a small amount of blood fell down from the air.

The shocked expression in Zhang Zhenshan’s eyes intensified. Without pausing at all, he moved backwards several dozen meters in an instant. Only when he saw that Bai Yunfei was not chasing and attacking him did he finally relax and stop there to gasp for air.

“How is this possible? How is this possible?! He’s just a mid-stage Soul Warrior, how can he unleash that kind of attack?!” Staring



hard at Bai Yunfei in front of him, Zhang Zhenshan roared in his mind, “Even if that spear is an earth tier soul armament, even if it can gather up the element of fire to cause an explosion, he must at least reach the late-stage Soul Warrior stage to be able to do that! How in the world can he use this kind of attack?!?!”

Lifting his left hand in front of his eyes, he saw that a long hole had been cut into the high-human tier Icesilk Glove on it!

Underneath the hole in the glove, there was a wound deep to the bone extending from the center of the palm to the intersection of the index and the thumb. Although he had been channeling his soulforce to heal it since the first moment, blood was still flowing out nonstop, dying that white glove almost completely red. Even worse, there was unexpectedly a faint black color on the wound’s opening and a scorching heat was slowly spreading up from this opening. Trying his best, he channeled his Glacial Energy to resist the heat. Only now did this scorching heat slowly disappear.

Zhang Zhenshan looked at the wound on his hand, whose bleeding was gradually slowing down, then cast a glance at the Fire-tipped Spear in Bai Yunfei’s hands with a lingering fear. There was unexpectedly a trace of relief in his eyes: “Luckily I reacted fast at the last moment... Now I definitely can’t let the tip of that spear hit me again! If it causes that kind of explosion when I’m hit by a thrust with it,...” At this point, a tinge of horror came into being uncontrollably in his heart and he kept looking at the Fire-tipped Spear in an even more fearful manner.

At a place several dozen meters away, Bai Yunfei was pinching his slightly trembling right arm with his left hand. His teeth clenched tightly, he was channeling his soulforce nonstop. Only when the acute pain coming from his arm had subsided a bit did he finally let out a sigh of relief. He then also lifted his eyes and stared hard at Zhang Zhenshan in front of him.

In fact, Bai Yunfei was also feeling lucky that Zhang Zhenshan had retreated so far away in fear. If the enemy had counterattacked

right after avoiding that thrust of the Fire-tipped Spear earlier, he would definitely have been in grave danger.

Before executing that series of attacks just then, he had already prepared himself for the scenario in which he would fail and could be injured again by the enemy.

“Too bad, when the last thrust hit his palm, the explosion effect wasn’t activated, otherwise I would’ve already won this fight!” When Bai Yunfei saw that the opponent seemed to be treating his injuries, his eyes could not help showing a trace of disappointment, “I’ve used the Threefold Thrust three times and even triggered the explosion effect, but I was only able to injure him slightly. From now on, he’ll definitely be even more careful against the Fire-tipped Spear. If so... will I have no choice but to do that?”

While Bai Yunfei’s mind was working overtime, Zhang Zhenshan calmed down. He immediately noticed his strange behavior: “He didn’t chase and attack me. Plus, he looks... His right arm is injured! Right, it doesn’t matter what secret method he used to unleash that kind of attack, since he was merely a Soul Warrior, this must have taken an extremely great toll on him! Damn it! This means I’ve wasted an opportunity to strike back!”

While regretting this in his mind, Zhang Zhenshan was unwilling to give the enemy a chance to take a breather. He raised his right fist, his eyes glittered with ferocity, and charged at Bai Yunfei!

# Chapter 39: +12 Daggers!

---

After receiving Li Chengfeng’s space ring and letting him go to have a rest, Bai Yunfei wasted no time shutting himself in his room and beginning to upgrade those daggers.

Upgrade, upgrade, upgrade again, every time his soulforce was about to be used up, he would stop upgrading the daggers and use the Arte of Training the Soul to recover his soulforce. This way, even though his power did not improve so easily and quickly as it would have if he had used up his soulforce, he was able to reduce the amount of time he was unconscious.

To upgrade a dagger to +8 would need about 100 soul points on average. At the moment, Bai Yunfei had over 1500 soul points, which was approaching the soulforce value of the middle Soul Warrior stage. So, from the early morning until dinner time in the evening, he was able to upgrade thirty-six daggers to +8 in total.

Dragging his slightly exhausted body along, he hurriedly ate dinner then returned to his room to continue with the upgrades.

He turned his wrist over and a rather luxurious dagger appeared in his hand. It was none other than one of those several top-grade daggers Li Chengfeng had mentioned.

Equipment Grade: Superior

Attack: 76

Upgrade Requirement: 6 Soulpoints

Bai Yunfei had seen two superior items before, one being his space ring and the other being the dagger embedded with gems used by Zhang Yang. Moreover, that dagger’s damage was 85 points, even a bit higher than this one’s. However, it had been destroyed a few days ago during an upgrade session.

“Normal, high, superior, rare, inheritance, these are the item grades I’ve seen so far...” Staring at the dagger in his hand, instead of upgrading it immediately, Bai Yunfei summed up the information about item grades.

“The previous three’s damages are all under 100, but the low-rare Glacial Piercer’s damage is over 200. This means... there should still be an item grade in between?

“Does a damage of over 200 fall within the scope of soul armaments? To upgrade the first three item grades needs very little soulforce, but as the upgrade level goes up, the required soulforce increases bit by bit too. However, within the range of soul armaments, a rare item or above requires a fixed amount of soul points to upgrade...

“A high-grade dagger’s original damage is comparable to a +10 upgraded normal dagger’s damage, but... why is the +10 upgraded normal dagger obviously more powerful? Is it because... of the small amount of soulforce poured into it? It’s impossible to pour soulforce into non-soul armaments, but after I upgrade them, this becomes possible. Though only a small amount of soulforce can be poured into these items, they will indeed become more powerful.

“This means, the power of a soul armaments depends not only on the numerical values of its properties but also on the way it is used...

“Then, let’s continue. I must make high-level upgraded items as quickly as possible. There is not much time left. Hopefully I won’t be so unlucky like last time.

“I can rely on nothing but luck every time. Could it be there’s no method for increasing the chances of successful upgrades? Damn...

“Upgrade...”

... ..

The next day, Bai Yunfei shut himself in his room again,

upgrading the items for an entire day.

In the morning of the day after, Li Chengfeng looked at the locked door with a trace of worry in his eyes. Just when he wanted to go over and call Bai Yunfei out to eat breakfast, the door was pushed open from inside with a creak and Bai Yunfei walked out with a slightly tired yet totally excited expression.

“Yunfei, you... Could it be you’ve succeeded?!” Seeing Bai Yunfei come out, Li Chengfeng was stupefied for a moment but then he reacted by asking with some anticipation.

“Yeah, I was pretty lucky so in the end I succeeded. Let’s go check them out!” After saying so, Bai Yunfei was about to go outside.

“Wait, wait! Yunfei, you look tired already. You should wash your face first then have a meal before going. There’s no need to hurry.” Even though Li Chengfeng wanted very much to find out immediately what effective weapons Bai Yunfei had created, he still suppressed the curiosity in his heart and said while pointing to the breakfast on the table.

“Oh... That’s fine too. I’m a bit tired indeed. Let’s eat breakfast first.” Looking at the foods on the table, Bai Yunfei nodded then said to Ling’er on one side, “Right, Ling’er, there’s a lot of scrap metal in my room. I’d appreciate it if you go and clean it out.”

After having breakfast, Bai Yunfei looked much more vigorous. He and Li Chengfeng then went to a vacant area outside the village impatiently.

Seeing that Li Chengfeng’s face was full of expectation, Bai Yunfei laughed and shook his wrist. A dagger appeared in his hand.

Equipment Grade: High

Upgrade Level: +12

Attack: 45

Additional Attack: 176

+10 Additional Effect: Attacks have a 3% chance of blinding the target for a maximum

of 3 seconds.

+12 Additional Effect: When clashing with the weapon of another, this weapon has an 8% chance of severing it.

(The chance of triggering this effect is in inverse proportion to the grade of the enemy weapon. It is ineffective against weapons of the Inheritance grade and higher).

Upgrade Requirement: 61 Soulpoints

After confirming the weapon’s properties once, Bai Yunfei gave it to Li Chengfeng, saying, “Take this first. I’ll explain to you in detail in a while.”

He turned his wrist over again and another dagger appeared in his hand.

Equipment Grade: Superior

Upgrade Level: +12

Attack: 78

Additional Attack: 202

+10 Additional Effect: Attacks have a 4% chance of creating an illusion.

+12 Additional Effect: In downward attacks with the tip of the blade, the damage dealt is doubled.

Upgrade Requirement: 66 Soulpoints

Because of the information having just appeared in his mind, Bai Yunfei could not help grinning and said to Li Chengfeng, “Hey Chengfeng, why do I feel that you’re luckier than I am? This time, though most of the daggers I tried to upgrade for you were destroyed, one of these two remaining daggers was among those several top-quality daggers. Besides, its effects even make me kind

of jealous...”

Li Chengfeng was stupefied for a moment then said in a somewhat embarrassed manner, “Perhaps you should keep and use it. In fact... the two daggers you gave me earlier are very good too.”

“Oh... those two were destroyed already.”

“... ..”

“Ha ha, I’m just kidding. I already said I’d make upgraded items for you, how can I possibly keep it? Plus, do you think I’ll still be short of this kind of upgraded item?” Bai Yunfei said laughingly, “Also, I didn’t touch those two daggers because I knew that you would want to keep them as a memento.

“Alright, now I’m going to explain to you the effects of these two daggers. You’ve got to understand and remember them, so that when you use them in combat later, you’ll know exactly what to do.”

... ..

## Chapter 49: Run Away!!

---

Having made his decision, Bai Yunfei was no longer hesitant. After taking a look at Zhang Zhenshan, he suddenly shook his body and rushed towards that forest on the left!

“Only now do you think about running away? Too late already!!” As soon as Bai Yunfei moved, Zhang Zhenshan noticed this. Upon seeing that the enemy unexpectedly wanted to flee, he gave a cold snort and also rushed out, chasing after Bai Yunfei.

However, when Bai Yunfei had just run away ten something meters, the Fire-tipped Spear in his hands suddenly disappeared. He then turned around while running and shot two streaks of cold light straight at a pursuing Zhang Zhenshan with a flick of his right arm like lightning!

Flying daggers!!

The moment the streaks of cold light were shot at him, Zhang Zhenshan was a bit surprised to learn that the opponent was also able to use flying daggers. This was indeed somewhat unexpected to him.

However, that was all there was to it. Even though Bai Yunfei’s attack was surprising, in his eyes, it was still not a threat to him!

In the blink of an eye, his body moved sideways, and the two daggers went right past him. Zhang Zhenshan then continued to rush towards Bai Yunfei without slowing down.

But right after he had avoided this attack, three other daggers were shot at him one after another!

His eyes contracting, Zhang Zhenshan moved sideways to the left half an inch again, avoiding the two daggers aimed at his right shoulder and head. He then made a forward grab with his right hand and caught hold of the last dagger directly! As he was wearing the Icesilk Gloves, catching these high-speed incoming daggers was



not much different from catching a small rock.

“Zi!!”

Just when Zhang Zhenshan curled the corners of his mouth and showed a trace of disdain, a miserable cry of an animal rang out from behind him all of a sudden!

His speed dropped and his expression changed. Turning his head around to cast a glance backwards like a flash, he saw that the tracking gray rat, which had been hiding in the distance since the beginning of the fight, had now been nailed to the ground by a dagger, motionless!

“You!!” Zhang Zhenshan’s expression stiffened. Then, with his eyes full of fury, he turned around to look at Bai Yunfei. Channeling his soulforce, he charged up at his fastest speed!

“Zhang Zhenshan, I’ll return your son’s Icesoul Silver Needles to you!!”

When Zhang Zhenshan had just taken two steps forwards, Bai Yunfei’s loud shouts came into his ears. Then he saw the enemy shoot two dots of cold light out with a flick of the right hand again!

“What?!” His expression changing, Zhang Zhenshan wavered a bit in his heart. But as soon as he focused his eyes to take a look, he saw that they were not the Icesoul Silver Needles but two ordinary daggers!

“Humph, it’s not so easy to distract me with words!!” Zhang Zhenshan’s eyes flashed with a cold light. Without dodging at all, he waved his right hand immediately and caught the two daggers then threw them back!

Bai Yunfei bent his waist to avoid the daggers. When he rose, his eyes flashed with a trace of reluctance, which was immediately replaced by determination.

Staring at Zhang Zhenshan, who had already chased up to a place less than ten meters away from his back, Bai Yunfei gave a cold

snort then unexpectedly slowed down on purpose. Flicking his right hand nonstop from behind his back, in a breath's time, he shot four daggers out almost simultaneously.

Right afterwards, his dropping right hand suddenly paused for a moment. Its muscles bulging out, he flicked it with all his might in an even larger movement than when he had thrown the flying daggers earlier!

A trace of blue light shot out -- Glacial Piercer!!

His expression remaining unchanged, Zhang Zhenshan waved his right hand, creating an area of blurs and easily knocking down the four flying daggers. But just when he wanted to use the Ice Treading Steps to chase and attack the opponent, the look on his face changed greatly!

In the blink of an eye after the flick of Bai Yunfei's hand, a streak of light blue light had almost crossed the distance of less than ten meters between the two of them and was about to hit him from the front!

Fast, it was so fast!

This was simply on another level of speed compared to the flying daggers shot at him earlier!

There was basically no time for Zhang Zhenshan to do much. He had no choice but to make a block in front of him with his right hand and, at the same time, do his utmost to move his body half an inch to the right!

“Pu!”

A soft deep sound audible only to Zhang Zhenshan came into his ears, but it expanded into a huge explosion in his heart!

The moment the Glacial Piercer had come into contact with the center of his right palm, that high human-tier Icesilk Glove had unexpectedly been unable to obstruct it in the least!

The Glacial Piercer penetrated into the palm held in front of him without hindrance then went out through the back of the hand without any decrease in momentum. After that, it pierced into Zhang Zhenshan's right shoulder with another 'pu' sound. Even half of the piercer's handle went into his shoulder. In the end, it seemed to get trapped between bones and stopped, leaving a section of its tip sticking out through the back of the shoulder!

Bai Yunfei's eyes flashed with a hint of regret. Then, clenching his teeth, he turned around and ran away without hesitation!

Zhang Zhenshan watched him turn into a string of blurs running into the forest up ahead then disappear after several dashes. His body had already stopped moving. There was even a trace of puzzlement in his eyes. As he looked at the perforated palm and the penetrated shoulder, his expression was extremely unsightly.

Reaching out his left hand and grasping the Glacial Piercer in his shoulder, he pulled it out with force. Blood spurted out but he stopped the bleeding very quickly.

After channeling his soulforce to heal the wounds in his palm and shoulder, he lifted his eyes again to look in the direction of Bai Yunfei's escape, his expression changing repeatedly. In the end he had no choice but to shake his head in frustration and let out a sigh.

"I didn't expect... to be given so much trouble by a brat of the Soul Warrior stage. Worse still, in the end I even let him run away." At this point, Zhang Zhenshan shook his head with some self-derision, "Was it because I'd used too much soulforce? Or because I was preoccupied with taking revenge and underestimated him?"

After pondering for a while, he shook his head again, talking to himself, "No, the main cause was his power and not these things... He's a Soul Warrior indeed, but his mental ability is much greater than I expected. Though he's a bit inexperienced in real combat

and fighting techniques, both his determination and attention to detail are very exceptional!

“Then, the most important thing is the several soul armaments he got...”

As he raised the Glacial Pierce in front of him and recalled the common-sense defying things during the whole battle, his eyes gradually showed a look of doubt and disbelief.

“The crimson spear, the Goldsilk Soul Armor, and the Glacial Piercer... each of them was so beyond my expectations. That move shouldn’t have caused an explosion of the fire element. The attacks that should’ve been irresistible were suddenly withstood easily by him. And this Glacial Piercer, in the beginning, I was able to block it using my gloves, but just now...”

Staring at the Glacial Piercer, his eyes glittered unceasingly. He was trying hard to recall every single detail of this fight against Bai Yunfei. After a long time, when the wound in his right hand had basically been controlled, he seemed to suddenly remember something. His eyes blazing, he said in surprise, “Wait! This Glacial Piercer... Could it be...”

Seeming to have thought of something that even he himself found ridiculous, his eyes glittered. Eventually, he showed an expression of relief and said to himself, “I’m such a fool. Whether this is true or not, won’t I know the answer by checking it out?...”

After saying so, he held the Glacial Piercer in his hand then flicked it out forwards.

The moment the Glacial Piercer left his hand, Zhang Zhenshan’s face immediately showed a look of astonishment, “My soulforce was unexpectedly absorbed by it uncontrollably!”

Then, his eyes suddenly opened wide like balls, staring hard at the Glacial Piercer, which was flying forwards. He even slightly opened his mouth involuntarily, his face filled with shock.

“This speed... How is this possible? How is this possible?!”

# Chapter 50: Reaching Snowpeak City

---

At sunset, the light of the setting sun was shining on this thick forest, but under the cover of the dense foliage, only tiny spots of light were able to get through the gaps between the leaves, which made the whole forest look somewhat dusky.

Forcefully suppressing the injuries in his body and channeling his remaining small amount of soulforce into his legs, Bai Yunfei was running fast in this forest.

On his face, there was a trace of rejoicing over having escaped from a very dangerous situation and a hint of injury pain, but most of all, there was a deep regret.

“Glacial Piercer, my Glacial Piercer!!” While running, Bai Yunfei roared nonstop in his mind, “It’s gone just like that... My Glacial Piercer!!”

If the several soul armaments were ranked in terms of preference, the Glacial Piercer would even place ahead of the Fire-tipped Spear because aside from being his first ‘loot item’, it also possessed that extremely practical additional effect. Sometimes Bai Yunfei even felt that the Glacial Piercer of the low rare grade was more useful than the Fire-tipped Spear of the low inheritance grade...

In the several battles he had fought so far, it could be said that the Glacial Piercer had contributed towards the victories even more than the Fire-tipped Spear had.

But now, the Glacial Piercer was already gone...

Bai Yunfei felt like his heart was bleeding...

Ran, ran, ran... Bai Yunfei did not know how far he had run. He ran all the way until both his soulforce and physical strength were used up. Only then did he finally stop.

He raised his head looking at the starry sky through the gaps

between the leaves. In his ears, there were only the constant cries of night insects and also the occasional snarls of some kinds of wild beasts.

“He shouldn’t... be able to catch up with me for a while, right?...” Bai Yunfei took a look backwards in an exhausted manner, “Let’s stop running. I can’t run anymore either. I’ll stay here and rest for a night. If the enemy could even catch up with me after I’ve run so far away, then I’d have no choice but to accept my fate...”

Finding a very tall and large tree, Bai Yunfei climbed up to a branch that was even thicker than his waist and took a quick look at the surroundings. After confirming that there were no venomous serpents and wild beasts around, he sat down with legs crossed on that branch and closed his eyes, beginning to recover his soulforce and heal his internal injuries.

The next day, when the sun was shining high above, Bai Yunfei finally opened his eyes slowly on that branch after staying motionless for a whole night.

Taking a deep breath then exhaling gently, he raised his right hand in front of his eyes, formed a fist, swung his arm then massaged his left shoulder and frowned slightly.

“Alas! It still hasn’t fully healed, but fortunately there isn’t any big problem. I should be able to recover within the next two days at most.”

Taking out some food from inside his interspatial ring, he began to fill his hungry stomach. While eating, he thought about the battle of the previous day.

“That little animal which tracked me was already killed. Now it should be impossible for them to find out where I am. This forest is quite large too, so if they want to come in and search for me, it’ll basically be like searching for a needle in the ocean. I only need to leave this place as quickly as possible then be more careful with my

actions instead of making myself visible to the enemy like last time, I will not be in danger again.

“I lack combat experience and still haven’t practiced how to use my techniques enough. Though these shortcomings won’t be noticeable if I fight ordinary people and soul cultivators weaker than me, they will be exposed thoroughly if I run into opponents stronger than me...

“Petty tricks will be useless too, and if I use them, the enemy can even take advantage of them to trick me. From now on, I can’t be so arrogant again... My biggest advantage is still the Upgrade Technique! Only the additional effects that the enemy doesn’t expect to come up against should be the key to my victory!

“But now, even if those ordinary weapons are given additional effects, it will still be very difficult to use them to fight strong enemies. As for soul armaments, the only ones left are the Fire-tipped Spear and the Goldsilk Soul Armor. Alas... my Glacial Piercer!! My Glacial Piercer...” As soon as Bai Yunfei thought of the Glacial Piercer, he could not help feeling upset again.

“Get stronger! Get stronger!! Now I’m being hunted like a homeless dog only because I’m not powerful enough yet! I must improve my soulforce and upgrade more items!” The grievance in his heart turned into an intense fury, which triggered Bai Yunfei’s unquenchable desire for power again.

“The Crafting School, the Crafting School... As long as I can join this school, I’ll be able to make soul armaments on my own! When the time comes, this coupled with my Item Upgrade Technique...

“Alas... What am I thinking about? Now the most important thing is to deal with the problem at hand first. I must get out of this Azure Cloud Province as soon as possible!”

... ..

After another whole day, Bai Yunfei eventually walked out of this



dense forest. When he saw a hamlet located not far outside the forest, he almost burst into tears out of happiness, “I can finally ask someone for directions...”

Because Bai Yunfei really needed to have a good rest, he stayed for a night in this village. Villagers always made Bai Yunfei feel warm inside. They enthusiastically received this stranger who had suddenly appeared in this remote hamlet. After knowing that he was injured, they even specifically prepared a large bowl of medicine for him to drink...

In the early morning of the next day, Bai Yunfei bid farewell to these guileless villagers in high spirits and headed in the direction where according to the villagers a town was located.

Three days later, after going through another grove, Bai Yunfei saw a large road in front of him with quite a few people going on it. Among them, there were even several groups of people looking like trade caravans or escort agencies who were moving slowly carrying a lot of things.

“This should be a main road. If I go down this road, I should be able to reach a large city...” Looking at the coming and going passersby, Bai Yunfei was a bit hesitant, “There are all kinds of people in a large city. I don’t know whether the Zhang family’s influence exist in this place as well. If I’m spotted again...”

After pondering with his head lowered for a while, he shook his head in self-derision again, saying to himself, “If I fret about everything, then I won’t need to get out of this Azure Cloud Province either. Not even Zhang Zhenshan was able to catch me, even if I run into his subordinates, I’ll just kill my way out!

“Plus, last time was merely a freak occurrence. I can’t be so unlucky every time, right?” Lifting his head, Bai Yunfei looked at a trade caravan of about ten people which was going slowly on the road and said to himself with a mental nod, “Yeah, let’s blend in with that trade caravan. After getting into the city, I’ll buy all the

stuff I need and rest well for a night. Then I'll leave right away! Right, I must buy a detailed map. With it, later I won't get lost all the time..."

Having made up his mind, Bai Yunfei walked towards that trade caravan. Those people were very easygoing. After a simple exchange, they agreed to let this ordinary-looking youngster join their trade caravan. Bai Yunfei asked for a straw hat then put it on his head. Helping push those goods with his head lowered, he went forwards slowly...

In the afternoon, this group of people reached a tall city gate. Hiding among the group, Bai Yunfei slowly entered the city.

Before entering the city, he raised his head taking a look at those two large words on the lofty gate—Snowpeak City.

However, Bai Yunfei did not know that this city was where the primary force of the Glacial School was located.

And the headquarters of that school was at the base of Mt. Snowpeak, which was just a two day trip from this city!

# Chapter 51: Secret Exposed! Greater Danger!!

---

On the same day as Bai Yunfei reached Snowpeak City.

There were only three people sitting in a spacious hall in the Glacial School at the moment. Obviously the master of this place had already dismissed all of his subordinates and they were discussing important matters.

Sitting in the head position was a middle-aged man with a slightly pale complexion. Even though he was just sitting there expressionlessly, there was a chilling aura about him. Even the temperature of in the entire hall seemed to have dropped somewhat -- this man was none other than the headmaster of the Glacial School, Yu Fei.

The man sitting on the left was about forty years old with a calm expression. He was none other than one of the Glacial School's elders, Liu Cheng. And the man sitting on the right, who was slowly telling something to the other two, was surprisingly none other than the head of the Zhang, Zhang Zhenshan!

“... Then that Bai Yunfei fella turned around and ran away without hesitation...”

Seeming to have been talking for quite some time, he heaved a sigh of relief, raised the cup of tea beside him and took a sip. After that he cast a glance at the other two men, who appeared to be somewhat entranced by what he had told them, waiting for their reaction.

After keeping silent for a while, Yu Fei said: “A lowly Soul Warrior was unexpectedly able to escape while being hunted down by you, and was even able to injure you. This... According to what you said, those several soul items on his body are indeed strange. Right, that Glacial Piercer...”

Hearing these words, Zhang Zhenshan turned his right hand over and the Glacial Piercer appeared in his hand. His voice became somewhat solemn, saying: "It was only because of this Glacial Pierce that I gave up continuing to track his whereabouts and immediately returned to our school as quickly as possible to report to you, headmaster."

"Oh? Did you discover something?" Yu Fei asked with raised eyebrows.

"Yes, just take a look, headmaster." Zhang Zhenshan slightly nodded then glanced at a pillar that could only be hugged by two people holding hands in front of him. With a gently flick of his right hand, a streak of blue light shot out and came into contact with that pillar in the blink of an eye. A soft sound was heard and the Glacial Piercer penetrated through the stone pillar at a stroke under the astonished looks in Yu Fei's and Liu Cheng's eyes. Then it whizzed through the air and pierced into the wall behind!

The other two men were dumbfounded for ten something seconds. Yu Fei was the first to react. No longer having that previous apathetic expression, he suddenly stood up with an excited look on his face. In an instant, he had already appeared right in front of that wall. After reaching out his hand and removing the Glacial Piercer, which had almost gone all the way into the wall, he observed it carefully, his eyes filled with disbelief.

"How is this possible?... It's indeed the one I rewarded the Blackwood Stronghold's Han Xiao with two months ago. But how can it be so powerful?"

Seeing that Yu Fei's expression was full of disbelief, Zhang Zhenshan understood what was going on. When he himself had first known that this Glacial Piercer had been changed, he had been like this too. He said: "Headmaster, I already tested it carefully. The Glacial Piercer's damage has been improved by at least 50% compared to before. Besides, this doesn't even really matter. The most inconceivable thing is that when you shoot it

out, both its speed and power are at least twice as large as they should be in a normal situation!”

After Yu Fei heard Zhang Zhenshan’s words, there was even more disbelief on his face. He looked at the Glacial Piercer in his hand in stupefaction for a long time, seemingly not daring to believe that this was true. Only after he himself tested it several times, piercing through the several stone pillars of the hall, did he finally sit back down in his chair in a somewhat entranced manner.

“Headmaster, the daggers Bai Yunfei used as projectiles are also kind of strange..” Zhang Zhenshan said and at the same time took out two daggers and gave them to a silent Yu Fei. He then sat down to one side, waiting for Yu Fei’s reaction.

Only now did Liu Cheng regain his composure. He pondered with a solemn expression for a while and said: “Do you think this is the Crafting School...?”

“Impossible.” Seeming to have also considered this question, Zhang Zhenshan shook his head, saying, “Though the Crafting School can reforge soul items and improve their power, I’ve never heard that it can change soul items to such an extent. Besides, if Bai Yunfei had some strong backing, he wouldn’t have been hunted by me like that.”

Right at this moment, Yu Fei, who was pondering with his head lowered, suddenly lifted his head and gave orders in a very serious manner: “Look for him!! Mobilize all the forces to look for him!!

“Whatever the means, you must obtain the method for improving the Glacial Piercer!!”

... ..

In Snowpeak City, Bai Yunfei said goodbye to the people of that trade caravan right after entering the city and began to go shopping in the city alone. To avoid attention, he wore that straw

hat with torn selvage that he had asked for from the trade caravan all the time. He did not even take it off when buying things lest the shopkeepers saw his appearance clearly.

When he finished shopping, it was already in the evening. He ate some food in a small restaurant then found a relatively ordinary tavern to stay.

“For the moment I haven’t noticed anyone suspicious yet. I’ve also observed this tavern’s waiters and owner. They shouldn’t be like the people from last time...” Bai Yunfei thought to himself while lying on the bed, “I’ve prepared all the things I need. For safety, I’ll leave this place for Jade Willow City on the border of Azure Cloud Province tomorrow early in the morning then go into the Northern Cliff Province. At that time I’ll be much safer!

“Jade Willow City... I wonder if it’s related to that Green Willow School?” At this point, he could not help thinking of the Green Willow School’s Qiu Luliu and Chu Yuhe. Then a beautiful figure in light blue clothes appeared in his mind. For the moment, he unexpectedly felt into a trance.

After a long time, Bai Yunfei sat up with a surprised expression. He shook his head with some self-derision and murmured: “What am I thinking about? Inexplicable... Now I’m running for my life! Seizing the time to improve my power and getting out of this Qingyun Province safely are the most important things to do.”

In the early morning of the next day, Bai Yunfei woke up from his cultivation. He breathed out gently then got off the bed, did some exercise and sighed discontentedly: “Alas! Without using the Upgrade Technique to speed up my cultivation, my soulforce improves really slow! Too bad now I don’t dare to casually use that unconscious state to improve my soulforce...”

He left the tavern, bought several steamed buns for breakfast then headed for the south gate of the city.

After Bai Yunfei had been walking several kilometers in a normal

way along main roads and large streets, his expression became more and more unsightly.

“I’m being followed... Damn it! What’s going on? How can they always detect me no matter how careful I am?!” Bai Yunfei cursed in his mind. After getting out of the city, he had noticed that there was something unusual. Although the man who was following him had been careful, the perception of a Soul Warrior like Bai Yunfei still allowed him to detect this person very quickly.

“He’s following me but I haven’t been obstructed by a large number of men. Could it be I’m wrong and he’s not a man of the Zhang family? Or they don’t have enough men and they know they can’t stop me, so they’re following me for the time being while waiting for reinforcements before getting into action? No matter who he is, I’d better be careful and lose him as quickly as possible!”

Upon reaching a fork, Bai Yunfei suddenly accelerated and dashed into an alleyway on the right. Moreover, his speed got faster and faster. In almost a few breaths’ time, he disappeared at a corner not far up ahead.

The moment Bai Yunfei turned into the alleyway, on the main street, a little man dressed up as an ordinary-looking passerby was slightly dumbfounded. He then frowned and thought in surprise: “He detected me already? No wonder he was able to escape from elder Zhang’s hands... Then should I go after him now or not?”

After considering for a while, he shook his head slightly, turned around and went in the other directions: “I followed him waiting for the elders to arrive only because I couldn’t take him down. Now that he already noticed me, if I went after him again, I would simply throw away my life. Anyway, I already know his direction to a certain extent so I’ll just wait for the elders from the school to come and chase after him themselves!”

After going around that corner, Bai Yunfei hid behind a hillside for a long time, but he did not see anyone go after him. He waited

for another while then finally shook his head, turned around and took a trail to continue his journey.

“It’s possible that I was oversuspicious... Perhaps he was just an ordinary petty thief...”

Knowing nothing about the situation, Bai Yunfei went for a stroll in front of the Glacial School’s entrance just like that. Then he left without incident...

... ..

The next day, when Zhang Zhenshan and Liu Cheng returned to the latter’s house in this Snowpeak City together, they received a report from their subordinates -- the man they want to find, Bai Yunfei, had arrived in the city in the evening of the day before yesterday then left yesterday early in the morning!

The moment Zhang Zhenshan and Liu Cheng received this news, both of them were somewhat stupefied. A good while later, Zhang Zhenshan gave a cold snort, saying: “That Bai Yunfei fella is too arrogant! He unexpectedly took a stroll right under the nose of our Glacial School!! I’ll leave immediately. This time I definitely won’t let him get away. I’ll make him pay for my son’s death with his life!!”

“Wait, brother Zhang!” Liu Cheng pressed on Zhang Zhenshan’s shoulder, “Could it be you’ve forgotten headmaster’s order?! This matter is already no longer your own business. It’s now related to the future development of the entire school!”

Seeing that almost distorted expression on Zhang Zhenshan’s face, Liu Cheng sighed and continued to advise: “Your current state isn’t suitable for you to chase after him. If you kill him in a fury, headmaster will hold you responsible and not even I will be able to plead for leniency for you...”

“I suggest that you let me handle this matter!” Seeing that Zhang Zhenshan seemed to be gradually calming down, Liu Cheng



continued: “You don’t have to worry. After obtaining the secret we want, you can do whatever you wish to him!”

Zhang Zhenshan’s expression changed repeatedly. In the end he heaved a sigh gently and said: “Alright, I’ll listen to you. I won’t get into action before we obtain that secret. But what method do you plan to use to deal with him? That man’s mental ability is quite exceptional. If you want to capture and force him to reveal it, I’m afraid this won’t do...”

“Yeah, the method of capturing and questioning via torture shouldn’t be used until the last minute. So, we’ll have to trick him... making him reveal the secret of his own accord!” At this point, Liu Cheng felt silent for a while, seemingly pondering over the information about Bai Yunfei.

“When he was in the city, he bought not only the general map of the empire, but also the detailed maps of Azure Cloud Province, Northern Cliff Province and Great Plains Province. So, it’s highly probable that his current goal is to go to Northern Cliff Province first.

“In that case, he’s most probably going to... Jade Willow City!”

## Chapter 52: Meeting the Old Man From the Fate School Again

---

On a desolate hill.

Bai Yunfei was looking at a map in his hands with a solemn expression. Frowning slightly, he mumbled to himself.

“Um, this forked thing represents a small town, right? Should be so. This circle thing means a mountain, right? Can’t be wrong. This line represents a river. This thicker line represents a large road...” Bai Yunfei said as he nodded. His eyes seemed to be moving bit by bit on the map.

After he ‘studied’ like this for a long time, his face became more and more unsightly. Eventually, his whole face went purple, looking extremely furious. He threw the map in his hands to the ground fiercely, stamped his foot and cursed loudly.

“F\*ck you! Why did I still get lost?!?!”

With his anger not yet vented, he stamped on the map a couple of times. He then raised his head and looked around at that seemingly boundless expanse of mountains and forest, almost feeling like crying.

“Looks like finding someone to ask for directions is still more reliable...”

Bai Yunfei shook his head in frustration and continued to go north. Now the only direction he knew was this ‘north’...

It had been five days now since he had left Snowpeak City. Bai Yunfei did not know how he himself had gone into this desolate area with no signs of human habitation either. Anyway, as he kept going on, he discovered that the map in his hands was completely useless.

When the moon began to rise, Bai Yunfei, who was going on the

side of a large mountain, was almost driven crazy. He decided that if he still could not find someone by the time he got on top of the mountain, he would stop and sleep in the open for another night then continue his journey tomorrow.

When he was about to reach the peak of the mountain, he halted his steps all of a sudden in surprise, sniffed with some uncertainty then showed an ecstatic expression.

“It’s the smell of roast meat! This means there’s someone on the mountain! Finally... I’ve finally run into someone!” Bai Yunfei was so excited that tears almost welled up in his eyes. He immediately quickened his pace, rushing up towards the top of the mountain.

... ..

Atop the mountain, an old man in a gray robe whose hair and beard were both white were sitting under a large tree, slowly adding various kinds of seasonings to a fat rabbit being roasted on a fire. Obviously he was preparing his dinner.

However, the mind-boggling thing was that the fire in front of him was unexpectedly floating in midair! There was no firewood such as tree branches, only a writhing mass of fire floating in midair at a height of two inches from the ground! Moreover, that roast rabbit on the fire was also floating in midair instead of being propped up by something!

If ordinary people saw this scene, they would definitely think that they were seeing a ghost.

That old man’s head was slightly lowered. Even though he was tendering the meat in front of him, he did not seem to be paying attention to it at all. Instead, he was frowning slightly, seeming to be murmuring something.

“According to the guidance of my fate soul, that place should be in Qingyun Province, but even though I’ve been looking for it for over two months, I still haven’t found a clue whatsoever...

“If I can find that place, my power will definitely break through that final barrier and I can even train a batch of experts for my school, making it a bit easier for the school to face that catastrophe later...

“But I can’t peek too much into the future. If I go beyond the limit of ‘right fate’ and enter the scope of ‘fate alteration’, I’ll probably change the matter so much that it’ll become even harder to anticipate. This matter involves the existence of the Fate School. I definitely can’t cause more unforeseen events...

“Alas! I’ve got no choice but to take one step at a time. If there’s such a predestined relationship in my ‘right fate’, eventually I’ll find a trace. At that time, I’ll... Who?!” While talking to himself in a low voice, the old man suddenly raised his head. With his eyes seeming to flash with fire, he looked towards a cluster of trees on the left.

A series of soft rattles rang out as a youngster slowly appeared, who was none other than Bai Yunfei.

“It’s you!”

“It’s you!”

Both Bai Yunfei, who had just walked out, and the old man sitting under the tree said in surprise at the same time when they saw each other’s face.

With a face full of amazement, Bai Yunfei looked at the old man in front of him, who was being illuminated by that mass of fire. He even forgot to continue to go forwards -- this was unexpectedly none other than the mysterious old man from the Fate School who had given him the interspatial ring and said that he was the person who could ‘negate a disaster’ or something before.

“Ha ha, sonny, why are you here?” A question woke Bai Yunfei up with a start. That old man had already awakened from his amazement and was looking at him with smiling eyes.

Bai Yunfei looked at the old man with a strange expression and took a quick look at the fire and the roast rabbit floating in front of him, his eyes glittering. He then straightened up and took a deep bow to the old man, saying respectfully: "It's a pleasure to meet you again, senior."

The old man was taken aback then nodded, saying laughingly: "Oh, not bad, you're well-mannered now. This is much better than when I met you for the first time."

"....."

"Ha ha, come here and take a seat. Judging from your appearance, you seem to be going in a hurry?" When the old man saw that Bai Yunfei was somewhat embarrassed, the smiling expression on his face deepened, and he asked while waving at him.

Bai Yunfei went up to the old man and sat down in front of him. Looking at the rabbit, which had been roasted to the point of being glistening with oil, he slightly swallowed some saliva then nodded and said: "Yeah, I plan to wander the outside world a bit."

Somehow, upon seeing the old man this time, Bai Yunfei felt indescribably friendly towards him. Perhaps this was because only after becoming powerful did he finally understand how great the opportunity given to him by the old man had been...

"Yeah, this Qingyun Province is too small. It's good for you to go out and see the real world of the strong. This way you can grow up faster, which will be good for the future as well..." At this point, he seemed to think of something and did not finish what he was saying. Instead, he corrected himself by asking: "But aren't you a bit impatient? The space ring I gave you contained the entire cultivation method of the first three stages. You should wait until you've become strong to think about these matters again. Right, I remember you wanted to take revenge, why now... Could it be..."

"Yes." Bai Yunfei nodded, "Only thanks to the secret training

method, soul skills and soul armaments you gave me was I able to get my revenge so easily. Besides, because I'm already at the mid-stage Soul Warrior level, I want to leave this Azure Cloud Province and seek greater power..."

"Oh, I see. As you've already reached the mid-stage Soul Warrior level, you indeed can leave..." The old man could only finish half of what he was casually saying before stopping all of a sudden. He then lifted his head abruptly and stared hard at Bai Yunfei. The indifferent expression on his face had disappeared. His eyes were even bulging out slightly and his face was full of disbelief, "You said... What stage did you say you had reached?!"

"Mid-stage Soul Warrior, what's wrong?" Bai Yunfei looked at the old man somewhat doubtfully. Then, seeming to understand what was going on, he continued in a somewhat embarrassed manner, "In fact I also wanted to wait until I've reached the late Soul Warrior stage and become more proficient in the acupoint control method to leave, but I encountered some problems so I had no choice but to..."

Before he could finish what he was saying, he saw a blur. The old man had dashed up to his face in an instant at a simply unimaginable speed and caught hold of his wrist with a grab. When Bai Yunfei was yet to regain composure, he felt a slightly warm, extremely powerful stream of soulforce surge into his body. In just the blink of an eye, it flowed through every part of his body. He even felt that his soul was run through by it.

Bai Yunfei was so stupefied by this sudden action of the old man that he froze right there. After the old man let go of his wrist, he still remained motionless. For a few moments, the atmosphere was obviously somewhat strange.

"Se... Senior?" After ten something seconds, Bai Yunfei finally could not help shouting weakly. As soon as he made a sound, the old man suddenly reacted by murmuring. He seemed to have been emotionally affected to the point of being somewhat lost in

thought.

“It’s true... It’s really the mid-stage Soul Warrior stage. How is this possible...?”

“Oh? Wait, this is... the elemental force of ice! Sonny, are you injured?”

# Chapter 53: Original Property of the Soul

---

“What?” Bai Yunfei asked in puzzlement, having yet to react to the old man’s sudden change of topics.

Frowning slightly, the old man felt it carefully again before finally letting go of Bai Yunfei’s wrist. He slowly returned to his original place, sat down and lowered his head in contemplation without saying a word.

“Senior, did you say there’s the elemental force of ice in my body? What does this mean?” The old man was silent like that but Bai Yunfei was somewhat worried. From the few words the old man had said just then, he could tell that there was something wrong.

Instead of answering his questions, the old man lifted his head and stared at him for a long time with a strange expression. Eventually he said: “How did you cultivate your soulforce?”

“How did I cultivate my soulforce” Bai Yunfei said doubtfully, “I just cultivated it according to the cultivation method you gave me. What’s going on? Is there anything wrong?”

“Is there anything wrong?” The old man’s expression looked even stranger now, “Could it be you don’t know long it takes other soul cultivators to cultivate their soulforce?”

Bai Yunfei was stupefied. After thinking for a bit, he said: “Of course I know. I’ve got a friend whose cultivation speed is slightly faster than mine, er... It’s possible that I’m not talented enough...” At this point, Bai Yunfei scratched his head in a somewhat embarrassed manner, thinking that he had reached this level only because of using the Upgrade Technique as a shortcut and that he was actually far inferior to Li Chengfeng.

“What did you say?! There’s someone who can improve even a bit faster than you?!” The old man’s eyes popped out of his head



again. He even could not help raising his voice a lot, “Who is he?!”

“Oh, he’s called Li Chengfeng. He lives in a village not far from Talus City to the east. He... Senior, I already gave him the cultivation technique and even the two soul skills scrolls you gave me. You... You won’t blame me, right?” Bai Yunfei asked the old man in a somewhat embarrassed manner.

Now the old man’s face had already slackened slightly. For someone extremely powerful like him to lose his composure like this, it could be seen clearly that he had suffered a massive shock.

Another while later, seeming to suddenly remember something, the old man frowned slightly. Then, no longer paying attention to Bai Yunfei, he leaned against the large tree and lowered his head. Nobody knew what he was thinking.

Seeing him like that, Bai Yunfei did not disturb him again. He had no choice but to suppress the impatience in his mind and wait anxiously on one side.

After a long time, the old man seemed to have finally thought something over and his expression had also returned to normal. He raised his head and said to Bai Yunfei: “Sonny, if I guess correctly, you fought someone from the Glacial School earlier, right? Was your opponent Zhang Zhenshan of that Zhang family?”

“Oh? How do you know?”

“Ha ha, don’t forget that I knew you wanted to get revenge. Didn’t I warn you that if you want to revenge yourself on Zhang Yang, you must be careful of Zhang Zhenshan and the Glacial School?” The old man shook his head slightly, “But your current power was unexpectedly enough for you to have a fight against Zhang Zhenshan then run away. This is very good already. Though the opponent inflicted internal injuries on you, since you ran into me again, plus, this was caused by the guidance of your own fate, I’ll help you this time!”

Bai Yunfei immediately had a happy expression. Just when he wanted to go forwards and ask the old man to help him get rid of the so-called 'elemental force of ice' in his body, the old man waved to him, saying: "You don't have to panic. Waiting for a while won't kill you. You see, because of your appearance, I haven't even eaten the rabbit meat."

Now the old man's mood seemed to have suddenly become much better. He laughed and made a wave of his hand towards the fire in front of him. That fire immediately floated to one side and stopped when it was one meter away, continuing to serve as a source of light. The old man reached out his hand and took a swing at the air. That rabbit, which had been roasted to the point of being glossily golden and smelling delicious, was cut in two right away. He made a grab at one half and pulled it towards himself, but the other half floated up to Bai Yunfei's face.

"Looks like you're very hungry too. Let's eat first. We'll talk about other things later."

Looking at the roast half rabbit in front of him in stupefaction, only after several seconds did he react. He hurriedly reached out his hand, grabbed the meat and looked at the old man again, who had already started to eat leisurely. It was not good for Bai Yunfei to say anything again, and he was really very hungry so he put aside all his questions and began to devour the roast meat in his hand.

Not long later, this old man and this youngster both sat on the ground somewhat idly, chewing the bones in their hands slowly. The old man appeared to be in a very good mood at the moment, having even temporarily discarded the manners of a senior expert like himself.

"Alright, now get over here. I'll get rid of that elemental force of ice in your body for you."

Hearing this, Bai Yunfei immediately had a happy expression. He

hurriedly walked up to the old man and looked at him in a somewhat nervous manner.

The old man reached out his right hand and grabbed hold of Bai Yunfei's right wrist as before. The moment he was grabbed, Bai Yunfei felt a warm stream of soulforce rush into his wrist from the old man's palm. It then went a round in his body from his wrist. However, the soulforce this time seemed to be a bit fiercer, faster and also warmer than it had been last time. Of course, Bai Yunfei did not feel any discomfort. Instead, his whole body felt warm, and even his soul was surrounded in a warm feeling, which was extremely comfortable.

"It's alright now." That comfortable feeling suddenly disappeared and the old man's indifferent words came into his ears.

"It's... It's alright now?" Hearing this, Bai Yunfei asked in some disbelief.

"You're okay now. It was just a small problem. You were hit by the opponent's attacks that contained the power of a natural element. The elemental force of ice entered your body. Though you seemed to repel most of it at the time, some of it still hid in your body. But you're too weak so you couldn't notice this. If this hidden elemental force isn't disposed of, when you fight another soul cultivator who also controls the elemental force of ice, it will erupt, putting you in danger."

"This, this is still considered a small problem?" Hearing the old man's words, Bai Yunfei was frightened inside.

"It was certainly a small problem to me. Don't worry. Just now I already neutralized that elemental force of ice for you and left it in your body in the form of pure energy. It'll be a bit of a help to your cultivation."

Bai Yunfei still touched his body from head to toe worriedly but did not notice anything unusual. In the end he had no choice but to

give up.

He pondered about this danger, which he himself had been unaware of and which had now been ‘dealt with’ in such a strange manner, but did not have a clue so he shook his head and did not think about it anymore.

“Right, senior, I want to go to Jade Willow City, but...I’m already lost. Please tell me the right direction.” Suddenly remembering the most important problem he was faced with at the moment, Bai Yunfei asked in a somewhat embarrassed manner.

“Jade Willow City? Just go straight in this direction. You’ll reach it after two days.” The old man gave him a strange look then said while casually pointing to a direction.

“Oh, thank you very much, senior.” Bai Yunfei secretly let out a sigh of relief, rejoicing in the fact that he finally knew the right direction. He then walked to one side, sat down and lowered his head thinking about something.

“Sonny, now you want to go to Jade Willow City to head for the Northern Cliff Province later, right? Why do you want to go there?” Seeing him remain silent, the old man asked somewhat curiously.

“I want to go to the Great Plains Province to join the Crafting School and learn its skills.” Bai Yunfei raised his head and said, as this did not need to be concealed either, “I think by the time I reach that place, I will have already broken through to the Soul Sprite stage. I don’t know much about cultivation and have already learned the method for the first three stages so at that time I’ll need the guidance of a master.”

“Will have broken through to the Soul Sprite stage by the time of reaching that place? This brat... how can he mention the improvement of power as if it was a piece of cake...?” The old man whispered to himself in his mind, but did not show signs of amazement again. He nodded slightly, saying: “Oh, you want to

join the Crafting School? This isn't a bad choice. Given your power, when you reach the Soul Sprite stage, as long as the original property of your soul and the elemental force of fire are not too incompatible, you can choose the fire element. It'll definitely be very good for your development after you join the Crafting School..."

"Original property of the soul?" Bai Yunfei said curiously, "I knew very little about these things. Please tell me about them, senior."

"The first three stages of a soul cultivator involve controlling the body. The next three stages, Soul Sprite, Soul Ancestor and Soul Exalt, involve controlling the natural elements. As for the last three, you don't need to know about them yet."

"Elemental forces are the forces of the elements in nature. Among them, the five elements, namely Metal, Wood, Water, Fire and Earth, plus Wind and Lightning are the most commonly seen properties of elemental forces. The other elements, such as ice, cursing, space, and even the 'fate' my Fate School cultivates are also elemental forces."

"Each person's soul has its original property, which is the most suitable property to cultivate. An original property contains at least one element and can also contain several. When you reach the Soul Sprite stage, you'll have to choose one element to be the main property of your cultivation. It'll be the property that will go with you for the rest of your life and that you can control the most proficiently. Of course, after becoming powerful, you can also choose to cultivate the forces of other elements at the same time."

In fact, after you reach the Soul Sprite stage, the soulforce cultivation method will still be the same as before. Only, the absorption of elemental forces in nature will be added to it. During practice, you'll use your soul to sense the elemental force affiliated with you in your surroundings then draw it into your body to train the body as well as to become more familiar with it. When your

soul becomes more familiar with and closer to it, it'll get easier for you to control, and stronger too."

Bai Yunfei kept silent, trying to digest these pieces of information.

After a long time, he raised his head and asked again: "Could you please tell me a bit about soul armaments and soul skills as well?"

"You really don't know anything..." The old man shook his head and continued: "Soul armaments are divided into three tiers: heaven, earth and human. Each tier consists of three levels: high, middle and low. Soul techniques are also divided into the same tiers and levels."

"The spear I gave you is a low-earth tier soul armament. It contains an extremely powerful elemental force of fire. But you're not strong enough at the moment so you can't unleash its true power. When you reach the Soul Sprite stage, you'll be able to really use it. Coincidentally, you want to join the Crafting School, so you'll have to choose to cultivate the elemental force of fire. In that case, I was right to give you this spear at that time."

Bai Yunfei looked at the Fire-tipped Spear in his hands thoughtfully: "There are three tiers: heaven, earth and human. The Fire-tipped Spear's grade is 'low inheritance', corresponding with 'low earth-tier'. This means, 'human-tier' corresponds with 'rare', such as the Glacial Pierce and the Goldsilk Soul Armor... How about 'heaven-tier'? I wonder what grade the Upgrade Technique classifies it as...?"

While pondering, Bai Yunfei seemed to suddenly remember something. He raised his head and said in a somewhat embarrassed manner: "Right, senior, I owe you a great debt of gratitude but I still don't even know your name..."

The old man was surprised then cursed laughingly: "This brat, only now do you remember to ask for my name? It's okay to tell you my name. I'm Ge Yiyun. This name is kind of famous in this

continent. If you run into any small problems later, I allow you to use it to intimidate people...”

“Er, thank you very much, senior...” As his little calculation was seen through, Bai Yunfei laughed quite awkwardly.

“Alright, this is it then. I still have something to do and need to leave right away.” Without a warning sign, Ge Yiyun stood up all of a sudden and said to Bai Yunfei, “Sonny, you must grow up a bit faster. Don’t disappoint this old man...”

After saying these words, he turned around and left without hesitation. In just several blinks, he disappeared into the darkness of the night. Bai Yunfei was stupefied for a good while and did not even react to this...

## Chapter 54: First Arrival in Jade Willow City; A Cliched Scene?

---

“He left just like that?”

Standing alone atop the mountain, Bai Yunfei looked in a stupefied manner in the direction Ge Yiyun had disappeared.

The surroundings suddenly darkened, waking Bai Yunfei up with a start. It turned out that floating fire on one side was slowly disappearing in midair.

“Why did he leave right away?... In this kind of situation, shouldn’t he have given me some soul armaments and soul skills again, or spent his energy helping me improve my power, at least until I break through to the Soul Sprite stage?” Somehow, these thoughts unexpectedly appeared in his minds at this moment.

“Er, how can I have such greedy thoughts...?” Bai Yunfei was startled and laughed in self-derision. He then climbed up a large tree, ready to get some rest.

“Anyway, tonight I was really very lucky to have run into senior Ge Yiyun already. Let’s continue my journey tomorrow and reach Jade Willow City as quickly as possible...”

... ..

At the foot of the mountain, Ge Yiyun was walking slowly with his hands behind his back. Even though his footsteps were obviously very slow, he was strangely covering several hundred meters with every few steps.

“I can’t have too much connection with him again. Until now, my help has still been within the boundary of ‘right fate’. If I help him more, I’m afraid something unexpected will happen. It’d be better for me to be careful...” Ge Yiyun argued to himself in his mind as he walked, “As for his strange cultivation speed, I’d better not interfere. No matter what secret he has, this won’t do my Fate



School any harm...

“Besides him, there’s still that guy called Li Chengfeng. If what he said is true then...” Ge Yiyun slightly frowned, “When I just arrived in Azure Clouds Province, my fate soul unexpectedly didn’t guide me to someone with such an extraordinary talent for cultivation... But this is also a good thing. As I knew about the guy from him, this is not within the influence boundary of the fate soul’s guidance so I can do a lot more things now. If that’s case...

“Anyway, as long as there’s something helpful to my Fate School in facing the future disaster, I definitely won’t ignore any possibility of getting it!”

... ..

At noon two days later, when Bai Yunfei saw a spacious main road again, his eyes were almost brimmed with tears—he had finally reached a normal route!

After setting foot on this main road, where it was impossible for him to get lost, Bai Yunfei was somewhat elated inside. He looked around as he walked. Seeing a sinuous river beside the road and seemingly endless lines of willows, he sighed emotionally in his heart, “No wonder it’s called Jade Willow City. There are so many willows... Speaking of it, this kind of naming is really lazy. This place has lots of willows so it’s called Jade Willow City, then a place with lots of pine trees would be called Green Pine City and a place with lots of poplars Poplar City... Such a way of naming isn’t stressful at all...”

While letting his mind wander, he slowly went into the city. Of course, he had taken out that torn straw hat and put it on his head again—although he had yet to notice any danger in this place, it would be better for him to be as low-key as possible.

However, as opposed to when he had entered Snowpeak City last time, Bai Yunfei was not very nervous this time. Perhaps this was because he had left Snowpeak City without any incident last time

or because this place was already very close to the boundary of Azure Clouds Province. At the moment, besides carefully paying attention to the situation in the surroundings, Bai Yunfei was also somewhat enjoying the scenery around him.

After going into the city, Bai Yunfei was immediately a bit amazed by how prosperous this Jade Willow City was. Last time, when he had been in Snowpeak City, he had only taken a hurried stroll, and at that time it had been near dusk so he had not been in the mood for ‘enjoying’ the scenery like he was now. Therefore, it could be said that this was the first time he had really seen the scenes in a big city.

The streets were so spacious that it could accommodate four carriages running side by side. On both sides of the streets, there were all kinds of business shops, looking especially splendid and luxurious. Bai Yunfei even felt that the things he bought from some small street-side stands were obviously better than those he had bought from the so-called ‘large shops’ in Talus City. Amidst the coming and going people, a wide variety of voices and cries could be heard constantly, and the thing that made him feel energetic the most was that...

“So many beautiful women...” Bai Yunfei eventually could not help sighing with emotion after standing in a trance in the middle of the street for half a minute.

Somehow Bai Yunfei always felt that graceful and charming figures kept showing up on the street one after another. The scents of their cosmetics had even spread through the entire street. These beautiful young girls were strolling on the street, either alone or accompanied by someone. Their crystalline voices could be heard from time to time when they talked.

Under Bai Yunfei’s ‘audacious’ gaze, a young girl carrying a basket in her hand quickly walked past him with a slight blush. Watching her silhouette disappear into the crowd, Bai Yunfei unexpectedly could not help letting out a sigh.

However, the expression on his face suddenly became strange afterwards. He withdrew his eyes and fell into a trance for a long time then shook his head with force, mumbling, "What was wrong with me just now? Impossible, in the past I definitely wouldn't have acted like this. Just now, when facing these young girls, I unexpectedly started to make frivolous remarks about them in my mind as if this was a natural thing to do..."

While pondering over the 'abnormalities' in his mind, he slowly headed for the center of the city. For the time being, he was no longer interested in enjoying the beauty of women.

After having a meal in a quite luxurious restaurant, Bai Yunfei continued to stroll on the streets, ready to go on a shopping spree before resting for a night then resuming his journey tomorrow.

Walking out from a jewelry shop, Bai Yunfei touched the space ring on his hand in a rather satisfied manner, thinking to himself, "Although they were somewhat expensive, they're all 'high-grade' pieces of jewelry. Now I should be able to begin researching the matter of jewelry upgrading..."

"You scoundrel, you're not allowed to touch my young lady!"

"Oh, you're pretty fierce for a young servant girl. I haven't done anything to your young lady either. It's just that she looks sick so I want to take her to a doctor. How can you say that a young master like me is a scoundrel?"

As soon as Bai Yunfei walked out of this restaurant, he heard the angry scolding of a young girl and the arrogant voice of a man.

Halting his steps, he looked in the direction of the sounds and saw that a luxuriously-dressed youngster with a totally arrogant expression and four people in attendant clothing were blocking the way of two young girls at the entrance of an alley on the right of the restaurant.

In front of them, there was a young girl dressed in servant

clothing. Despite being outnumbered, she was not showing any sign of fear. Instead, she was looking angrily at these people with a cold expression.

Behind her, there was a young girl in light blue clothes who was standing with difficulty by supporting herself on a wall. Her head lowered, her body bent, her long beautiful hair was covering her face, making it impossible to see what she looked like. It seemed she was sick and was enduring an extreme pain.

“Humph! Little servant girl, don’t fail to appreciate my kindness. I’m second young master Long. In this Jade Willow City, I’m well-known for being ready to help others. You see, your young lady is so sick that she can’t even walk. You’d better let me take her to my home for treatment. Don’t worry, I’ll definitely cure her. Besides, I’ll cherish her...” As that man talked, his voice changed somewhat, sounding like there was a some kind of viciousness in it.

“No matter the place, this kind of rich good-for-nothing always exists...” Bai Yunfei frowned slightly and said doubtfully in his mind, “Plus, why does this somehow look familiar to me? There’s a word about to come out... ‘Contrived’? What does it mean?”

While preventing the people in front of her from approaching, the servant girl glanced somewhat anxiously at the young girl behind her and said with hatred, “Humph, you scoundrels! Don’t even think about doing anything to my young lady! If she hadn’t taken ill all of a sudden, given her power, she would destroy you lowly underlings with ease! Let me tell you, my young lady is a soul...”

“Humph! Don’t try to scare me with those words! Both of you look very unfamiliar. I think you must’ve come to Jade Willow City to amuse yourself, right? No wonder you don’t recognize me. Let me tell you, in this Jade Willow City, even the Green Willow School has to show the house of Long some respect!” That man interrupted the servant girl and continued to brag.

That servant girl was stubborn but now she was startled, as if she was somewhat frightened. Additionally, she was worried about the young lady behind her so the expression on her face was obviously anxious, with tears vaguely welling up in her eyes...

The people who had been busy going in the surroundings originally had now run far away, seemingly because they were rather afraid of this second young master Long.

“Alright, quit babbling, servant girl. I still have to hurry up and cure your young lady. Just go with me!” That man seemed to have become somewhat impatient. He immediately pushed the servant girl in front of him aside then told his subordinates to catch her, not allowing her to escape.

“Ha ha, don’t be afraid, young lady. Just let me take you to my home. I’ll ask the best doctor to treat you...” Second young master Long said in a ‘friendly’ manner while looking at the young girl in graceful light blue clothes, who was leaning against the wall. At the same time, he reached out his hand, wanting to grab her wrist.

However, just when his hand was about to touch her, another hand suddenly reached out and grabbed hold of his arm, making it impossible for him to move it forwards.

“Oh?” Second young master Long was slightly stupefied for a moment. Turning his head doubtfully to take a look, he saw that a youngster in ordinary gray clothes and a rather broken-rimmed straw hat was grabbing his arm and looking at him with eyes full of disdain.

“Who are you? This is none of your business!” After a moment of stupefaction, second young master Long immediately reacted. He had not expected that someone would dare to stop him!

The disdain in Bai Yunfei’s eyes intensified. Exerting a little strength with his hand, he pushed him away directly. Second young master Long did not seem to have expected this man to dare to attack him first so he staggered backwards continuously. Only

when his subordinates supported him was he able to regain his balance.

“You! You’re so insolent! Don’t you know who I am?! Don’t you know who my father is? My father is Long Gang!! Now that you dared to offend me, I’ll make you suffer so much you’ll wish you were dead!” Second young master Long roared as he stared hard at Bai Yunfei, his face totally red.

“These words... Can you be any more cliched?” Bai Yunfei curled his mouth and said disdainfully.

# Chapter 55: Artificial Respiration is Needed?

---

“These words... Can you be a bit more cliched?” Bai Yunfei curled his mouth and said disdainfully.

“You...” Although the young master Long did not know what the word ‘cliched’ mentioned by Bai Yunfei meant, he understood very well that disdainful expression on the opponent’s face. He shouted loudly to his several minions, “All of you go up! Break his legs for me! Beat him up for me!!”

Hearing their master’s order, these men immediately charged towards Bai Yunfei with ferocious looks in their eyes.

Bang, bang, bang, bang!!

Four rhythmic deep sounds rang out. Afterwards, under the dumbfounded look in second young master Long’s eyes, the four subordinates, who just then had still been charging up ferociously, were all sent flying backwards in four arcs then smashed into his body!

Second young master Long pushed the several people on him away with difficulty, struggled up from the ground and looked at Bai Yunfei, who was walking towards him slowly. The arrogant expression on his face had already disappeared. He backed off in terror continuously, shouting, “You... Don’t come near me!! I’m the second young master of the house of Long, Long Tao!! My father is Long Gang! My brother is a soul cultivator! If you dare to hurt me, the Long definitely won’t let you off!”

Hearing these words, Bai Yunfei halted his steps and stared at him with a strange expression for a while. Eventually he could not help sneering, “Oh... I see. Turns out you’re just a ‘long tao’!!”

TL Note: Long Tao means to be a 'walk-on' part.

“That’s right!! I’m none other than Long Tao! I’m the young

master of the Long!! You can't hurt me!" Long tao... er, second young master Long Tao did not notice, nor did he understand the tone of ridicule in Bai Yunfei's words so he nodded unceasingly.

The corners of Bai Yunfei's mouth twitched. Not in the mood for more talking, he said with a wave of his hand, "Get lost!"

After watching this group of people disappear into the crowd, Bai Yunfei shook his head, his facial expression still looking somewhat strange. It was impossible to know what he was thinking.

"Young lady, young lady! Are you alright?" A voice full of anxiety rang out. Bai Yunfei was startled and turned around hurriedly. He saw that the blue-clad young girl, who originally had been supporting herself on the wall, was now lying on the ground. That servant girl was crouching in front of her in extreme anxiousness shouting softly. Judging from her voice, she was about to burst into tears already.

Bai Yunfei quickly walked over and said at the same time, "Miss, what's wrong with your young lady? I can help..."

His words suddenly came to a halt. Even his body froze right there. He looked in stupefaction at the young girl, who was lying on the ground with tightly-closed eyes, his face full of astonishment.

"It's her... It's unexpectedly her!!" Bai Yunfei was extremely surprised because the person in front of him was none other than the young girl who had been with Zhang Yang at that time in Talus City -- Liu Meng!

At this moment, an indescribable feeling surged up in his heart. Bai Yunfei just stood right there in a trance like that. Only when the servant girl's anxious voice was heard again did he wake up with a start. Shaking his head with force, he calmed his mind down a little then walked up to the side of Liu Meng and squatted down to see if he could offer any help.



Liu Meng was lying flat on the ground. Her white face had now gone pale, her lips closed tightly, her beautiful eyebrows wrinkled. She had no reaction to the servant girl's shouting at all.

Seeing the young girl like that, Bai Yunfei somehow felt an ache in his heart. He crouched down in front of her somewhat helplessly but did not know what to do. He had no medical skills either so there was nothing he could do except feel anxious. The servant girl seemed to be extremely worried too. The only thing she did was call 'young lady' loudly.

All of a sudden, an idea flashed across Bai Yunfei's mind. He was stupefied and murmured.

"Oh... Artificial respiration is needed?"

Just when Bai Yunfei was in a dilemma about whether to use this seemingly 'effective' method of emergency treatment, a soft groan was heard. It was the young girl regaining consciousness.

A feeling of 'regret' appeared in his heart instantly. After disdaining it a bit, Bai Yunfei asked in a slightly anxious manner, "Miss, are you okay? Are you hurt anywhere?"

Even though the girl had waken up, she was yet to open her eyes and her eyebrows were still wrinkled. A layer of fine beads of sweat had even appeared on her forehead, as if she was suffering from an extreme pain. She called softly, "Xiao Ning, where, where are you?"

"I'm here, young lady! I'm here! Are you alright? Please don't scare me!" The servant girl answered nonstop right away, appearing very nervous, tears about to come out from her eyes.

"Take, take me to a doctor, quickly..." The young girl's fragile voice woke this silly servant girl, who was so worried that she had become dizzy, up to the most important thing to do at the moment.

"Yes! Yes! Let's go to a doctor!" Only now did Xiao Ning react. She wanted to go and raise her young lady up but she discovered

that with her small body, it was impossible for her to take her young lady to a doctor.

Just when she became anxious inside, a pair of hands suddenly reached out to the young girl's backs of the neck and knees and lifted her up horizontally.

Xiao Ning was frightened, but she immediately reacted. Raising her head to take a look, she saw that this was none other than the young man who had fought off those scoundrels just then.

Although she felt that it was somewhat inappropriate for her young lady to be carried by a stranger like this, the current situation did not allow her to be so fussy and she said to Bai Yunfei, "Thank, thank you very much, mister. Please take my young lady to a doctor immediately..."

"Yeah, let's go." Bai Yunfei hurriedly urged the servant girl to lead the way. Despite carrying a beautiful girl with a pleasant smell in his bosom, he was not feeling comfortable at all. Instead, there was only anxiety in his heart.

... ..

At a clinic, Bai Yunfei was sitting on a stool at the front door looking in a somewhat preoccupied manner at the people coming and going on the street, thinking about something.

It had already been more than an hour since he had taken Liu Meng to this place. The doctor was giving treatment inside. It would be better for him not to be disturbed so Bai Yunfei was sitting here at the door waiting.

Soft footsteps came from behind him, walking him up with a start. He hurriedly turned around to take a look with a happy expression.

He saw that Liu Meng was walking towards him slowly under the support of Xiao Ning.

Dressed entirely in blue clothes, she looked fresh and elegant.

Her waist was slender, her carriage graceful, and her beautiful hair was flowing behind her like a waterfall. Her face had already become a bit ruddier. With a faint smile on the corners of her mouth, she was sizing him up using her bright large eyes.

Bai Yunfei was temporarily unexpectedly entranced by her looks...

“Pfff... Mister, my young lady is talking to you! Wake up please!” Bai Yunfei was awakened by a warning. He saw that the servant girl Xiao Ning was looking at him very mischievously and next to her, Liu Meng was blushing. She gave Xiao Ning a stare in somewhat resentful manner then turned to Bai Yunfei and gently made a salute.

“Mister, thank you very much for helping me earlier...” Her voice was clear, tender and melodic.

Bai Yunfei was entranced for a moment again, but then a tinge of disappointment appeared in his heart, “She... really doesn’t remember me.”

But he shook his head slightly again right away, saying in self-derision in his heart, “What am I thinking about? It’s normal for her not to remember me. After all, when we met for the first time, I was merely a ‘pleb’ in the eyes of those rich people...”

“Hey! Mister, you’ve gone into a trance again!”

Xiao Ning’s warning was heard again. Bai Yunfei brushed that indescribable thought in his mind aside and asked doubtfully, “What?”

“He he... Mister, though my young lady is stunning, you can’t go into a trance in such a rude way looking at her either!” Xiao Ning could not help laughing and saying mischievously again, “My young lady wants to ask you to a tea house for a chat to thank you for your help just now!”

“Ah? Oh, that’s fine...” Bai Yunfei scratched his head in an

embarrassed manner then nodded in agreement.

... ..

## Chapter 56: Liu Meng

---

On the second floor of the Mingxiang Tea House, in a private room,

After sitting down in this place, Bai Yunfei obviously still felt a bit uncomfortable in front of the two girls. Holding his cup with both hands, he drank from it nonstop and did not even notice it when he drank the tea leaves.

Seeing him like this, the servant girl Xiao Ning could not help letting out a ‘pfff’ sound of laughter, but when she was about to burst out laughing, she was stopped by Liu Meng.

Seeing such behavior from this young man in front of her, Liu Meng was somewhat tempted to laugh too. She filled Bai Yunfei’s cup again with tea gently and said softly: “This time I was suddenly taken ill and even ran into some good-for-nothings. Fortunately you got into action and saved me. I really can’t be thankful enough to you.”

Bai Yunfei put the tea cup in his hand down, calmed his indescribably nervous mind down a bit and said while waving his hands: “You don’t have to stand on ceremony like this, miss. Helping people is the source of pleasu... Er, I mean, getting in to action upon seeing injustice is what everyone should do. Besides, it took me very little effort, so you don’t have to care about this too much.”

“But it didn’t take you just a little effort...” Liu Meng said with a chuckle, “At the time, there were so many people, but you were the only one who dared to get into action to help me. That second young master Long is an infamous good-for-nothing in this city. Relying on his family’s influence, he often commits all kinds of outrages. This time I went out alone to relieve my boredom but I didn’t expect to become entangled with him.

“The house of Long is quite powerful in Jade Willow City. Even

the Green Willow School is somewhat afraid of it, but this time you have offended that second young master Long because of me. I've really embroiled you in this...

“Actually, given my power as a soul cultivator, I shouldn't have been afraid of those good-for-nothings, but at the time, I was suddenly taken ill. The pain was unbearable so I was basically defenseless, and he was able to bully me only because of this...”

At first Bai Yunfei sighed in his mind: “The Green Willow School is really here!”

But upon hearing the last words, he was dumbstruck for a while and said in amazement: “Oh? You said you're a soul cultivator too?”

Liu Meng nodded smilingly: “It's kind of embarrassing, but I'm really a soul cultivator... Oh, what do you mean by 'too'? Could it be you're also a soul cultivator?”

Seeing Bai Yunfei nod, on one side, Xiao Ning could not help whispering: “Whoa! Turns out you're a soul cultivator, mister! No wonder you were able to fight off those scoundrels so easily!”

Noticing that the look in Liu Meng's eyes seemed to have changed a little, Bai Yunfei became somewhat uncomfortable again: “Ha ha, this doesn't mean anything either. I'm just a weak soul cultivator. Miss, you...”

“I'm Liu Meng. You can call me Meng'er directly, mister.” Hearing Bai Yunfei call her 'miss' all the time, Liu Meng smiled and said in a low voice. This might or might not be an illusion but Bai Yunfei seemed to see her face slightly redden as she said these words.

“May I know your name, mister?” Liu Meng continued with another question after pausing for a while.

Bai Yunfei had not expected to be allowed to call her so intimately so he was somewhat stunned for a short period of time.

Only after two minutes did he say rather cautiously: “Miss... Er, Meng, Meng’er... You can just call me Yunfei...”

“Yunfei? Ha ha, it sounds full of freedom.”

Bai Yunfei drank another large mouthful of tea, as if doing this could dilute that indescribable feeling of nervousness in his heart. He then put the cup down, seeming to think of something, and asked curiously: “Right, Meng, Meng’er... Since you’re a soul cultivator, how did you suddenly become like that earlier?”

To soul cultivators, even the lowest-ranked ones had much stronger bodies than those of ordinary people so common illnesses simply could not affect them, and this was the reason why Bai Yunfei asked that question.

Right after his question, in front of him, Liu Meng felt silent all of a sudden. After a long time, she sighed softly and continued:

“I’ve been suffering from a weak body and illnesses since I was little, almost growing up in pots of medicine. No matter the treatment method, they couldn’t be cured and even become more and more serious. My whole body was often in extreme pain all of a sudden, as if there were countless spikes moving back and forth nonstop in my body. It was extremely painful. The doctor who treated me said that I wouldn’t live past the age of ten...

“Later, when I was eight, I ran into a traveling senior. She pitied me so not only did she awaken my soulforce, she also taught me a cultivation method, allowing me to become a soul cultivator. Then she continued her journey after giving me some prescriptions, saying that if I used them and didn’t stop training, my body would be cured.

“As I became more powerful, my body got better as well. Now I’m rarely taken ill. As long as I can break through to the Soul Sprite stage, my body will be tempered by the natural elements and I’ll be able to get rid of these illnesses forever...

“Today, I did take my medicine in the morning but somehow I was still taken ill earlier. At the time my entire body was in severe pain. Even my mind was extremely confused, and I also ran into those scoundrels. If you hadn’t got into action to help me, perhaps I would have died from the pain. It can be said that I owe you for saving my life...”

Bai Yunfei slightly leaned his body to one side. At first he immersed himself in listening to her, but when she suddenly said the words ‘owe you for saving my life’, he almost choked on the tea and said while shaking his head again and again: “Er... You’re taking it too seriously, Meng’er. What I did wasn’t so important. I didn’t save your life. You don’t need to...”

Luckily he put on the brakes in time and swallowed back the words ‘repay me with yourself’. Bai Yunfei looked down on himself for a while in his mind again.

“Need to what?” However, in front of him, Liu Meng asked out of curiosity.

“He he, nothing, nothing at all. Don’t mention it again, Meng’er, otherwise I’ll feel embarrassed...”

On one side, Xiao Ning could not bear seeing this anymore so she cut in: “Mister Yunfei, as a man, how can you seem even shyer than my young lady? Where has the heroic spirit shown when you dealt with those bad guys earlier gone?”

“Cough cough cough!!” Hearing those words from Xiao Ning, Bai Yunfei was even more embarrassed and coughed continuously.

.....

When the three of them walked out of the tea house, it was already dusk. Before parting ways, Liu Meng seemed to suddenly remember something and asked Bai Yunfei laughingly: “Right, Yunfei, tomorrow let’s take a stroll to Mt. Spring outside the city together! You just arrived in Jade Willow City so this is the right



time to go for a stroll. I heard that the spring water on that mountain is clear and sweet and can even cure illnesses!”

“Oh? Tomorrow? Only both of us will go there?” By sheer coincidence, Bai Yunfei blurted these questions.

Right afterwards, he realized that they were inappropriate and almost felt like giving himself a couple of slaps: He had unexpectedly blurted such flirtatious words!

“Hey hey! Mister Yunfei! You’ve gone too far. I didn’t expect that you’d dare to flirt with my young lady!” On one side, Xiao Ning said in pretended anger, “Besides, you have just left me out directly, haven’t you? But I’ve got to look after my young lady all the time. I can’t leave her side even for a moment!”

“Xiao Ning, you devilish servant girl! What nonsense are you saying?!” Liu Meng gave Xiao Ning a slight stare then looked at Bai Yunfei with a charming smile, her face slightly reddening.

“Well, it’s settled then! Yunfei, you should go back and rest early. We’ll meet up at the east city gate at dawn tomorrow!”

By the time Bai Yunfei regained his composure, the two girls had already disappeared at the end of the street. He stood still there for a long time and eventually let out a sigh. Now he had no choice but to turn around and walk towards that tavern where he had booked a room earlier.

.....

In the tavern, Bai Yunfei was lying on the bed with hands behind his head looking at the ceiling in a somewhat preoccupied manner. He was not even in the mood for cultivation. His mind was unceasingly recalling the scenes after he had come across Liu Meng today.

Suddenly, his expression changed and his eyebrows wrinkled. It seemed some important matter had come to his mind.

“Her identity... When she was with Zhang Yang at that time, she

called Zhang Zhenshan uncle. What's the relationship between her and the Zhang family?" At this point, Bai Yunfei's eyebrows wrinkled even more tightly, "She should have known that Zhang Yang is already dead. If there's a close relationship between them, she should have already known that I killed Zhang Yang. But her behavior today...

"Did she really forget about me? Or... was it just an act? That's not true. When she was taken ill, it was definitely not an act. Plus, I didn't notice anything unusual in the surroundings.

Then... am I thinking too much? Perhaps there's not any close relationship between her and the Zhang family. I remember at that time her attitude towards Zhang Yang was pretty cold..."

Now Bai Yunfei could not help recalling the scene when he and Liu Meng had met for the first time.

.....

"Zhang Yang, stop... Did I ever say I wanted him dead?"

.....

"It doesn't seem to me that this person was pretending he was in a trance. Moreover, even though he offended me, there's no need to take his life either..."

.....

"He already took a kick from you just now. He's seriously injured too. Let's consider that he's been punished."

.....

"Ha ha, besides, he already compensated me with tanghulu. It's just that you knocked it down..."

.....

As Bai Yunfei thought about what had happened, his eyes gradually dimmed. An unprecedented feeling surged inside him bit by bit, seemingly preventing him from doubting Liu Meng,

preventing him from thinking about the bad aspects.

“Tomorrow... Stroll...” Bai Yunfei recalled the words said by Liu Meng when they had parted ways just then, “But I have to leave this place. Even though the Zhang family hasn’t found me yet, if I stay here longer, I’ll be in more danger...”

“Well, it’s settled then! Yunfei, you should go back and rest early. We’ll meet up at the east city gate at dawn tomorrow!” His ears seemed to hear Liu Meng’s gentle words again. Bai Yunfei frowned slightly, seemingly having a fierce mental struggle.

Eventually...

“Let’s have fun for a day. There shouldn’t be any problem...”

# Chapter 57: Stroll and Tell

---

In the morning of the next day,

When Liu Meng and Xiao Ning arrived at the east gate, Bai Yunfei had already been there for nearly an hour.

“Yunfei, I’m sorry for being late.” Liu Meng quickened her pace a bit, went up to Bai Yunfei and said with a face full of regret.

“Ha ha, it’s okay. I arrived not long ago too...” Bai Yunfei laughed in an unconcerned manner, not telling her that he had been waiting in the cold for several dozen minutes.

“Mister Yunfei, you can’t blame my young lady.” On one side, Xiao Ning cut in, “She was somewhat ill again this morning and only got a bit better after taking a dose of medicine I hurriedly prepared for her. Then she rushed over here right away.”

“Oh? Really? Meng’er, how are you feeling now? You’re not still sick, are you? Otherwise, let’s not go to that Mt. Spring today.” Bai Yunfei asked continuously in a slightly anxious manner, his expression changing a bit.

Liu Meng seemed not to have expected Bai Yunfei to react this way so she was slightly stupefied then said with smiling eyes: “I’m not so weak as you think. Don’t forget I’m a soul cultivator! Relax, I’m fine already. As long as my illness don’t act up, there won’t be any problem.”

“Oh, that’s very good, that’s very good...” Seeming to notice his own loss of composure, Bai Yunfei scratched his head in a somewhat embarrassed manner. Then, he seemed to remember something and hid his right hand behind his back. When he brought it out again, it was already holding a skewer of tanghulu.

“Meng’er, this is the tanghulu I specifically bought for you.” Seeing the slightly amazed expression on Liu Meng’s face, Bai Yunfei handed over the tanghulu smilingly.

“Yunfei, you, how did you know that I like eating tanghulu?” Liu Meng received it with a broad smile and asked curiously.

“Er, I saw that many girls on the streets all seemed to like eating tanghulu so I bought some for you.” Bai Yunfei told a little lie. Of course he did not dare to tell her that when they had met each other for the first time he had knocked down the tanghulu in her hand and that although he had bought another skewer for her, it had been knocked down by Zhang Yang as well...

“Humph, you’re so unfair, mister Yunfei. Could it be I’m not a girl? You only bought it for young lady, humph, humph, you must be up to something bad!” The servant girl Xiao Ning’s angry voice came from one side, causing him to be somewhat at a loss. His face even slightly reddened.

“He he, I’m just kidding. Please don’t get angry at me, mister Yunfei!” Seeing Bai Yunfei’s embarrassed manner, Xiao Ning stuck out her tongue a bit and said mischievously.

Bai Yunfei gave a couple of dry laughs but did not know how to respond to this servant girl. He could only say to Liu Meng: “Er, ha ha, Meng’er, let’s go then...”

“Alright, let’s go.”

.....

Grass, flowers, trees, birds, springs, breezes...

For the first time, Bai Yunfei felt that climbing up a mountain was such a joyful thing. Speaking of it, now he could also be considered a ‘veteran mountain climber’. He himself did not even know how many mountains he had climbed over on the way since leaving Talus City, but he had always climbed mountains to speed up his journey and to flee for his life instead of to carefully enjoy the experience like this today.

Or perhaps, what made him feel joyful was not the scenery on this mountain at all, but the person going by his side...

Bai Yunfei took a bowl of clear spring water, went towards Liu Meng, who was waiting under a tree, handed it over to her and said: “Meng’er, are you tired? If you are, let’s rest here for a while, okay?”

“Ha ha, what if I’m not?” Liu Meng received the bowl, drank a small mouthful and said gently, “You’ve forgotten again that I’m a soul cultivator. Walking such a short distance is nothing to me. Let’s continue to go up. We’ll reach the peak of the mountain before noon.”

Bai Yunfei received the bowl, which she gave back to him, and drank up all the remaining spring water in one gulp. On one side, when Liu Meng saw this action, her face slightly reddened.

“Oh, in that case I have no objection. We...”

“I... I have, I have my objection!!” An angry and panting voice came from behind the two of them. They turned around to take a look and saw that the servant girl Xiao Ning was ‘moving’ up towards them step by step with her body bent and arms akimbo.

“Young, young lady, mister Yunfei... You two, you two are really inconsiderate!” Xiao Ning went up to them with great difficulty and gasped for air with her mouth opened wide. At the same time, she pouted and said discontentedly: “Both of you think you can leave me behind just because, just because you’re soul cultivators huh? I’m so, I’m so tired...”

Bai Yunfei and Liu Meng exchanged a look and were both embarrassed. As Bai Yunfei looked at a pouting, discontented-looking Xiao Ning, he rolled his eyes and a tinge of amusement showed up.

“Meng’er, why don’t we have a speed contest to see who can reach the peak of the mountain first?” Bai Yunfei suggested to Liu Meng smilingly.

The latter was stupefied for a moment but then she reacted by

casting a glance at Xiao Ning, a tinge of mischievousness unexpectedly also appearing in her eyes, and saying with a nod: “Alright, let’s have a contest then, but... you have to let run first!”

To Bai Yunfei’s surprise, as soon as those words were finished, she ran forwards before he could react, causing a fragrant wind that blew past him. Her clothes flapping in the air, Liu Meng rushed up the mountain extremely fast like a graceful, blue-clad elf.

In fact, Bai Yunfei was only dumbfounded for a moment before reacting, but he did not chase after her immediately. Instead, he waited until she had run quite a distance away before casting a look at a still somewhat bewildered Xiao Ning and rushing upwards with a couple of laughs.

“Hey hey!! Young lady! Mister Yunfei!! You two, you two are far too inconsiderate!”

Xiao Ning’s angry shouts came from behind. At the same time, Liu Meng’s lovely laughter also floated down from up above along with the wind. Giving a couple of laughs, Bai Yunfei ran towards the top of the mountain.

At this moment, he experienced an unprecedented state of relaxation and happiness.

.....

At the peak of the mountain, Bai Yunfei and Liu Meng were sitting side by side on the grass, gazing at the large expanse of grass and trees down below. Both of them were silent.

A clear wind blew past them, causing several strands of her hair to fly into his face, tickling it. When Liu Meng noticed this, she smiled at Bai Yunfei and used her hands to tuck those flowing strands of hair behind her ears.

“Thank you, Yunfei...” Liu Meng was the one who broke the silence, saying softly while gazing at a passing bird.

“Oh? Why did you say this again? Didn’t I already tell you, yesterday...”

“Not only yesterday, but also today.” Before Bai Yunfei could finish what he was saying, he was interrupted by Liu Meng. She shook her head gently and continued: “Thank you for going out to relieve boredom with me. The only person who normally goes with me is Xiao Ning. Though she’s my servant girl, she’s like a sister to me... But aside from her, I’ve almost never made friends with anyone. Previously, my body was too weak for me to do that, but later, because the people who approached me had bad intentions, I was unwilling to make friends.

“You know what? Though I’m a soul cultivator, I can’t live my life the way I want to...” Fiddling with the blades of grass in front of her using her hands, Liu Meng said slowly: “To shake off the illnesses in my body, I’ve been spending most of my time on cultivation. I occasionally went out for a stroll, but I only did this to loosen up myself when I reached a plateau.

“My father... He’s a merchant. He can use any means to expand his business, even including making use of my marriage...”

“The Glacial School in the northeast part of Azure Cloud Province has an elder with the surname Liu... My father somehow managed to dig up a groundless trace of kinship with him and wanted to be backed by the Glacial School in business.

“Afterwards, he fawned on another elder of the Glacial School called Zhang Zhenshan and began to do business with the house of Zhang in Talus City. This made him especially excited. To increase the closeness between the two families, he betrothed me to the young master of that Zhangs, Zhang Yang.

“I was only fourteen at the time so I simply couldn’t object to this. My father wouldn’t allow me to object to this either, so I had no choice but to hope that I can reach the Soul Sprite stage early. At that time, I’ll have the power to refuse...”



“After that, Zhang Yang often tried to approach me. I could tell that he did this only because of his filthy self-interest.

“But the relationship between my father and the Zhangs became closer and closer. That family is powerful and can’t be offended. In the end, I even had to go to Talus City frequently to visit my ‘future’ parents-in-law...”

When saying these words, Liu Meng’s voice contained a lot of frustration and grief. However, at this point she changed the topic, continuing:

“But a few days ago, my father received information that... Zhang Yang had unexpectedly been killed the day before!”

## Chapter 58: The Long Tao Duo

---

“But a few days ago, my father received information that... Zhang Yang had unexpectedly been killed the day before!”

At this point, Liu Meng’s voice became a bit louder, carrying some amazement and seemingly a trace of... happiness as well?

“I always knew that he was a good-for-nothing, even worse than that second young master Long yesterday. He usually did all kinds of bad things relying on the influence of his family, but no one ever dared to provoke him. What is laughable is he was still unexpectedly killed by someone...”

“I feel nothing towards his death. If anything, there’s a tinge of happiness. I’m happy that I finally don’t need to worry about that so-called engagement.

“But who would have thought my father would unexpectedly tell me to go to Talus City to take part in the Zhang family’s funeral arrangements as his bride-to-be!? I was unwilling to do this so in the end I got into an argument with my father. In anger, I went out of my home with Xiao Ning and wanted to stroll about outside for a few days to relieve boredom before returning home...”

“Later I went to this place then yesterday that incident happened and I ran into you, Yunfei...”

“Since waking up in that clinic yesterday and seeing you, I have felt that... you’re different from the other people.” At this point, Liu Meng paused for a moment, her voice also containing a trace of amusement, “You’re a soul cultivator, who’s extremely exalted and powerful in the eyes of commoners, but you don’t have an air of arrogance about you at all. Besides, you helped me without wanting anything in return.

“Plus, the look in your eyes, though it was a bit, a bit...” At this point, Liu Meng’s face slightly reddened. Seeming not to know

what words she should use to describe it, she skipped over this directly and continued: “I could tell that there was no bad intentions in it, unlike Zhang Yang’s. When he looked at me, though he thought he had concealed it very well, I could still see that his eyes were full of a desire for possession...

“Therefore, I didn’t want to miss the opportunity to make friends with you and invited you to a tea house under the pretense of thanking you then asked you to go for a stroll on this Mt. Qingquan with me.

“Yunfei, we are now already friends... aren’t we?”

Bai Yunfei had been sitting there listening to her earnestly all the time, trying to digest the story about Liu Meng told by herself. However, there was a strange feeling spreading in his heart. His eyes slightly glittered, looking thoughtful.

When he heard Liu Meng’s question, he suddenly woke up. After a moment of stupefaction, he unexpectedly said with some nervousness: “Oh, of course... We’re already friends.”

“He he, that’s really good. I finally have a friend. Unlike those who want to approach me with hidden agendas, you’re a friend I myself have found!” Liu Meng brushed her sadness aside. With a smile on the corners of her mouth and her hands placed on the ground behind her back, she raised her body slightly, gazing at a flock of birds flying across the sky. She appeared to be especially happy.

Bai Yunfei felt that his heart seemed to be beating somewhat faster, but he did not know what to say. Nervous inside, he subconsciously pulled the grass in front of him out using his hands.

Temporarily, both of them fell silent again with neither wanting to be the first to talk.

“You two, you two have really gone too, too far!!”

An out-of-breath, furious shout broke the silence, waking both of them up with a start. At the same time, they turned around to look in its direction. It turned out the servant girl Xiao Ning had finally climbed up the peak of the mountain and was clenching her teeth looking at the two people who were sitting leisurely together.

It took Liu Meng a good while to calm an ‘extremely angry’ Xiao Ning down. One could tell that they really had a sisterly relationship and definitely not one between a master and a servant—no master would try to make their servant girl less angry like this, and no servant girl would dare to ‘get angry’ at her master either.

At lunchtime, Liu Meng took out from her interspatial ring a hamper with quite a few layers. The hamper was made of special materials. After it was opened, the food inside was still warm. This embarrassed Bai Yunfei a bit. There were also lunch materials in his interspatial ring, but they were two uncooked chickens. He originally had intended to roast and eat them—in comparison, he felt that his original plan was too primitive so he did not dare to take them out.

After having lunch, the three of them slowly strolled about on this mountain, taking pleasure in catching birdies, chasing rabbits, gathering wild flowers... On the grassy path, the lovely laughter of the two girls rang out from time to time.

.....

At dusk, three silhouettes gradually appeared on the main road running through the east city gate. They were none other than Bai Yunfei and the two girls.

There were expressions of partially unfulfilled desire on the faces of them all. Bai Yunfei was walking on the left, Liu Meng in the middle and Xiao Ning on the right, who was chirping something in an obviously very excited manner.

“You’re really awesome, mister Yunfei! That blue birdie had

already flown into the air but you unexpectedly were still able to catch it!” As Xiao Ning recalled how Bai Yunfei had ‘flown’ up a large tree with several dashes then jumped off into the air and easily caught hold of an already flying birdie in his hand, her face was still full of excitement. However, she then asked with some regret, “But why did you let it go in the end? Young lady liked it so much...”

“Ha ha, that bird naturally belongs in the sky. Flying freely is the life it should have. I caught it just to amuse myself for a while. How could I lock it in a cage from then on, taking away its freedom?” Bai Yunfei said softly with a smile.

“Don’t other people keep birds in cages? Alas, forget it, you caught that bird anyway, so you should decide what to do with it... But it was really a pity that rabbit with white stripes ran away. I’ve never seen such a cute little rabbit. It’d be great if I could raise it... No, even if we had caught it, in the end you would still have let it go, humph!”

“Oh, you mean that rabbit? It was a pity it ran away, but if we had caught it, I wouldn’t have let it go...” Bai Yunfei said very seriously.

“Oh? Could it be you wanted to keep it as a pet?”

“No, I would have eaten it...”

“Ah! You’re so mean!”

“Er, let me ask you, Xiao Ning. Among the foods we had for lunch today, there seemed to be one made of rabbit meat, right?”

“This...”

“Ha ha, alright, Xiao Ning, quit rambling. You’ve been talking all the way back here. Aren’t you tired?” Seeing Xiao Ning wrinkle her eyebrows in a lovely manner, Liu Meng could not help saying laughingly.

While talking and laughing with each other, the three of them

entered the city gate very quickly, walking on that spacious street. However, soon after they went into the city, their way was blocked by a group of men.

“Brother, it’s him! He looked down on our house of Long!” A voice full of hatred rang out. Two men then walked out from that group, talking to each other. One of them was none other than the second young master of the Long family long tao... no, Long Tao, who yesterday had attempted to target Liu Meng and had eventually been scared away by Bai Yunfei. [long tao = walk-on part/utility man]

Bai Yunfei told the girls to move backwards a bit. He himself took a step forwards. Seeing the two men in front of him, he said frowningly: “Young master long tao, why haven’t you gone get your takeaway?”

“What?” Long Tao was stupefied. Not only did he not understand the meaning of these words suddenly uttered by Bai Yunfei, but the other people at the scene did not either. However, they could all see clearly that Bai Yunfei was looking down on second young master Long in front of him...

“Humph! Such an arrogant brat! Looks like you really have no respect for the house of Long!”

Before Long Tao could say anything, that tall and large man with a full beard beside him was the first to respond.

Bai Yunfei took a look at him then at Long Tao. Feeling that they were somewhat similar in appearance, he asked doubtfully: “Could it be you’re his father? Are you Long Gang or something?”

“I... I am his brother!” The bearded large man roared, his face reddening.

“Oh? You’re his brother?” Bai Yunfei compared the two of them a bit again then clicked his tongue a couple of times, asking: “You’re his brother, then you’re the first young master Long right?”

What's your name?"

First young master Long gave a cold snort and said with a totally arrogant expression: "Correct! I'm the first young master of the Long... Long Tao!"

TL Note: This Tao is different from the Tao in second young master Long's name.

The corners of Bai Yunfei's mouth twitched. A breath almost got stuck in his throat. After staring at them for a long time, he finally could not help bursting out a laugh.

"After so much talking, turns out you're a long tao as well! Really, no wonder you're brothers! You're a long tao duo! Ha ha..."

Under the curious observation of a group of men, Bai Yunfei laughed out loud so exaggeratedly. In his mind, he felt that these two brothers' names were really so funny. Of course, as the only person who knew the meaning of the words 'long tao', only he understood this, although he himself had no idea how he knew it either.

"Humph! Insane and crazy language! It's baffling! All of you go up for me! Break his legs first then bring him back and torture him!" Long Tao [the big brother] shouted furiously to the twenty something subordinates around. He was infuriated so much by Bai Yunfei's inexplicable mockery that his beard trembled into disorder.

Bai Yunfei stopped laughing and cast a look at the men who were gradually surrounding him, but there was no sign of panic in his eyes. He gave the two girls behind him a hint with his eyes and they cooperated by retreating again. There was not a trace of panic in their eyes either. They knew that these people would not be able to do anything to a soul cultivator like Bai Yunfei.

The fight was finished very quickly. Almost every one of the twenty something men who charged up could only come face to

face with Bai Yunfei for a moment before curling up on the ground hugging his stomach and foaming at the mouth...

When Long Tao [the big brother] saw Bai Yunfei standing in the middle of the pile of men looking at himself with an expression suggesting that he had not had enough of it, his expression became extremely unsightly. He said with hatred: “Humph! A soul cultivator! So what? I’ll personally deal with you!”

His entire body’s muscles bulging out, he charged at Bai Yunfei with a ferocious expression. Seeing this, Bai Yunfei curled his mouth slightly—now, a late Soul Personage was already no longer a threat to him.

Just then he had not unleashed his soulforce so the enemy did not know how powerful he was. Now that the enemy was already charging up, Bai Yunfei did not feel like dragging out the fight either. He channeled his soulforce, his eyes flashing with a tinge of shrewdness. With a shake of his body, he dashed up to the enemy’s face in just an instant. Under the astounded look in the opponent’s eyes, he struck a blow with his right fist. This fierce punch smashed into the opponent’s stomach, sending him flying. At the same time, he once again shouted a line that nobody at the scene understood.

“Your part is already over. Get your takeaway and leave!!”



# Chapter 59: An Inexplicable Attack!

---

Bai Yunfei didn't apply the Overlapping Waves Art to this punch, but even so, it was already too much for a late-stage Soul Personage like Long Tao [the big brother] to withstand. Only after staggering backwards five or six steps in a row was he able to control his body, preventing it from falling down.

“Soul Warrior!” Hugging his stomach, Long Tao looked at Bai Yunfei with a face full of amazement.

“Are you afraid of me now? Too late already!” Bai Yunfei gave a soft snort then dashed forwards again.

Even though Long Tao was shocked in his heart, the opponent was already coming at him, so he had no choice but to fight. The muscles in his entire body bulging out, making a burly man like him look even considerably larger, he threw a fierce punch at Bai Yunfei.

When he was about to rush up to Long Tao's face, Bai Yunfei suddenly toppled to one side. Long Tao's full-power punch could only hit an afterimage. Then, with another shake of the body, Bai Yunfei appeared on his left hand side. After giving him a significant look, he raised his right hand and hit him in the face with a resounding slap.

Afterwards, under the dumbfounded looks in the onlookers' eyes, as if teasing a gorilla, Bai Yunfei used the Wave Treading Steps, creating a string of afterimages that surrounded Long Tao from all sides, making it impossible for Long Tao to hit him regardless of Long Tao's furious roars and fierce attacks. By contrast, Bai Yunfei hit the opponent with one spank after another continuously. At the same time, he 'scolded' the opponent in a seemingly excited manner.

“This is for acting like you're a big shot!

“This is for your unshaven beard!

“This is for using your family’s power to bully people!

“This is for being long tao! [playing a walk-on part]

“.....”

Before long, Long Tao’s face swelled up, looking like the face of a pig, and even a bearded pig at that...

Seeming to have played enough, Bai Yunfei sent the opponent flying directly again with a fierce spank while shouting loudly:

“My last words for you: Your part is already over. Get your takeaway and leave!!”

Long Tao flew away more than two meters while spinning before finally falling to the ground. He then spouted a mouthful of blood, which seemed to also contain two teeth. As he looked at Bai Yunfei, his eyes were full of horror and extreme humiliation as well—despite being a late-stage Soul Personage, he had been played with just like that. This is such an insult!

After sending the big brother flying, Bai Yunfei clapped his hands and slowly turned to look at the dumbstruck younger brother Long Tao on one side. Somehow, as soon as he thought about how this man had wanted to target Liu Meng yesterday, he felt exceptionally annoyed inside. Giving a cold snort, he slowly walked towards the opponent.

Bai Yunfei’s cold snort woke Long Tao up with a start. When he saw that Bai Yunfei was walking towards himself, his face was immediately filled with extreme terror. He subconsciously wanted to retreat but because he was too nervous, he lost his balance and fell on his buttocks to the ground. Using all his limbs together to move backwards continuously, he said in a trembling voice at the same time: “You, what do you want to do?! Don’t, don’t come here! My, my brother is...” Only at this point did he suddenly remember that the opponent had beaten the living daylights out of his

brother and hurriedly change his words: “My father is Long Gang! My Long family has lots of experts! You can’t hurt me!”

Bai Yunfei’s eyes flashed with disdain, but he still halted his steps ‘as he had been told’. Just when the opponent let out a sigh of relief, he shot three streaks of cold light out all of a sudden with a flick of his right hand!

Long Tao could only hear three soft sounds. When he lowered his head doubtfully to take a look, his face suddenly went deathly pale and he broke into a cold sweat—he saw that two daggers with cold sparkles had stuck into the ground near the two places where the index fingers and thumbs of his hands met, almost nailing his hands to the ground! But what terrified him the most was that another dagger had stuck into the area between his thighs! Having cut a hole in the crotch of his pants, the dagger was stuck firmly in the ground. He could even feel strands of cold air coming to his crotch from the dagger!

Seeing that Long Tao was so frightened that he was about to piss his pants, Bai Yunfei suddenly got bored and lost interest. He waved his hand as if chasing a fly away, saying: “All of you get lost!”

.....

After watching this group of men roll and crawl away then disappear in the distance, Bai Yunfei shook his head in frustration, sighing softly: “Alas, this is really cliched.”

“Are you okay, Yunfei?” Liu Meng asked after walking up to Bai Yunfei, who was taking back the daggers.

“Oh, of course I’m okay. How cold they have hurt me?” He smiled at her and said complacently.

“Yunfei, actually you shouldn’t have played with them like that... The Long family is quite powerful in this city. I’m afraid...” Looking in the direction where those men had disappeared, Liu

Meng said while frowning slightly.

“Er... You’re right, Meng’er. I got a little carried away. As soon as I thought of the fact that they were both long tao, I couldn’t help trampling on them ruthlessly...” Bai Yunfei scratched his head, also realizing that he had seemed to have gone a bit too far just then, “But there shouldn’t be any problem. This can only be considered a dispute between juniors at most. Plus now he also knows my power level already so he shouldn’t come to bother me again...”

“Alas, I hope so.” Liu Meng sighed softly, “Forget it. Don’t talk about them. Let’s find a restaurant and have dinner, Yunfei...”

.....

The moon was bright and the stars were few. It was already night. Bai Yunfei was walking quietly in an alleyway, heading for the tavern where he was living.

“Alas... Why did I agree again? I obviously planned to leave tomorrow...” Bai Yunfei sighed while walking with his head lowered, “Tomorrow I’m going to Cuihua Temple in the east part of the city to burn incense sticks. Why at that time did I agree even without thinking...?”

Although he secretly regretted agreeing to stay in Jade Willow City, from the bottom of his heart, he also looked forward to the stroll tomorrow. His mind was in a somewhat chaotic state, not knowing what was going on with himself...

“Let’s stay for one day, just one day. There shouldn’t be any problem.” Consoling himself in his mind like this, when he was ready to quicken his pace, his expression suddenly changed. He halted his steps and stared at an alleyway on the right of a fork, saying solemnly: “Who?! Come out!”

“Ha ha, you’re so vigilant, little brother.” Following a soft laugh, a silhouette walked out slowly. Judging from the voice just then,

this should be an old man. He was not tall and was empty-handed. Although he had walked out, he was still hiding in the dark, making it impossible to see his face clearly.

“Who are you? What do you want to do?” Bai Yunfei asked frowningly. His right hand had already been put behind his back. At the same time, his mind was racing. Could it be the opponent was a man of the Long family? Or was this a man from the Glacial School?

That old man seemed to size up Bai Yunfei a few times then said smilingly as before: “You don’t know who I am. I’m not sure about your identity either. So, let’s exchange a few blows to find out!”

As soon as he finished talking, he unexpectedly launched his attack without a warning sign!

“So fast!” Seeing the opponent charging at him, Bai Yunfei was secretly frightened. However, this was not shown on his face at all. With a slip of his feet, his body quickly retreated. At the same time, he shot two daggers at the enemy with a flick of his right hand.

The opponent seemed to have known earlier that Bai Yunfei would use this move. He leaned his body to one side slightly, avoiding the daggers, then rushed up to Bai Yunfei’s face without slowing down.

Making use of the moonlight, Bai Yunfei finally saw the attacker’s appearance clearly. His hair was salt and pepper. His face did not look old at all, but because he was smiling at the moment, there were several wrinkles on his face. This man was looking at Bai Yunfei with narrowed eyes while making an extremely fierce grab at Bai Yunfei’s throat with his right hand!

Just when he was about to succeed, Bai Yunfei suddenly fell backwards. Then he dodged in a strange arc to the other side with a tilt of his body.

Before he could make another move, he felt a great force come

from his left waist. It turned out the old man had instantly turned the claw into a palm and hit him in the waist in a seemingly gentle manner.

The huge force of impact caused Bai Yunfei to take two steps towards one side involuntarily. Seeing that the old man's second palm strike was coming at him, he gave a cold snort. With another slip of his feet, two afterimages appeared in the small area around him. But he did not sheer away. Instead, he turned his body instantly and threw a punch at the enemy's heart!

The enemy was surprised and unexpectedly immediately abandoned the palm strike that was coming at Bai Yunfei. Withdrawing his right hand like lightning, he overlapped his hands in front of his chest, wanting to take this punch from Bai Yunfei head-on!

His eyes flashing, his right arm's muscles bulging out, Bai Yunfei suddenly accelerated his attack halfway through.

Overlapping Waves Art, Ninefold Fist Force!

Bang!

A deep sound was heard. That old man's eye flashed with a tinge of amazement. His body retreated continuously. With every step he took, crackles rang out from under his feet. It turned out his feet were breaking the bluestone slabs under him into pieces!

After the old man backed off nearly ten meters, he stopped moving, having finally neutralized the impact force of the Ninefold Fist Force, and shook his hands. Unexpectedly, he seemed not injured at all!

# Chapter 60: Bloodhowl Wolf King's Adopted Son, Hong Yin

---

After the old man backed off nearly ten meters, he stopped moving, having neutralized the impact force of the Ninefold Fist Force, and shook his hands. Unexpectedly, he seemed not injured at all!

However, instead of attacking again, he suddenly waved his hands, saying, “Wait, wait! Let’s stop fighting! Let’s stop fighting! I...”

But before he could finish what he was saying, two streaks of cold light were shot at him and they arrived in the blink of an eye!

The old man’s eyes widened. He conveniently waved his hand in front of him and caught hold of the two daggers. Looking at Bai Yunfei in front of him, who was holding two other daggers staring hard at him, the old man said with some amazement, “Such a ruthless brat. I already told you to stop fighting, why did you still attack?!”

Despite these words, Bai Yunfei did not relax at all. He was still staring expressionlessly at the opponent, ready to shoot the daggers in his hand out anytime. At the same time, he slowly retreated. Only when there was a distance of about twenty meters between them did he slowly asked, “Who are you actually? Why did you attack me without reason?”

Hearing his words, the old man seemed to be embarrassed for a moment then waved his hands, saying, “Er, never mind, little brother. I just wanted to confirm one thing. I had no ill intentions.”

Bai Yunfei frowned slightly, asking, “What did you want to confirm?”

“Well, I just wanted to confirm a bit the two soul skills you used

just now.” The old man said smilingly, “Now I’ve already confirmed that they are indeed the Wave Treading Steps and the Overlapping Waves Art...”

“You know about these two soul skills ?” Upon hearing the old man’s words, Bai Yunfei was stupefied then said in amazement, “Do you know senior Ge Yiyun?”

“Oh? My senior brother even told you his name?” This time that old man was a bit astounded.

“You’re his junior brother?”

“Yeah, correct.”

Bai Yunfei fell silent. He did not know if what the old man said was true, but at least he had no malice. Simply judging from the fact that he had been able to take his own Ninefold Fist Force with ease, he could tell that he himself was no match for him. It was probably because the old man had intended to test him that he had been able to detect him.

After keeping silent for a while, Bai Yunfei put away the daggers, but he was yet to relax his guard completely. He asked, “Why did you find me, senior?”

“Why?” The old man was slightly dumbfounded, but after thinking for a bit, he said in a somewhat embarrassed manner, “Er, actually there was no reason. It was just that in the evening in the city I saw that you seemed to use the Wave Treading Steps when fighting those men of the Long family so I came to confirm it a bit, and to conveniently ask about my senior brother’s whereabouts.”

“As his junior brother, why don’t you know his whereabouts?” Bai Yunfei asked doubtfully.

“My senior brother doesn’t like to stay in touch with other people. Plus, I’m not powerful enough to work out where he’s gone to...” The old man said in frustration.

Bai Yunfei frowned slightly, saying, “I don’t know where senior



Ge Yiyun has gone to at all. But he should still be in this Azure Cloud Province. Several days ago I ran into him on a mountain to the south of Jade Willow City.”

Seeing a thoughtful expression show up on his face, Bai Yunfei did not want to stay longer. He folded his hands in salute, saying, “Senior, if you don’t have anything else to say, I’ll take my leave now.”

.....

As the old man watched Bai Yunfei gradually go away, there was a trace of astonishment on his face. He then shook his head lightly, saying to himself, “It seems this brat still doesn’t trust me. Does he have to be so vigilant? How can an elder of the Fate School like me possibly fool you? Really... But this also means that there’s something special about him. At least being careful in everything can’t go wrong.

“Senior brother has been traveling the world for over two years. How many people who can neutralize our school’s tribulation has he found, I wonder...? Several months ago, a secular disciple reported that he had gone into Azure Cloud Province but there’s been no news about him ever since. From what this brat said, he should still be in this place. But why? What is he looking for that he’s been staying here for several months? Is there something that requires him to put in so much time?”

The more the old man guessed, the more doubtful his face looked. In the end, he let out a soft sigh, turned around and disappeared into the night.

.....

Under the night sky, a tall and straight silhouette was standing on a relatively high roof, looking thoughtfully into the distance at an alleyway more than a thousand meters away. What he was fixing his eyes on was none other than the alleyway where Bai Yunfei and the old man had just met.

Judging from his appearance, he should be no more than thirty years old. His body was tall and straight, his robe silver and his hair long. Although he could not be considered handsome, there was an air of heroism about him. On his shoulder, there was unexpectedly a palm-sized white little animal that looked like a rat.

This man stared into the distance for a long time. In the end he withdrew his eyes. Just when he was about to turn around and leave, the expression on his face suddenly changed. He turned around abruptly.

A person was already standing on the roof behind him and this person was none other than the old man who had just talked with Bai Yunfei!

“Brat, you’ve been watching for so long. What’s this all about? Me, or that little fella?” Seeming to have already anticipated the opponent’s actions, the old man said solemnly while staring expressionlessly at him.

That man was startled at first, but he immediately reacted. Taking two steps backwards, he saluted the old man respectfully and said, “I am Hong Yin. It is an honor to meet you, senior Qin Zheng.”

“Oh, you recognize me?” The old man was slightly surprised.

“Twenty years ago, my foster father took me with him and paid a visit to the Fate School, and I had the good fortune to see you once.” That young man named Hong Yin still said respectfully, then gave a little compliment, “Who would have thought you would still be as gracious as before after twenty years?”

The expression on Qin Zheng’s face became much more relaxed. He asked, “Twenty years ago? Your foster father is...”

“Bloodhowl.”

The moment Qin Zheng heard this name, he was obviously startled a bit. He then frowned slightly and asked doubtfully,

“You’re the adopted son of the Bloodhowl Wolf King? Are you that rumored person? Have you got anything to prove this?”

Right after these words were said, seeming to notice Qin Zheng’s doubtful tone, the little animal on Hong Yin’s shoulder arched its back slightly and squeaked at him a couple of times. Apparently it was somewhat angry.

“Oh? This is... a River Churning Rat! Plus... one in the middle phase of level five!” Earlier, Qin Zheng had not cared about this little animal at all, but now he immediately said in a somewhat amazed manner after observing it attentively for a while.

Hong Yin gave a smile then stroked the little animal on his shoulder to calm it down and replied, “You’re so observant, senior. He is my friend, Xiao Tang.”

Afterwards, with a shake of his hand, a white dagger appeared in his hand. Actually, it was somewhat inappropriate to call it a dagger because if one looked at it carefully, they would find that it looked more like a tooth of a certain animal.

“I think this object should be enough to prove my identity, right?”

At first Qin Zheng was somewhat astounded because Hong Yin had called the soulbeast his friend. Now, seeing this dagger, he raised his eyebrows again, saying in slight amazement, “Bloodhowl Fang! Yeah, it really can prove that what you said was true.”

He then pondered for a while before continuing to ask, “Then why are you here? Could it be because of that little fella? It’s very likely that he’ll be extremely important to my Fate School in the future. You can’t touch him!”

Hong Yin was stupefied then hurriedly explained, “You’re mistaken, senior. I don’t know that little brother at all. I watched from this place only because I saw you.”

“Oh? Why me? What do you find me for?” Qin Zheng asked

doubtfully.

“In fact, I want to ask you a little about senior Ge Yiyun’s whereabouts.” Hong Yin thought for a bit, “A few days ago I accidentally found out that senior Ge Yiyun was in Azure Cloud Province so I came here right away. I want to invite him...”

“Because of that matter again, right?” Before Hong Yin could finish what he was saying, Qin Zheng already knew what he wanted to say. He gave a soft sigh, saying, “Alas, your foster father should have already told you it’s almost impossible to get this matter done, right?”

Hong Yin’s expression darkened and looked disappointed for a moment, but he immediately recovered and said with a face full of resolution, “I’ll give it a try no matter what! Perhaps... if senior Ge Yiyun agrees to give it another try, we may find a method...”

“Well... As you’ve already made your decision, I won’t mention it again. Just do as you please. Hopefully with your special status you can change this ‘fate’ which the entire soulbeast clan has been unable to change for more than a thousand years...” Qin Zheng had no choice but to shake his head.

“I’ve got something to do too so I won’t stay here. My senior brother... I don’t know where he is either. If you want to see him, just look for him yourself!” Qin Zheng turned around and left. A message then came into Hong Yin’s ears from afar.

“Your ‘fate’ shows a ‘fate division’ tendency in this Jade Willow City. I can’t look too much into your future, and I can’t tell you too much either, but you should grasp this opportunity...”

# Chapter 61: Meeting Qiu Luli Again

---

The next day, Bai Yunfei still arrived at the agreed place half an hour early as before.

The sunlight seemed to be especially tender this morning. Everything looked vibrant, whether the grass on the ground or the weeping willows on the shores.

Bai Yunfei stood on the roadside, gazing at the willow trees that were fluttering in the wind on one side, his eyes somewhat unfocused.

“It’s been two days since I arrived in this Jade Willow City but I haven’t noticed anything unusual. Could it be the Zhang family’s or I should say the Glacial School’s forces haven’t reached this place yet? Is this because... of the existence of the Green Willow School?”

“I wonder if the two long tao brothers of that Long family will come to trouble me again. The Long family is quite influential in this place so it should have several soul cultivators. Last time I merely bullied two good-for-nothings so they didn’t have too many men with them. If they still want to retaliate...”

“Sure enough, it’d still be better for me to leave early? Then let’s leave this place tomorrow! After strolling about today, I’ll tell Liu Meng clearly that I’ll leave tomorrow in the early morning...”

Although he had made his decision, another feeling was bred in his mind. Was it... unwillingness? Bai Yunfei shook his head gently with a forced smile and scolded himself for being hopeless and having become so indecisive.

“Bai... Bai Yunfei?”

Just when his mind was in an emotional turmoil, a reluctant voice rang out behind him. Slightly startled, he immediately turned around to take a look.

He saw a tall young girl dressed in emerald green clothes looking at him with a pleasantly surprised expression. Bai Yunfei was slightly stupefied and said in astonishment, “Qiu Luliu! Why are you here?”

This young girl was none other than Qiu Luliu, disciple of the Green Willow School, who had come to rescue her junior sister at that time when Bai Yunfei had stabbed Zhang Yang to death.

“These words should have been said by me, right? Who would have thought it would really be you? I even suspected I got the wrong person!” Qiu Luliu walked up to Bai Yunfei smilingly. After sizing him up a bit, she said doubtfully, “Why are you in Jade Willow City?”

At this point, seeming to suddenly remember something, she subconsciously looked around, saying in a low voice, “Right, now the Zhang family is looking for you everywhere. You must be careful! Last time, about ten days after we parted ways, Zhang Yang’s father Zhang Zhenshan came looking for me and wanted me to reveal your appearance and whereabouts. I was able to casually fool him. Now that I know you’re safe and sound, I can rest easy. But you’re really quite something. I didn’t expect you to be able to avoid the Zhang family’s stool pigeons to reach this place...”

Hearing her words, Bai Yunfei was slightly dumbfounded then said with a forced smile, “I wasn’t so lucky. Zhang Zhenshan caught up with me later and it was so difficult for me to escape...”

“What?! He caught up with you?” Qiu Luliu exclaimed in a low voice, “Plus, you were unexpectedly able to escape? How did you do that?”

“Er, this is a long story. At that time he...”

“Alas, this is not the right place for us to talk about this. How about going to a tea house to have a chat? Since we hurriedly parted ways last time, I’ve always wanted to thank you properly

for saving my junior sister.” Qiu Luliu said smilingly while looking around.

“This...” Bai Yunfei looked at the streets in the city then said in a somewhat embarrassed manner, “I’m afraid I can’t do this today. I already agreed to meet someone and I’m waiting for her here...”

“Oh, I see...” Qiu Luliu thought for a bit and said, “Then, how about tomorrow? This will give me just enough time to go back to my school and tell my junior sister. She’ll definitely be very happy. Tomorrow we’ll talk about what happened together, okay?”

Bai Yunfei asked doubtfully, “Go back to your school? Oh, that’s right. The Green Willow School is around this Jade Willow City, isn’t it? Is it far from here? If it’s too far, you don’t have to take the trouble to do it, Miss Qiu.”

“Never mind. The Green Willow School’s headquarters is a large manor not far to the west of the city.” Qiu Luliu said laughingly, “Ha ha, I really didn’t expect that I’d run into you when I go out today. I think my junior sister Yuhe will be very happy to see you again too. You know what, she often talks about you, her ‘lifesaver’, again and again, he he...”

The image of that lovely petite girl hiding timidly behind Qiu Luliu emerged in Bai Yunfei’s mind. He could not help giving a laugh inwardly, asking, “Right, how is Miss Chu now? She’s already started training, right?”

“Yes, of course. My master loves this little disciple very much. Junior sister is very well-behaved and hardworking too. With my master’s help, her soulforce awakened very quickly. Now she’s already about to reach the mid-stage Soul Apprentice level!” Qiu Luliu seemed to be especially happy when talking about Chu Yuhe. One could tell that she really loved this little junior sister dearly.

Bai Yunfei also said smilingly with a nod, “Oh, it’s good to know that. Where are we going to meet tomorrow? And when?”

“This... Let’s do it this way. Just tell me the name of the tavern where you’re staying and I’ll come to look for you later. I’ve still got some things to do so I don’t know exactly when I’ll be there, but it’ll definitely be before afternoon...” Qiu Luliu thought for a bit and said.

“Oh, that’s alright. I’ll be waiting for you then. I’m staying in...”

.....

After watching Qiu Luliu go away, Bai Yunfei shifted his eyes, searching the crowd a bit, and said doubtfully with his head lowered, “What’s going on with Meng’er? Why hasn’t she come yet? Could it be she’s sick again?”

“Yunfei, I’m sorry for making you wait for a long time again...”

Just when Bai Yunfei was worried inside, Liu Meng’s voice suddenly rang out. Happy in his heart, he raised his head to take a look and saw her looking at him smilingly with her hands behind her back from several meters away. Her long dress was white and her beautiful hair was like a waterfall with several strands sticking to her cheeks. When the wind blew past her, her silky hair flew upwards and her dress fluttered, making her look like a descending fairy in Bai Yunfei’s eyes...

After seeing the slim and graceful young girl in front of him, Bai Yunfei unexpectedly had no reaction for a short time. He just stared at her in a somewhat stupefied manner.

“Mis-ter-Yun-fei!! Wake up please!”

A sassy shout came into Bai Yunfei’s ears, waking him up with a start. Seeing Xiao Ning chuckling with her mouth covered, he laughed in a somewhat embarrassed manner and said, “You’re finally here, Meng’er. You’re okay, right? Did you feel sick again today?”

Hearing his words, Liu Meng suddenly blushed a little. On one side, Xiao Ning was the first to reply, “Hey, mister Yunfei, are you



blaming my young lady for being late? Really, don't you know that every girl has to spend time dressing up before going out? Humph, my young lady even specially dressed up for so long. Could it be you haven't noticed that she looks more beautiful than yesterday?"

"What are you saying, Xiao Ning?! When did I specially dress up...?" Liu Meng pinched Xiao Ning's arms lightly a bit and said discontentedly.

Reproved by Xiao Ning once again, Bai Yunfei gave a couple of dry coughs in an embarrassed manner and changed the topic of conversation, "Um, it's about time already. Meng'er, let's set off for that Cuihua Temple now."

.....

The three of them walked on a grassy road, talking and laughing with each other, slowly heading for that Cuihua Temple. As they went on their way, there were gradually more and more people around them. The temple's fortune sticks were said to be especially accurate, therefore quite a lot of people wanted to go there to burn incense sticks and make wishes or to stroll about and relieve boredom.

The closer it got to midday, the more intense the sun became. Even the air became hot and dry. Xiao Ning had already opened a pink oil-paper umbrella, blocking out all the sunlight that shone on her and Liu Meng.

Seeing Bai Yunfei begin to squint because of the scorching sun, Liu Meng seemed to suddenly remember something. She halted her steps and said softly, "Right, Yunfei, I almost forgot that I have something to give you!"

"Oh?" Bai Yunfei was surprised, "Something to give me? What is it?"

Liu Meng reached out a jade-like hand with a smile. A circular object appeared in her hand -- it was unexpectedly a golden straw

hat...

“I remember that when we met for the first time, you were wearing a straw hat, but it seemed already very tattered. When I went out today, I happened to see someone selling this kind of hat on the side of a street so I bought a new one for you. Take it and put it on. It can block out the sunlight.”

“.....”

Bai Yunfei received straw hat, which was bright golden and also had a red stripe on the side, and was stupefied speechlessly for a long time. Actually he was extremely happy inside. He had not expected Liu Meng to give him a ‘present’, but... why did it have to be a straw hat??

“What’s wrong, Yunfei? You’re not happy?”

Liu Meng’s doubtful voice rang out. Bai Yunfei regained his composure and hurriedly said, “Oh? No, no. I’m very happy. Ha ha, thank you, Meng’er...”

As he talked, he put the straw hat on his head directly, a happy smile showing up on his face. He then pressed it down a bit and immediately no longer felt the scorching sun. There was an indescribable ‘cool’ feeling in not only his body, but also in his heart...

“Mister Yunfei, my young lady has given you a present. Shouldn’t you express your gratitude a bit?”

“Ah? Oh, of course, of course, I will...”

Xiao Ning’s teasing voice and Bai Yunfei’s embarrassed reply drifted into the air. The three silhouettes got farther and farther away...

# Chapter 62: The +10 Additional Effects of Accessories

In the morning of the next day,

Bai Yunfei was sitting with legs crossed on the bed looking at an orange bracelet in his hand with a slight frown.

Upgrade Failed

Equipment Destroyed

The information in his mind disappointed him for a while again. He reached his hand out to one side and tilted his palm. An amount of dust fell down and piled up on a piece of white cloth beside him. That basin-sized piece of white cloth had already been sprinkled with various powders of different colors. These powders were what was left of the pieces of jewelry that had been destroyed by failed upgrades in just the last two hours.

Because today Bai Yunfei had to wait for Qiu Luliu to come looking for him, he did not go anywhere. According to his original plan, he should leave today, but now he had no choice but to stay for another day. Because he did not know when Qiu Luliu would arrive, he had decided to make use of this period of time to continue his research into jewelry upgrades.

“It was the fifth one. I still haven’t even got a +9 item. Somehow I feel that upgrading jewelry must be harder than upgrading weapons and defensive items?” Bai Yunfei shook his head in frustration. After being depressed inwardly for a while, he took out a milky white pearl necklace.

“Upgrade.”

Upgrade Successful
Equipment Grade: High Upgrade Level: +9 Additional Attribute: +23 Agility Upgrade Requirement: 17 Soulpoints

Bai Yunfei had a happy expression, “I’ve finally succeeded!”

Putting this +9 necklace down to one side, he took out another bracelet and continued to upgrade it. Unfortunately, he failed again and it was destroyed.

Either because it really was more difficult to upgrade jewelry or because Bai Yunfei was unlucky, out of the twelve pieces of jewelry he upgraded afterwards, he was only able to obtain two +9 items, a bracelet and a ring.

“Alas...” Bai Yunfei let out a sigh of frustration again and looked outside the window. It was already morning, “Qiu Lulu said that she’d arrive before afternoon. She should be here soon. Will I just call it a day like this? But... I don’t want to give up! Let’s just upgrade these three items to see what will happen! If I successfully upgrade one of them, I’ll know the additional effect of a +10 piece of jewelry!”

As soon as Bai Yunfei thought about this, he no longer cared about the fact that it had taken him several hours of hard work to obtain these items. As he picked up that necklace, his eyes showed an expression of expectation.

“Upgrade!”

Upgrade Failed
Equipment Destroyed

“Alas! I was indeed too naive to think so!” With a whimper in his mind, Bai Yunfei scattered the powder in his hand sadly and picked up that +9 ring.

“Now that I already started, I can’t give up halfway through no matter what!

“Upgrade!”

Upgrade Successful

At first, subconsciously Bai Yunfei was prepared to sigh, but now he was suddenly dumbstruck for a moment then had an ecstatic expression: “I unexpectedly, unexpectedly succeeded!”

In an excited state of mind, Bai Yunfei looked at the ring in his hand impatiently and gave it a thought.

Equipment Grade: High  
Upgrade Level: +10  
Additional Attribute: +32 Endurance  
+10 Additional Effect: Increase attack speed by 2%  
Upgrade Requirement: 21 Soulpoints

Bai Yunfei frowned slightly, “An addition of 32 endurance would mean wearing this ring alone would increase an ordinary person’s endurance by 30%... But it means almost nothing to soul cultivators. Attack speed? Is this an additional ‘stat’? This is the first time I’ve seen something like this. Let’s give it a try...”

Bai Yunfei sat straight up, gently took a breath, clenched his right fist and punched into the air, creating an area of afterimages in

front of him. At the same time, his eyes showed a thoughtful expression, looking like he was experiencing something silently.

After several breaths, he stopped his movements and put that ring on his left hand's index finger.

The moment he wore the ring, he felt a wonderful feeling. Although it was extremely faint, he could still feel it clearly. His endurance had become even more bountiful—this was the 'Endurance +32' effect.

After taking a deep breath, he raised his arm and began to punch into the air as before. A short while later, he stopped his movements and pondered with his head lowered.

"A 2% increase to attack speed is very good! Though this increase is very small in degree, but unlike those effects with chances of being triggered, I only need to wear this ring for it to be effective! This way, my power has also improved a bit!

"It's a pity I can't put two rings on one hand at the same time..." Bai Yunfei thought with some regret while looking at his own hands.

Regarding jewelry, only the first item was effective when worn, which also meant only one ring and one bracelet could be put on an arm. This was also true for earrings and necklaces, that is, an additional earring or necklace would be completely ineffective when worn.

Bai Yunfei picked up the last item, that +9 light blue bracelet, with a hesitant expression on his face, "Then... Should I continue to upgrade this one?"

"Yunfei, are you there?"

When Bai Yunfei was hesitating, the voice of a girl suddenly rang out outside the door.

"Miss Qiu has arrived? Oh, no, this is... Meng'er's voice!" Startled, Bai Yunfei hurriedly got off the bed, properly put on his

shoes and walked towards the door of the room.

After he opened the door, he saw a young girl in blue clothes standing smilingly at the door. She was none other than Liu Meng. Beside her, the servant girl Xiao Ning was looking around somewhat curiously.

“Meng’er? Why have you come here?” Bai Yunfei was amazed in his mind. Temporarily he even forgot to tell them to enter the room.

“What’s wrong? I can’t come to look for you?” Liu Meng asked with the same smiling expression.

“Er, no, of course you can...”

“Young master Yunfei, you should invite my young lady into the room. Could it be you want to have a talk while standing at this door? Or could it be there’s another girl hiding in your room so you don’t dare to let my young lady come in?” The little servant girl Xiao Ning always had a sharp tongue. With just a few words, she made Bai Yunfei feel extremely embarrassed again. He hurriedly let the two of them go into the room.

“Meng’er, didn’t I tell you yesterday that I’ll have something to do today so I can’t be with you? Why have you...” Bai Yunfei said doubtfully while looking at Liu Meng, who was sizing up the room with a bit of curiosity.

“What’s wrong, Yunfei? You’re not happy with me coming to look for you?” Liu Meng asked softly, her tone seeming to carry a trace of disappointment.

“No, of course that’s not true. I just... I’ll probably have to go out in a while, so...” Bai Yunfei hurriedly explained. As soon as he heard Liu Meng’s tone, there was an indescribable trace of nervousness in his heart.

Seeing Bai Yunfei’s totally anxious expression, Liu Meng smiled again, saying, “Oh, that’s fine. I’ll just stay for a while then leave.

Is this okay?”

“Oh, that... That’s fine...” Bai Yunfei hesitated in his mind for a moment. It seemed he subconsciously did not want to let Qiu Luli and her meet each other.

“Oh? This bracelet is so beautiful!” Liu Meng’s surprised voice rang out. Bai Yunfei lifted his head to take a look and his heart immediately tightened. It turned out before hurriedly going to open the door, he had casually put that +9 bracelet on the table. Now it had been found by Liu Meng and she was holding it in her hand observing it carefully.

“Mmm, it’s so beautiful! Light blue, just happens to match young lady’s clothes.” On one side, Xiao Ning was also looking eagerly at this bracelet. Suddenly her eyes rolled and she turned to Bai Yunfei, saying laughingly, “He he, Mister Yunfei, could it be... this is the present you bought to give my young lady? Yesterday, after my young lady gave you that straw hat, you promised to give her a gift in return. Who would have thought you would get it ready so fast?”

When Liu Meng heard her words, her eyes flashed with a tinge of surprise, her face slightly reddening. She lifted her eyes looking at Bai Yunfei. In her eyes, there seemed to be... a trace of hope?

“This...” Bai Yunfei felt somewhat awkward, not knowing what he should do.



## Chapter 63: Is This Jealousy?

---

“This...” Bai Yunfei felt somewhat awkward, not knowing what he should do.

Seeing Bai Yunfei’s hesitant expression, Liu Meng’s eyes dimmed for a moment. She lowered her head slightly and put the bracelet back on the table, saying in a low voice, “Don’t talk nonsense, Xiao Ning. Maybe this bracelet is very important to Yunfei. How can he casually give it to someone else...?”

When Bai Yunfei saw Liu Meng act like that and heard her slightly disappointed words, his heart shivered indescribably. There unexpectedly seemed to be a feeling of guilt surging into his heart. He felt that upsetting this young girl in front of him was an unforgivable sin...

“No... That’s not true, Meng’er. This bracelet... Actually I was preparing to give it to you.” Bai Yunfei’s eyes glittered. In the end he clenched his teeth, walked up to Liu Meng, picked up the bracelet and put it into her hand, saying smilingly, “Originally I wanted to give it to you the next time we meet. Who would have thought you would come to look for me? This is perfect timing. I’ll just give it to you right now.”

“Really?” Liu Meng raised her head, looking at Bai Yunfei with slightly reddened cheeks.

“Yeah, I mean it!” This time Bai Yunfei said very resolutely. In his heart, even if just for this smiling expression, it was worth giving her this bracelet.

“He he, I said so, didn’t I? This bracelet was definitely bought to give young lady!” Xiao Ning said laughingly on one side, “Humph, Mister Yunfei, you even scared young lady on purpose and almost made her cry. You’re really so mean!”

“Er, this... Just now I didn’t do it on purpose...” Bai Yunfei

scratched his head in an embarrassed manner and said with a placating smile.

Seeing him behave in such a 'foolish' way, both girls burst out giggling in a lovely manner, making Bai Yunfei even more embarrassed.

With a smiling expression in her eyes, Liu Meng observed the bracelet in her hand carefully. One could tell that she liked this bracelet quite a lot. After quite some time, she put it on her left wrist.

Right after she wore this bracelet, she was obviously stupefied for a while. Then she looked at the bracelet on her wrist in a seemingly somewhat doubtful manner before unexpectedly closing her eyes, apparently experiencing something.

After several breaths' time, Liu Meng suddenly opened her eyes and raised her head to look at Bai Yunfei. Her face full of disbelief, she said in surprise and bewilderment, "Yunfei, this, this bracelet..."

"Here it comes!"

Bai Yunfei's heart jumped. When he had decided to give this bracelet to her just then, he had already expected the current situation. Now, doing his best to keep a calm exterior, he said smilingly, "Oh, there are some special things about this bracelet... My master gave it to me. It can, can make the person who wears it become more light and agile."

Hearing Bai Yunfei's explanation, Liu Meng was slightly stupefied. She observed the bracelet on her wrist carefully again in a rather astounded manner for some time then lowered her head. It was impossible to know what she was thinking.

Just when Bai Yunfei guessed that this explanation of his was too nonsensical, Liu Meng raised her head again. She unexpectedly looked at him somewhat apologetically, saying, "I'm sorry, Yunfei.

I didn't know this bracelet has such a strange function. I, I can't take..."

As she said, she wanted to return the bracelet to Bai Yunfei.

Bai Yunfei was stupefied. It had been very difficult for him to decide to give her this bracelet, but now she said she did not want it. This unexpectedly made him somewhat anxious. He took two steps forwards and grabbed the hand with which Liu Meng wanted to take the bracelet off, saying, "Meng'er, you already put it on, so don't take it off. I know you like this bracelet, so just accept it. Its effect is not very great anyway..."

"Yunfei, you... Please let go of me..."

In a state of desperation, Bai Yunfei had been somewhat flustered. Only when he heard Liu Meng's slightly ashamed whisper now did he suddenly react. He hurriedly let go of her wrist and shook his hands again and again, saying, "Er, Meng'er, I... I didn't do that on purpose."

Her face slightly reddening, Liu Meng did not say anything. She no longer wanted to take the bracelet off. Instead, she was gently caressing it with her head lowered.

Xiao Ning was sitting on one side waiting for the two of them and looking at them with wide open eyes. Her face was full of curiosity about what these two people were saying, Aside from looking somewhat beautiful, what's so special this bracelet?

Temporarily, there was a short period of calm inside the room.

"Right, Yunfei, you said you had something to do. What is it? Can I go with you?" Liu Meng was the first to break the tranquility by raising her head and asking after hiding the bracelet into her sleeve.

"This... I'm afraid you can't. I'm going to talk about the past with two friends. They will come to look for me in a while..." Bai Yunfei said somewhat awkwardly.

“Friends? There are still people you know in this Jade Willow City? Why haven’t I heard you mention them?” Liu Meng asked curiously.

“Oh, I just accidentally ran into one of them yesterday. She’s... She’s a disciple of the Green Willow School. Her name is Qiu Lulu...”

“What?! A Green Willow School disciple?” Hearing these words, Liu Meng immediately said in a somewhat amazed manner. Afterwards, she seemed to remember something and her face unexpectedly became gloomy. She lowered her head again. Nobody knew what she was thinking.

Bai Yunfei was anxious and hurriedly explained, “Don’t get me wrong, Meng’er. We’re just ordinary friends. It’s just that... It’s just that in the past I saved her junior sister so when we met by chance this time, she asked me to go and have a chat with them about the past...”

“There’s still a junior sister?!” On one side, Xiao Ning could not help ‘exclaiming’.

Sweat was all but come out on Bai Yunfei’s forehead. He ‘implored’ with a miserable expression, “Xiao Ning, please don’t cause trouble, will you...?”

“Ha ha, Yunfei, in fact you don’t need to explain to me.” Liu Meng lifted her head to smile at Bai Yunfei and continued, “After all, I’m nothing to you, so I don’t have the right to be angry either...”

“That’s not true, Meng’er. I...”

“You don’t have to explain. I know already.” Liu Meng still said smilingly, “I won’t disturb you anymore. Your friend will be here in a while so to spare everyone the embarrassment, I’ll leave first. When you and your friends have finished talking about the past, I’ll come to look for you...”

Liu Meng suddenly changed her behavior, confusing Bai Yunfei's mind somewhat. Temporarily he did not know what to say and could only watch in stupefaction as she stood up then slowly walked out of the room.

"Humph! You're really such a fool, mister Yunfei! You've made me so angry. I won't care about you anymore!" Xiao Ning shook her little fist in front of Bai Yunfei 'fiercely' then walked out after Liu Meng. The moment she went out of the room, she even banged the door open with force.

"This... I, I obviously didn't say anything..."

Only a good while after the two girls had left did Bai Yunfei murmur in an almost tearful manner.

.....

In a chaotic state of mind, Bai Yunfei walked back to the bed, lay down and looked absently at the roof with his eyes. Nobody knew what he was thinking...

"Bai Yunfei, are you there?"

A melodious voice came in from outside the door. He sat up as if getting an electric shock and was slightly stupefied. Then he shook his head gently and said in a low voice: "This time I'm sure it's Miss Qiu here..."

The door of the room was open. Qiu Luliu, dressed completely in emerald green clothes, was standing smilingly at the door.

"I'm sorry I'm a bit late. Let's go right now, okay?" Qiu Luliu said slightly apologetically.

"Oh, never mind, Miss Qiu. I've been waiting for just a short time." Bai Yunfei answered politely but he sighed inwardly in frustration, thinking that if she had come and take him out with her a bit earlier, things would have been better, because in that case he would not have inexplicably angered Liu Meng...

Slightly shaking his head, he temporarily put aside this matter. After looking behind Qiu Luliu for a bit, he said doubtfully, “Oh, Miss Chu doesn’t come here?”

“Ha ha, you’re right, Mister Yunfei. Yesterday I intended to come and look for you with my junior sister then we would chat about what happened, but after I went back to my school, I blurted this out in front of my master. She... She wants to have a meeting with the young hero who saved her little disciple too, so could I ask you to go to my Green Willow School as a guest? This is not a problem, right?”

“Oh? You master wants to see me? This...” Bai Yunfei was surprised. Qiu Luliu’s master was none other than the Green Willow School’s headmaster. Who would have thought she would want to see him?

“What’s wrong? Is there any inconvenience?”

“No, there isn’t. That’s fine. Please lead the way, Miss Qiu...”

.....

In a place about a dozen kilometers to the west of Jade Willow City, there was a massive manor. It had high walls and lofty buildings, looking rather extraordinary. Around the manor, there was a large expanse of greenness, with various rows of willows encircling the manor like guardsmen. The willow twigs swayed gently all the time, making the place look relaxing and pleasing from afar.

This place was the location of the Green Willow School’s headquarters. A petite silhouette was standing gracefully in front of the main gate.

She was dressed entirely in white clothes adorned with various emerald green willow leaves. Despite being small in stature, she had a nice and slim figure. Her beautiful hair was long enough to reach her waist. The flat bangs of her hair covered her forehead,

making her look very cute. Her slightly rosy cheeks looked chubby and could cause an impulse to slightly pinch them in other people. Her big eyes glittering, she was staring ahead with a tinge of hope in her eyes.

This was of course the young girl called Chu Yuhe, who had been abducted by Zhang Yang's subordinates then eventually rescued by Bai Yunfei in the past.

It seemed she had been waiting here for quite some time. At this moment, she curled her lips slightly and mumbled in a seemingly somewhat discontented manner, "It's been so long since senior sister left. Why hasn't she returned yet...?"

While 'complaining' softly, she raised her head again to gaze into the distance. Suddenly, her eyes brightened then showed a joyful expression. She unexpectedly trotted forwards impatiently to give a welcome.

In the distance, a man and a girl were going side by side. They were none other than Bai Yunfei and Qiu Luliu.

"The headquarters of the Green Willow School is up ahead. Yunfei, let's go a bit faster. Junior... Oh? Ha ha, you see, junior sister just can't wait to meet you." Qiu Luliu covered her mouth and said with a chuckle as she saw a petite silhouette trotting towards them from up ahead.

When Chu Yuhe ran up to a place about ten meters in front of them, she stopped hastily. It seemed only now did she suddenly realize that she was somewhat impatient. Her pretty face slightly reddening, her hands rubbing her clothes, she said, "Senior sister, you, you have returned... Um, Bai, Mister Bai Yunfei, how are you...?"

"Ha ha, how are you, Miss Chu? Have you been waiting for us here?" Seeing the young girl in front of him, Bai Yunfei was somewhat excited inside too.

“Um, my master, my master told me to stay here to welcome you, Mister Bai Yunfei...”

“You don’t have to stand on ceremony like this, Miss Chu. It’s okay to just call me Yunfei.” Bai Yunfei said laughingly.

“Then, then I’ll call you, call you brother Yunfei. You should also call me Yuhe...” The young girl said timidly.

On one side, seeing that her junior sister was still so shy, Qiu Luliu could not help shaking her head in frustration and saying to the two of them, “Alright, could it be you two want to stand here and chat? Let’s come in first. We’ll have a nice chat in a while.”

Chu Yuhe gave a sound of agreement and walked up to the side of Qiu Luliu. The three of them then went towards the main gate of the Green Willow School together.



## Chapter 64: Green Willow School

---

In a small hall which was simply furnished but had an air of elegance and comfort about it,

Bai Yunfei and Qiu Luliu were sitting opposite each other on the left and the right respectively. Bai Yunfei was holding a teacup in his hand, carefully listening to her introduction to the Green Willow School and the situation in the entire Jade Willow City.

“Right, Luliu, do you know if there are forces subordinate to the Glacial School in this Jade Willow City?” Bai Yunfei suddenly thought of one thing and asked.

“Oh? Why do you ask this question?” Qiu Luliu was stupefied for a short while then immediately reacted, “Are you worried that... Zhang Zhenshan will employ the Glacial School’s forces to search for you?”

Bai Yunfei nodded.

“Ha ha, you need not worry about this.” Qiu Luliu laughed softly, “If this was a different place, I wouldn’t dare to guarantee anything, but in this Jade Willow City, the Glacial School definitely won’t dare to run wild. This place is the location of my Green Willow School’s headquarters, how can my school let them cause trouble?”

Bai Yunfei pondered with his head lowered for a while then continued to ask, “For the last two days I’ve always felt that there seems to be something wrong, but I haven’t detected anything. That Glacial School... If they already know that I’m here, but they don’t dare to cause trouble in the city, then I’m afraid when I leave Jade Willow City, I’ll be ambushed by them. Only, I’m not sure if they have found me by now or not...”

“I see...” Qiu Luliu’s face showed a trace of solemnity. After thinking for a bit, she said, “According to my knowledge, there’s

no forces of the Glacial School in the city. But there seems to be some connection between that Long family and the Glacial School...”

“What? The Long family?!” Bai Yunfei asked in surprise, his expression changing.

“Oh? Could it be you know about that Long family?” Qiu Luliu asked doubtfully, having not expected such a reaction from him.

“The day before yesterday I had a conflict with the two young masters of the Long family. They...” Bai Yunfei casually said a few words but then he stopped all of a sudden. Seeming to remember something, he frowned slightly and began to ponder with his head lowered.

Seeing him like that, Qiu Luliu did not disturb him again. She sat quietly on one side sipping her tea.

“Master, brother Yunfei is inside...” Chu Yuhe’s lovely voice came in from outside. She had gone to invite her master to come here earlier. Now they should be arriving together.

Sure enough, when her voice had just faded away, two people appeared at the door. One of them was a middle-aged woman with an elegant posture and at the same time an air of majesty about her. She walked into the room accompanied by Chu Yuhe.

Actually it was somewhat inappropriate to refer to her as a middle-aged woman because even though she had a plump, mature figure, she appeared to be very young. Judging from her appearance alone, she definitely could not be older than thirty years of age—this was none other than the Green Willow School’s headmaster, Mu Wanqing.

“Master.” Seeing the visitors, Qiu Luliu stood up and saluted at once.

The moment Chu Yuhe’s voice rang out, Bai Yunfei woke up from his contemplation. Now he also stood up. Although he was a

little surprised because the person called ‘master’ by Qiu Luliu was so young, this lasted only for a moment. He also saluted, saying, “I am Bai Yunfei. It is an honor to meet you, senior.”

Mu Wanqing smiled at the two of them then said to Bai Yunfei, “There’s no need to stand on ceremony, young hero Bai. Let’s all sit down. Don’t be too formal.”

After everybody sat down, Mu Wanqing observed Bai Yunfei carefully for a good few seconds then said with smiling eyes, “Young hero Bai, I really wanted to thank you in person for having saved Yuhe in the past, therefore this time I took the liberty of inviting you to my school as a guest. I hope you don’t take offense at this.”

The fact that she, a school’s headmaster and a Soul Ancestor, had such a polite attitude towards himself made Bai Yunfei feel somewhat uncomfortable. He shook his hand gently, saying: “Please don’t stand on ceremony, headmaster. I’m not worthy of it. There was already a feud between Zhang Yang and me so at the time I merely saved Yuhe by accident. You don’t need to thank me anymore...”

“Oh, since young hero Bai is so modest, I won’t mention this again either.” Mu Wanqing paused for a bit then continued, “As for the Glacial School, you don’t have to be worried about it when you’re in this Jade Willow City. If they dare to cause trouble in the city, my Green Willow School won’t sit by and watch.”

Bai Yunfei was happy inside because she had said clearly that she would help him. Although he did not know why she was so enthusiastic, having a ‘backer’ was always a good thing.

“Oh, thank you very much for your help, headmaster. I plan to leave this Azure Cloud Province tomorrow or the day after tomorrow. When I have arrived in the Northern Cliff Province, as long as I’m careful with my actions, I think the Glacial School won’t be able to do anything to me.”

“Oh? You’re about to leave so soon? Um... Young people aspire to travel far and make their mark. Young hero Bai was lucky to be taught by a senior from the Fate School so you indeed shouldn’t limit yourself to such a small place as Azure Cloud Province. You should go out and try to make a name for yourself.”

Her sudden mention of the Fate School slightly stupefied Bai Yunfei. He cast a look at Qiu Luliu on one side then said modestly, “You flatter me, senior. I just want to go experience the outside world a bit. As for me being taught by senior Ge Yiyun from the Fate School, this was indeed a piece of luck.”

Hearing the words ‘Ge Yiyun’ from Bai Yunfei, Mu Wanqing slightly raised her beautiful eyebrows, but they immediately returned to normal. She took a look at Chu Yuhe on one side, seeming to think of something, and said, “Right, young hero Bai, what do you think about this little girl Yuhe?”

“Oh?” Bai Yunfei was stupefied, somewhat unable to keep up with her sudden change of topics. Only after being stunned for a long time did he say somewhat doubtfully, “Yuhe... is very good. I heard from Luliu that she’s well-behaved and sensible and got quite a lot of talent for cultivation...”

“Then... are you willing to accept her as your sworn younger sister, young hero Bai?” Mu Wanqing nodded smilingly then said a line that astounded the other three people at the scene.

Bai Yunfei felt that his thinking really could not keep up with this senior’s thought speed. Temporarily he was stupefied and had no reaction. Mu Wanqing frowned slightly, “What’s wrong, young hero Bai? Could it be you think that Yuhe doesn’t deserve to become your younger sister?”

“Ah? No, no, that’s not what I mean. Miss Yuhe is smart and lovely. How can I...”

“Oh, so this means you agree to this?” Mu Wanqing narrowed her eyes slightly, showing a smiling expression, “Then that settles

it. From now on the two of you will be brother and younger sister. This way Yuhe won't feel guilty all the time about being unable to repay you for saving her life."

"Yuhe, are you willing to accept young hero Bai as your brother?" Mu Wanqing turned to Chu Yuhe and asked kindly.

In the beginning, when Chu Yuhe heard Mu Wanqing mention her, she had a somewhat confused expression. Then, when she heard her master ask Bai Yunfei about his view on her, her face slightly reddened. Afterwards, when she heard her master tell Bai Yunfei to accept her as a sworn younger sister, her face was full of amazement, but she did not dare to cut in. Now, hearing Mu Wanqing's question, she was slightly stupefied then said in a low voice, "Of course, of course I'm willing. I'm also very happy to have brother Yunfei as my sworn brother."

"Oh, that's good. From now on, young hero Bai is your brother. You have to respect your sworn brother, do you understand?" Mu Wanqing nodded in a satisfied manner and said smilingly.

"Yes, I will remember this..."

.....

Just like that, Bai Yunfei got a nominal younger sister in a puzzling manner.

Looking at Chu Yuhe, who now had slightly red cheeks and a happy expression, Mu Wanqing secretly let out a sigh of relief.

It had to be said that it actually took Mu Wanqing a lot of effort to come up with this 'sudden' suggestion. Right after knowing that Bai Yunfei had saved Chu Yuhe, she had already noticed that Chu Yuhe had a vague love for him. Only, the little girl had seemed to still be ignorant of it. Therefore, Mu Wanqing took this opportunity to turn her just-budding love into an admiration for a brother. All it took was a couple of advices for Chu Yuhe. Mu Wanqing had achieved her goal. Now the little girl had already

listened to her master's words, regarding Bai Yunfei as an older brother...

Mu Wanqing wanted to facilitate a love between the two of them as well, especially when knowing just now that there was some connection between Bai Yunfei and Ge Yiyun. At the time she could not restrain her heart from palpitating with eagerness because a junior highly regarded by Ge Yiyun would definitely have outstanding achievements in the future, and if she could build a good relationship with him, this would absolutely benefit the Green Willow School. However, she could also tell that Bai Yunfei did not have that kind of feeling towards Chu Yuhe, therefore, in order to spare her little disciple future grief, she had no choice but to manipulate them into becoming sworn brother and younger sister in such a puzzling way.

Seeing that the other three people present were still somewhat bewildered, looking thoughtful, Mu Wanqing laughed softly and said said to Bai Yunfei, "Right, young hero Bai, in this Jade Willow City you..."

"Headmaster, a guest has come to pay a visit!" Before she could finish what she was saying, a reporting voice coming in from outside the door interrupted her.

Mu Wanqing frowned slightly and looked outside the door at that reporting disciple, asking, "Who is that? Take them into the side hall on the west wing first. I'll come over in a while."

"Headmaster, this is senior You Qingfeng from the Wood School." The disciple outside the door hesitated for a while then still said again in warning.

After Mu Wanqing heard these words, her originally indifferent face suddenly froze for a moment then showed a happy expression. Although it was suppressed by her immediately, that fleeing hint of a girlish smile still captivated Bai Yunfei for a bit when he saw it.

“Young hero Bai, you should have a chat with Qiu Luliu and Chu Yuhe. I think the three of you must have many things to talk about. After that you can let them take you on a stroll in my school...” Mu Wanqing stood up said to Bai Yunfei with a smile.

He nodded, “Oh, that’s fine. Please feel free to go and receive your guest. There’s no need to care about me.”

Only after Mu Wanqing had left did Bai Yunfei ask Qiu Luliu somewhat doubtfully, “Who is this person called You Qingfeng...?”

“Senior You Qingfeng is an outstanding disciple of the Wood School in the Five Elements Schools. As a late-stage Soul Ancestor, he’s even more formidable than my master!” Qiu Luliu explained then looked outside the door quietly, seeming to confirm that her master had really gone far away. Afterwards, she said in a lowered voice, “He’s my master’s cousin! If not for my master’s inability to let go of the Green Willow School, she would’ve probably gone with him to the Wood School. They...”

At this point, seeming to suddenly react to something, she immediately sat upright and said with a straight face, “As juniors, we can’t discuss our seniors’ affairs.”

But that expression was obviously telling Bai Yunfei that, “You get the picture...”

## Chapter 65: Sudden Event

---

After Mu Wanqing had left, Bai Yunfei and the two girls chat with each other leisurely.

Qiu Luliu talked about various interesting things in Jade Willow City, Chu Yuhe 'gave an account' of her life since joining the Green Willow School in a low voice and Bai Yunfei also talked about what he had gone through from when he had parted ways with them at that time until now.

Of course, he concealed some details that should not be mentioned. Even so, his story still made the two girls nervous and anxious, especially Chu Yuhe. Upon hearing that Bai Yunfei had fallen into a trap in the town of Old Well then fled for three days in a row and even been caught up with by Zhang Zhenshan, she was so tense that her little face became very red. When she heard that Bai Yunfei had eventually escaped after an arduous battle, she had a very happy expression, looking extremely delighted. Seeing this, both Bai Yunfei and Qiu Luliu could not help laughing.

Only when a person came and informed the three of them that lunch was ready at noon did they stop chatting. Mu Wanqing unexpectedly did not show up during lunch. According to Qiu Luliu, all the senior members of the school ate their meals in a different place.

In the afternoon, under the guidance of the two girls, Bai Yunfei went for a stroll in the Green Willow School. The three of them talked and laughed with each other quite happily as they walked.

Bai Yunfei raised his head to observe the color of the sky. It was almost evening already. He halted his steps and said to the two girls by his side: "Luliu, Yuhe, it's time I went back already..."

"Ah? You want to leave so soon?" Qiu Luliu asked somewhat disappointedly. On one side, Chu Yuhe also had a trace of unwillingness on her face.



Bai Yunfei laughed and said: “Yeah, I still got some things to do. Tomorrow or the day after tomorrow I’ll probably leave Cuiliu City, but I’ll come to say goodbye to you two before that.”

He looked at Chu Yuhe, who was looking at him anxiously on one side, and said smilingly: “When the time comes, I’ll give younger sister Yuhe a present. Hopefully you’ll like it.”

Chu Yuhe was stupefied then showed a happy expression. She said expectantly: “Really? What’s the present?”

“Ha ha, you’ll know at that time.”

Bai Yunfei lifted his head to take a look. Suddenly he saw two silhouettes going towards them side by side from up ahead. After taking a careful look at them, he said in amazement: “Oh? Isn’t that headmaster Mu? This is perfect timing. I’ll say goodbye to her then leave.”

The three of them walked towards Mu Wanqing, who had already noticed them as well. As they came near her, Bai Yunfei cast a look at the person by her side -- a man about thirty years old. He had an upright posture and a handsome face. The rare thing was that his elegance contained maturity and dignity. This was a man who could make a good impression on people at first sight.

“This must be that man called You Qingfeng from the Wood School.” Bai Yunfei thought to himself.

Mu Wanqing first nodded slightly to Bai Yunfei then waved to Chu Yuhe, saying: “Come here, Yuhe. Greet your senior uncle You.”

Chu Yuhe was always somewhat timid in front of strangers. She did what she was told by walking up to Mu Wanqing and making a salute to that man, saying in a low voice: “It is an honor to meet you, senior uncle You...”

“Ha ha, is this the little girl you told me about? Not bad, well-behaved and sensible, and pretty talented, very good.” You

Qingfeng nodded to Chu Yuhe and said laughingly. His tone was amiable and his voice gave a feeling of intimacy too.

Qiu Luliu also went forwards to salute him then stood respectfully to one side.

Bai Yunfei took another look at this man, but met the smiling look in his eyes. He nodded slightly in salute then folded his hands to Mu Wanqing, saying: "Headmaster Mu, I still have something to do so I can't stay any longer. I have specifically come here to bid farewell to you before leaving."

"Oh? You want to leave already, young hero Bai? That's fine. Then I won't ask you to stay either. If you need my help with something in this city, feel free to come to the Green Willow School. Now that you're already Yuhe's sworn brother, my Green Willow School will definitely do our utmost to help you."

"In that case, thank you very much, headmaster. Before leaving Cuiliu City, I'll come here to pay a visit again."

.....

After watching Bai Yunfei walk outside seen off by the two girls, Mu Wanqing suppressed her smile, a thoughtful expression showing up in her eyes.

"Wanqing, is he the young man related to the Fate School you told me about? From what I saw, he's just a mid-stage Soul Warrior. Besides, there doesn't seem to be anything special about him either..." You Qingfeng withdrew his eyes and asked somewhat doubtfully.

Mu Wanqing shook her head, saying: "Don't underestimate him, Qingfeng. No matter his power level, just the fact that he was taught by senior Ge Yiyun is already enough to show that he's definitely not an ordinary junior. Plus, I heard from Luliu that when they met for the first time, he was using a spear that should have been a high-human tier soul armament at least, or maybe

even an earth-tier one! Besides, after killing the son of that Glacial School elder Zhang Zhenshan, he was still able to reach Jade Willow City safely even though the Zhang family has been doing their utmost to hunt him down. This is already enough to show that he definitely has outstanding qualities.”

“Oh? These things happened as well? You didn’t tell me about them earlier.” You Qingfeng was slightly surprised, “In that case, he’s indeed worthy of your help. To this kind of man, if you take advantage of the fact that he’s not powerful at the moment to help him, when he really accomplishes something in the future, this will benefit the Green Willow School greatly as well.”

.....

With his head lowered, Bai Yunfei was walking alone on a road leading back to the city. His eyebrows slightly wrinkling, he seemed to be considering some issue.

“No matter the reason, the fact that the Green Willow School’s headmaster is willing to help me is a good thing to me. There’s nothing bad about it! Though I already decided to leave right away, I always feel that something is wrong...

“I must not get involved with Jade Willow City’s Long family again. Now the ideal scenario is, though Zhang Zhenshan has mobilized a large number of men to search for me, he hasn’t employed all of the Glacial School’s forces. After all, he’s just an elder. So, even if the Long family is connected with the Glacial School, it’s also possible that they haven’t received information about me...

“The longer I stay here, the more dangerous it gets! I’ve been delayed for two days already. I can’t stay here any longer! Now let’s go back and tell Meng’er clearly that I’m leaving tomorrow!”

As soon as he thought of Liu Meng, he felt somewhat frustrated in his heart because he did not know if she was still ‘angry’ or not. Moreover, when he thought of the fact that he would leave this

place tomorrow, a feeling of unwillingness came into being in his heart for no reason...

Thinking of these things confused Bai Yunfei's mind somewhat. In this complicated state of mind, he slowly entered the city then headed for the place where Liu Meng had said she was currently staying.

However, he did not find anyone after arriving in that tavern. Bai Yunfei was rather disappointed, thinking that she had probably gone out to relieve boredom. Now he had no choice but to decide to come here again tomorrow in the early morning.

When Bai Yunfei returned to the tavern where he was staying, he was surprised to see a person waiting for him anxiously at the door -- this was unexpectedly Xiao Ning!

As soon as she saw Bai Yunfei, her eyes brightened. She ran up to him hurriedly. Only now did Bai Yunfei see clearly that tears were rolling down this servant girl's face, which also looked extremely anxious.

"Mister Yunfei, it's bad! Young lady has been abducted by the Long family's men!!"

## Chapter 66: You Want to Fight? Let's Fight!

---

These few words made Bai Yunfei freeze on the spot as if struck by lightning.

“Mister Yunfei, please go save young lady quickly! That Long Tao [the second brother] said that you must go there otherwise young lady will be...”

Xiao Ning anxious voice came into his ears again. Bai Yunfei woke up from his shock and pulled her to one side with a solemn expression, asking in a deep voice, “What’s going on? Calm down a bit and tell me in detail! I’ll go save Meng’er right away!”

Xiao Ning wiped her tears away and sobbed slightly, “At noon today, when young lady saw that you hadn’t come to look for her, she, she took me out for a walk on the streets, wanting to come looking for you...”

“Who would have thought she, she would run into that Long Tao and his brother on the streets again? They, they even had two other men from the Long family with them. They’re so powerful, even more powerful than young lady...”

“They kidnapped her and told me to go look for you, Mister Yunfei. They said that you must go to the Secret Pleasure Tower in the northern corner of the city...”

Xiao Ning was a rather intelligent servant girl so she gave a clear account of what had happened with just several lines then she said to Bai Yunfei with her face full of anxiety, “What do we do now, Mister Yunfei?? It’s been nearly two hours since young lady was kidnapped by them. Please go save her quickly!!”

Bai Yunfei frowned tightly with a grave expression. He wanted to remain calm but the anxiety in his heart just could not be suppressed.

“You stay here and wait for me. I’ll go there right now! I’ll

definitely save Meng'er, no matter what!"

After saying these words, he turned around and rushed towards the northern corner of the city.

.....

The Secret Pleasure Tower was located on a small street that was not bustling at all in the northern corner of the city. It occupied a large area and was an extremely luxurious restaurant. The reason it had been opened in such a corner was that it did not do business with the masses. Instead, it was a dedicated entertainment place for those plutocrats and aristocrats in Jade Willow City. And the master of this restaurant from behind the curtain was none other than the Long family.

At the moment, in the spacious hall of the Secret Pleasure Tower, four men were sitting around a table. They seemed to be drinking and eating leisurely. Two of them were none other than Long Tao and his older brother while the other two appeared to be about twenty seven or twenty eight years old. They looked quite similar to each other, both having thick eyebrows, big eyes and fierce appearances.

In a corner of the hall, a young girl was sitting in a large, luxurious chair. She was none other than Liu Meng!

She was sitting there with a calm expression watching the four men drinking and chatting. Although her limbs were not tied, she was motionless. Apparently her entire body was powerless. She should have been given a special drug and therefore was unable to move her body.

"Yunfei, why haven't you come here yet...?" Liu Meng sighed softly in her mind. Her eyes could not help looking towards the door. In her eyes, there was unexpectedly a complicated expression.

"Big cousin, when do you think that brat will come here? We've

been waiting for two hours already!!” Long Tao picked up a piece of meat, put it into his mouth and said somewhat impatiently as he looked outside and saw no signs of movement.

“What are you worried about? It’s possible he hasn’t received the news yet. Anyway, he’ll come here sooner or later. Let’s just eat and drink to our hearts’ content while slowly waiting for him.” The man called ‘big cousin’ in front of him said indifferently after raising his bowl and taking a mouthful of wine.

“Big cousin, why did you dismiss all our subordinates? If several of them had stayed, we’d appear imposing as well.” Long Tao asked doubtfully after looking at the somewhat deserted hall a bit.

The big cousin frowned slightly, saying, “What’s the point of those pieces of shit staying? The enemy is a mid-stage Soul Warrior. Even if a hundred of them came at him, they wouldn’t be able to do anything! Besides, having more people here would hinder our plan...”

“Bang!!”

A loud sound interrupted him then wood chips were sent flying everywhere. Following a wave of force, they scattered all over in the hall. It turned out the main gate of the restaurant had been blown into pieces from outside by someone!

Bai Yunfei slowly went into the room with a solemn expression. Sweeping his eyes around quickly, he saw Liu Meng in a corner and immediately let out a sigh of relief. Judging from her appearance, she should not have been hurt.

Looking at those four men, who had already stood up from their chairs and were looking at him vigilantly, Bai Yunfei clenched his right fist tightly. He moved to one side a bit and stood at the optimum place for attack and defense then cast a look at Liu Meng, asking in a deep voice, “Are you okay, Meng’er?”

“Humph!” Before Liu Meng could answer, the man called big

cousin by Long Tao gave a cold snort and snatched the thread of conversation, saying sneeringly, “Brat, are you that Bai Yunfei mentioned by this girl? Humph, you’ve got some balls indeed. I didn’t expect you to dare to run over here alone to save her. No wonder this girl trusts you so much. Ha ha, but could it be you think you can rescue her all by yourself?”

Hearing his words, Bai Yunfei wrinkled his eyebrows slightly. Before he could talk back, he heard Liu Meng say in a slightly weak voice, “Be a bit careful, Yunfei. One of these two men is a mid-stage Soul Warrior and the other is an early-stage Soul Warrior!”

That big cousin turned around to take a look at Liu Meng and said laughingly, “Hah, not bad. You’ve told him the most important information right in the beginning. But, so what if he knows this? As a mid-stage Soul Warrior, he can fight me to a draw at most. But I have my younger brother and Long Tao [the big brother] with me, how can he possibly take on the three of us alone?”

After saying so, he turned around and looked at Bai Yunfei with a vague smile, not taking the initiative to get into action at all. It seemed he was waiting for Bai Yunfei’s reaction.

Still frowning slightly, Bai Yunfei stared at this man for a long time before saying slowly, “What’s your connection with the Long family?”

That Long Tao [the younger brother] was standing furthest back among these four men because he was just an ordinary man. At this moment, hearing Bai Yunfei’s question, he said very arrogantly with arms akimbo, “Humph, what’s up? Are you scared now? I already told you earlier that my Long family isn’t something you can offend. These two gentlemen are my big cousin and Long Taogu and my second cousin Long Taoyi! This time, they’ve specifically come here to take care of you, the ignorant soul cultivator who looked down on my Long family!”



The corners of Bai Yunfei's mouth twitched. In the current situation, he was in no mood to make fun of the names of these two brothers who had just come on the scene. Apparently this so-called Long family had an extraordinary attachment for this very promising job of being 'long tao' [a walk-on part].

He kept silent for a while then said in a seemingly negotiating tone, "I can apology for the incident two days ago, and you'll let me leave with her. We'll all act as if nothing happened, okay?"

When Long Tao [the big brother], who was standing on the far left among the four men, heard these words, his eyes immediately popped. He looked at Bai Yunfei as if looking at an idiot, saying sneeringly, "Are you joking? Do you think you have the right to negotiate with us in the current situation? Let me tell you something..."

Before he could finish saying this complacent line, in front of him, Bai Yunfei's eyes suddenly flashed with a trace of ferocity. He reached out his right hand and the Fire-tipped Spear appeared in his hand. Afterwards, pushing his feet against the floor, he unexpectedly launched an attack directly without a warning sign!

When Long Tao had yet to say the second half of what he wanted to say, a heat wave hit him in the face. The flaming red tip of the spear was already about to reach him!

"Careful!" Terror showed up in Long Tao's eyes. Just when he wanted to retreat, beside him, Long Taogu had already got into action by giving a shout of warning and at the same time hooking his foot into a four-legged chair and kicking it towards the area in front of Long Tao to block the path of the Fire-tipped Spear.

In an instant, the spear pierced into the chair. Bai Yunfei then slightly turned the hand that was holding it. In the blazing firelight, a sound of explosion rang out. That chair was unexpectedly blown into countless wood chips, which then turned into various flames and shot outwards in all directions!

Three of the four men in front of Bai Yunfei were soul cultivators so their reactions were definitely not slow. The moment Long Taogu had kicked the chair out, they had started to retreat continuously together. Now they had already moved back several meters. As they looked at the burning wood chips which had fallen on the floor, astonished expressions showed up on their faces.

“A Soul Armament!!” Long Taogu shouted in shock. Looking at the Fire-tipped Spear in Bai Yunfei’s hands, his eyes were filled with fear.

After executing that strike, Bai Yunfei unexpectedly did not pursue and attack them. Instead, he stood in the same place holding the spear, rejoicing in his mind that the first Threefold Thrust had been able to activate the spear’s explosion effect. He stared at the four men expressionlessly, saying again, “I’ll say it again. Let me go with her and let’s act as if nothing happened.”

Long Taogu looked at Bai Yunfei, the fear in his eyes intensifying. He waved his hand to motion for Long Tao [the younger brother], who was furthest back, to get a bit further away. Then he gave the other two men by his side a hint with his eyes and said to Bai Yunfei with a cold laugh, “Humph, you think it’s amazing to have a high-grade soul armament, don’t you? Such an arrogant, ignorant brat! Now that you’ve come here today, don’t even think you’ll walk out of this gate safely! If you’re wise, hand over your soul armament, then let us brothers teach you a lesson, maybe then we can still spare your life!”

After saying so, he seemed to ponder again for a moment then said jeeringly, “Or let’s do it this way. If you can beat the three of us, we’ll admit defeat and never trouble you again. What do you think?”

Bai Yunfei frowned, his eyes glittering slightly. He was considering how to deal with this situation in his mind, “Damn it! I can’t kill them, otherwise the entire Long family will come at me. Now I simply don’t have enough power to fight them head-on.

What should I do? I can't use the Fire-tipped Spear, but I'm not sure if I can beat the three of them by myself at all."

Looking at the three men in front of him, who were gradually spreading out, ready to surround him, Bai Yunfei slightly clenched his teeth, knowing that he could not delay anymore, "I have no choice but to use it!"

He put the Fire-tipped Spear in his hands away and, at the same time, pushed his feet against the floor. Like a speeding arrow, he charged at Long Taogu in front of him.

"You want to fight? Let's fight!"

# Chapter 67: The Brick Defeats a Soul Skill

---

“You want to fight? Let’s fight!”

Bai Yunfei put the Fire-tipped Spear in his hands away and, at the same time, pushed his feet against the floor. Like a speeding arrow, he charged at Long Taogu in front of him.

Long Taogu gave a cold smile with the corners of his mouth because the opponent had unexpectedly put away his weapon. Although he was somewhat curious about this, he secretly let out a sigh of relief and also charged at Bai Yunfei.

The original distance between them was extremely short so they came within striking distance almost in the blink of an eye. The moment they closed in on each other, Long Taogu lowered his body and unexpectedly took the initiative and attacked Bai Yunfei’s legs with a sweep of his right leg.

Bai Yunfei, who was rushing up, unexpectedly stopped his momentum in the blink of an eye. At the same time, he leaned backwards and retreated several steps continuously, avoiding this sweep kick right away. After that, his body cut obliquely through the air in an arc, unexpectedly changing from leaning backwards to bending forwards. At the same time, he lifted his right hand. A rectangular object suddenly appeared in his hand and he smashed it down towards the opponent’s head!

What he was holding in his hand was none other than that +13 brick!

Although Long Taogu’s attack had been avoided by the opponent with a strange body-maneuvering technique, he was not much surprised by this. His eyes flashed, but just when he wanted to rise to attack, he was surprised to see the opponent counterattack in a breath’s time after avoiding his attack. Having no time to see clearly what that rectangular object really was, he hurriedly made a block by crossing his arms in front of his head.

“Bang!” Right after Long Taogu got his defense ready, the attack arrived. A great force hit him, forcing him to retreat involuntarily several steps. Even though he felt pain in his arms, this did not seem to be serious at all.

At first Bai Yunfei wanted to pursue and attack him, but he heard sounds of movement coming from the left and the right hand sides simultaneously. This was none other than Long Taoyi and Long Tao attacking him. So, he had no choice but to avoid the incoming punches and kicks with several evasive movements. While backing off, he threw a kick, which collided with a kick coming from Long Tao, forcing the opponent back several steps. But he was hit in the shoulder by a punch from Long Taoyi and slightly staggered half a step. Giving a cold snort, he thrust the brick in his hand forwards, hitting the opponent’s shoulder in a seemingly gentle manner.

This time, Long Taoyi was not so lucky as his older brother. When hit with the brick, at first he was frightened inside, but then he noticed that there was not much pain coming from his shoulder and it was not injured at all. Just when he was secretly rejoicing over this, a strange force unexpectedly came from his shoulder all of a sudden and spread through his entire body in the blink of an eye. Afterwards, his whole body flew out upside down uncontrollably and smashed into Long Tao behind him. The two men then tumbled backwards together. Only when they had rolled to the side of Long Taogu did they stop.

This was the brick’s +13 additional effect, hurling!

Originally, Long Taogu had wanted to charge forwards to jointly attack the opponent, but when he had just taken a step, he saw his young brother and cousin sent flying backwards in a baffling manner. Very frightened, he halted his steps and fixed his eyes on the weapon in Bai Yunfei’s hand. Despite being a mid-stage Soul Warrior, he could not help widening his eyes and blurting out in shock.

“Are you kidding me?! A brick?!”

Bai Yunfei, however, was in no mood to discuss the weapon in his hand with him. Using the Wave Treading Steps, he charged up and attacked again without saying a word.

Even though in his mind Long Taogu was puzzled and even amazed by the brick in the opponent's hand, he brushed it aside in an instant. Giving a cold snort, he bypassed the two men on the floor and charged forwards with quick steps.

The moment the two of them about to come into contact, facing a forceful punch from Long Taogu, Bai Yunfei raised the corners of his mouth slightly. With a slide of his feet, he avoided contact with the opponent. Then, with a sideways movement and a turn of his body, under the astonished look in the opponent's eyes, he went around him to attack Long Tao and Long Taoyi behind him, who were both getting up.

Making use of the forward-charging momentum, he threw a kick at Long Taoyi and swung the brick at Long Tao's head simultaneously.

Long Taoyi was after all a Soul Warrior so he reacted extremely fast. Doing a cartwheel, he immediately avoided this kick. But Long Tao was not so lucky. He basically had yet to wake up from the puzzlement caused by when he had been sent flying inexplicably earlier. Moreover, he had not expected the opponent to give up fighting Long Taogu to run up and attack him, the weakest of the three men.

Therefore, Long Tao was hit very squarely by this blow of the brick. With a deep groan, he was sent flying to one side at an angle. The additional effects were not triggered and he was instead sent flying by the original impact force. However, he had still known to control his head muscles to strengthen his defense at the last moment so he was not seriously injured at all.

A large force then hit Bai Yunfei's left waist. It turned out Long Taogu had turned around and thrown a punch on his waist. Bai

Yunfei staggered half a step to the left, but now he was faced with a kick thrown at his chest by Long Taoyi. He hastily held the brick in front of his chest. Long Taoyi's kick slammed into it. Before he could withdraw his right leg, he was unexpectedly sent flying again without a warning sign—Long Taoyi was really unlucky enough to unexpectedly have his coming into contact with the brick regarded as a strike of the brick and, moreover, to even have the 'hurling' effect triggered again...

Bai Yunfei eyes flashed with a hint of happiness. Taking advantage of this rare opportunity when he had separated all three opponents from each other, he took half a step backwards to stabilize his body. Just when he wanted to turn around, he felt a strong force coming at him from behind again. This was another attack from Long Taogu. He seemed to have already noticed that it was impossible to seriously injure Bai Yunfei by attacking the torso, so this time he was aiming for the head!

Not having enough time to turn around, Bai Yunfei could only stoop down. The opponent's raised kick grazed his back. Bai Yunfei took advantage of this opportunity and attacked his supporting left leg with a sweep kick, but the opponent jumped away vigilantly and avoided it.

Making use of the sweep kick's momentum, Bai Yunfei turned around then charged forwards without pausing. When Long Taogu had just stabilized his body after jumping away, he saw the opponent charging up again. Giving a cold snort, he began to fight Bai Yunfei without any sign of panic.

Both of them were at the mid-stage Soul Warrior stage so as they exchanged blows, several bouts were fought in just several blinks of an eye. Long Taogu's moves were steady and showed no flaws. Even though Bai Yunfei was relying on the agility provided by his body-maneuvering skill, he was only at a slight advantage, but it was impossible for him to defeat the opponent in a short time.

Worse still, Long Taogu had also noticed that there was

something extraordinary about the brick in the opponent's hand so he was very careful not to be hit by it.

Seeing that the other two men were already charging up again, Bai Yunfei was unavoidably slightly anxious inside. Faced with a punch thrown at his face, he leaned to one side with a slide of his feet and avoided it. Just when he was ready to raise his hand to counterattack—at this moment, something unexpected happened!

The opponent's fist, which had already missed him with this punch, was suddenly opened into a palm. His arm then was bent in a strange manner and attacked Bai Yunfei's throat at a humanly impossible angle!

### Arm Bending Hand!

This was a low-level soul skill that could achieve the same goal as the Arm Lengthening Fist with a different means. The difference between them was that this technique did not 'lengthen' the arm but 'bend' it. Using an arm bent to an inconceivable angle, the user could take the opponent by surprise.

This change of moves took place too suddenly for Bai Yunfei to dodge it even if he used the Wave Treading Steps so he had no choice but to do his utmost to jump backwards at the last moment. However, he was still hit in the throat by this horizontal knife-hand strike.

Pushing his feet against the floor nonstop, Bai Yunfei used the Wave Treading Steps to the utmost, creating a string of afterimages of his body. In the blink of an eye, he moved back ten something meters. He felt that his breathing had stopped the moment he had been hit by that strike. The pain coming from his throat even made him begin to cough violently uncontrollably.

However, when Bai Yunfei had just slowed down for a moment, another attack from Long Taogu was already going after him!

Fury flickered vaguely through Bai Yunfei's eyes. Instead of



retreating, he move forwards to engage the opponent, creating several afterimages. The opponent still threw a punch at his head in an uncomplicated manner. Bai Yunfei slightly leaned to the right at the last moment and, at the same time, swung the brick, smashing it towards the opponent's shoulder.

His eyes flashing, Long Taogu once again bent the fist that had just missed and swung it at Bai Yunfei's temple. However, to his surprise, Bai Yunfei also changed the path of his arm halfway through and smashed the brick towards his right arm!

Bai Yunfei was not using the Arm Bending Hand. Instead, having already made preparations earlier, he had controlled the muscles and bones of his arm to change the angle of his attack by means of forcefully pulling it. Even though his arm was slightly injured by this, he still wanted to defeat this soul skill of the opponent!

“Bang!”

A deep sound rang out as the brick hit the opponent's wrist squarely!

## Chapter 68: Mission Accomplished, Conspiracy Discovered!

---

Bai Yunfei wanted to defeat the opponent's soul skill with the brick, even though this came at the cost of overloading his right arm's muscles and bones!

“Bang!”

A deep sound rang out as the brick hit the opponent's wrist squarely!

Long Taogu was frightened inside, but after getting hit by this strike, he only felt his right arm get deflected away slightly. The pain coming from his wrist was not intense either and, moreover, nothing unusual happened.

After Long Taogu's momentary fright, a hint of delight flashed across his mind. He secretly thought that he had been overcautious and that this was merely an ordinary brick. At the same time, his eyes flashed with coldness. He forcefully halted his right arm, which had been deflected aside, then bent it again and attacked Bai Yunfei's left shoulder!

Even though he was also controlling his arm regardless of overburdening it, having used the Arm Bending Hand twice in quick succession earlier, he wanted to deal the opponent a heavy blow!

After Bai Yunfei had knocked away the the opponent's arm, seeing that no additional effect had been activated, his eyes flashed with a trace of disappointment. Before he could withdraw the brick, he was surprised to see the opponent use his soul skill once again without pausing at all!

This attack was sudden and fierce. If the side of his left shoulder was hit by it, because this area was not protected by the Goldsilk Soul Armor, he would not be able to use his left arm at least for a

short time.

Having no time to think, Bai Yunfei clenched his teeth. His eyes showing a hint of madness, he unexpectedly changed the original movement of his right arm in the blink of an eye and blocked his left shoulder with the brick at the last moment.

“Bang!”

Although he had made a block with the brick, the impact force coming through it still made Bai Yunfei retreat half a step involuntarily. At the same time, he felt a sharp pain in his shoulder, but fortunately he was not seriously injured.

As Bai Yunfei backed off, his eyes flashed with a tinge of happiness. For a moment just then, he had felt a strand of soulforce flow into the brick in his hand, which also meant an additional effect had been triggered! What he did not know was, which effect had been triggered...

The moment this thought appeared, he lifted his eyes and saw that in front of him, Long Taogu was already flying backwards with an astounded expression!

As expected, it was still the ‘hurling’ effect, which had the highest chance of being successfully activated!

This rare opportunity must be taken. As soon as Bai Yunfei stabilized his body, he charged up without hesitation. Using the Wave Treading Steps to the utmost, he was unexpectedly even slightly faster than Long Taogu was flying backwards!

When Long Taogu was caught by Long Taoyi, who had rushed up from behind, Bai Yunfei had already charged up to his face. Clenching his left fist, he struck a blow instantly!

Overlapping Waves Art, Ninefold Fist Force!

Long Taogu had just been caught by his younger brother and was yet to regain his balance. Faced with this incoming punch, he had no choice but to once again make a block by crossing his arms in

front of him and channel his soulforce, ready to resist it head-on!

As the fist and the arms collided, a deep sound was heard, which even seemed to be mixed with a slight sound of broken bones. Long Taogu and Long Taoyi, who was supporting him, then were sent flying backwards again.

Bai Yunfei's body paused for a moment. Because he had overloaded his right arm twice in quick succession earlier, he had only been able to attack with his left arm, which naturally was much less powerful and, even worse, rather unsuited for this move.

After retreating several meters, Long Taogu and his young brother were finally able to stop their bodies. Long Taogu's drooping right arm was trembling slightly. A hint of a painful expression showed up on his face. His right arm, which had been put in front of his left arm just then, was not broken at all, but it was injured quite seriously.

They had been fighting him three on one for some time but they were unexpectedly still at a disadvantage!

Long Taogu's eyes were filled with amazement and disbelief, not only because of the opponent's strange body-maneuvering skill, but even more because of that inexplicable brick in his hand.

"Go up together! Be careful not to be hit by the brick in his hand!" Seeing Bai Yunfei already charging up again, Long Taogu gave a warning. He then unexpectedly was the first to rush up to engage the opponent, disregarding his right arm's injuries.

Bai Yunfei shook his right arm slightly, feeling that it was already much better. He was somewhat doubtful in his mind but now was not the time for him to care about this. The current situation was advantageous to him. He needed to defeat these three men then save Liu Meng first.

One against three, the four of them moved and jumped about in

the hall, fighting each other to a stalemate. Bai Yunfei's three opponents already knew that they should not come into contact with the brick in his hand easily therefore they were all extremely careful. As for Bai Yunfei, relying on the Goldsilk Soul Armor's defense, as long as an attack was not aimed at a spot on his body not protected by the armor, he would not even bother dodging it. And if necessary, he would use the Wave Treading Steps to dash away. Brandishing the brick, temporarily he could not achieve victory either.

After dogfighting for several minutes, Bai Yunfei finally grabbed a slight opportunity and deliberately revealed a weak point, luring Long Taoyi on the left into throwing a punch at him. In the blink of an eye, he lifted the brick and blocked the punch with it. The moment Long Taoyi's fist smashed into the brick, his expression changed greatly, thinking he would be sent flying inexplicably again. But after he waited for a moment, nothing unusual happened. When he had just begun to rejoice over this in his mind, he felt a pain in his stomach. It turned out Bai Yunfei had taken advantage of this moment of inactivity to throw a kick at him.

Long Taoyi was kicked away. Bai Yunfei turned around and resisted a punch from Long Taogu head-on with his back. After that, he raised the brick and smashed it towards Long Tao on the right without pausing at all.

Long Tao was terrified and hurriedly dodged it, but his left shoulder was still hit. Although no additional effect was triggered, because he had dodged in a hurry, he lost his balance. Bai Yunfei immediately swung the brick at him again, hitting him squarely in the head!

Next to Long Tao, seeing that he had been hit, Long Taogu gave a cold snort and immediately threw a punch at the back of Bai Yunfei's head. However, when his punch was just halfway through, something he had not expected happened!

Without a warning sign, his right cheek was hit squarely with a

punch. Completely unprepared for this, he was sent flying to one side! His attacker was unexpectedly Long Tao, who had been by his side.

The brick's +10 Additional effect, confusing, had been triggered!

Bai Yunfei's eyes flashed with delight. He had not expected this effect, which had the lowest chance of being activated, to be activated when he had hit the opponent in the head with this strike of the brick.

In confusion, Long Tao wanted to attack Bai Yunfei, but he was simply unable to aim at his intended target. After sending his big cousin flying with a punch, he still kept attacking recklessly like a madman. Bai Yunfei backed off a bit, just enough to avoid an incoming kick from him. However, Long Taoyi, who happened to be coming at Bai Yunfei at this moment, was not so lucky. Just like his older brother, he was caught completely unprepared by a kick from Long Tao and was sent flying with a face full of bafflement.

The three of them were separated from each other again. Bai Yunfei's eyes glittered. When Long Tao had just woken up from his confusion and had yet to know what had happened, a Ninefold Fist Force strike hit him in the stomach, sending him flying two meters away. He then fell to the floor for good.

Afterwards, with a dash of his body, creating a string of afterimages, Bai Yunfei instantly closed in on Long Taoyi, who had been knocked back by a kick from Long Tao, and threw a horizontal sweep kick at his waist, making it impossible for him to keep his balance. Then, giving the opponent no time to take a breath, he began to attack non-stop. Long Taoyi did his utmost to dodge but he was still unable to avoid the third strike and was sent flying by the brick again.

And his flying direction was none other than the direction of Long Taogu, who had just been hit by Long Tao's 'surprise attack'!

The moment Long Taoyi was sent flying away, Bai Yunfei

unexpectedly chased after him at a high speed while he was still in mid-air. The brick had already been switched to Bai Yunfei's left hand. His right arm's muscles bulging out, he struck the opponent in the stomach with a fierce blow!

Long Taoyi was simply powerless to resist this focus attack of the Ninefold Fist Force. His flying speed shooting up, he spouted a mouthful of blood and was smashed towards Long Taogu.

Astonishment showing up in Long Taogu's eyes, he hastily caught his younger brother, who came smashing into him, then thudded backwards continuously several meters before finally stopping.

"Wait, wait!!" After taking a look at his already unconscious younger brother, who he had just caught, Long Taogu raised his head to look at Bai Yunfei, who was ready to attack him again, and said hurriedly, "Let's stop fighting! We admit defeat! You can take her with you!"

Bai Yunfei halted his steps and looked at the opponent expressionlessly, his eyes slightly glittering. It seemed he was arguing with himself in his mind. A short while later, he put the brick away with a shake of his right hand. Still staring at the opponent, he then slowly moved towards the corner where Liu Meng was.

After going up to her side, he gently picked her up then slowly went towards the door. All along, his eyes never left Long Taogu. Only when he had got out of this restaurant did he turn around then disappear quickly at the end of the street.

Only a long time after Bai Yunfei's departure did Long Taogu sigh as if relieved of a heavy load, saying bitterly in his mind, "When did we ever need to lose 'on purpose'? The three of us were simply no match for him! This was the case even when he didn't use that spear, his other soul armament. He got two powerful soul skill and that baffling brick. We were just completely defeated..."

Shaking his head in frustration, he looked at the two men lying on the floor. Luckily neither of them was seriously injured and they would be all right after several days of recuperation at most. As for Long Tao [the younger brother], his presence had been nonexistent since the beginning of the fight. At the moment, he was hiding in a corner gazing in the direction where Bai Yunfei had left to the point of stupefaction.

Long Taogu took a glance around the hall. It had been turned into a complete mess during the battle just then. There were even many holes in the floor, which had been caused by the combatants' vigorous steps just then.

Withdrawing his eyes, he unexpectedly raised his head to look at the seemingly empty second floor. His expression also became respectful. He said, "Elder Liu..."

"Mm, you did well." A deep voice came out from a room on the second floor. The door of the room then opened and a middle-aged man about forty years old walked out—he was unexpectedly none other than that elder of the Glacial School, Liu Cheng!!

Standing on the second floor, Liu Cheng swept his eyes over the four men down below in the hall, saying slowly, "You all did very well. Now go home and treat your injuries. When this matter has been dealt with, you will receive your promised things."

Long Taogu said respectfully with a happy expression, "Thank you so much, Elder Liu!"

After that, he gave Long Tao [the second brother] a call and walked out of the restaurant while assisting the two injured men...

Liu Cheng lowered his head looking at an object in his hand, his eyes showing a thoughtful expression—what he was holding was unexpectedly that light blue bracelet Bai Yunfei had given to Liu Meng in the early morning today!

"Make no mistake, there's definitely something strange about



that spear, which appeared for a short while in the beginning, and that brick, which wasn't mentioned even by brother Zhenshan!"

As he stared at the bracelet in his hand, the wonderment in his eyes intensified, "This is obviously one of the ordinary items of jewelry he bought three days ago when he had just gone into Jade Willow City, but now..."

Judging from his words, he unexpectedly knew even these details! This also meant that he had already been keeping watch on Bai Yunfei since the first day he had entered the city!

"Besides... who would have thought he would make connections with the Green Willow School? I can't delay anymore. The plan must be carried out ahead of schedule!"

While planning in his mind, Liu Cheng slowly walked out of this Secret Pleasure Tower as well, heading for another street.

Only, despite being a mid-stage Soul Sprite, he did not notice that on a roof about a thousand meters away from this place, a silhouette was leaning on an upright post looking at this Secret Pleasure Tower with a solemn expression!

This person was over twenty years old, wore a silvery robe, had long hair and was ordinary-looking. There was a white, little animal looking like a rat crouching on his shoulder—this was none other than the young man who had talked with Qin Zheng of the Fate School the other day and called himself the Bloodhowl Wolf King's adopted son, Hong Yin!

Only when he had seen Liu Cheng disappear in an alleyway did he withdraw his eyes. After pondering for a while, he disappeared with a shake of his body.

# Chapter 69: Things That Always Happen at a Restaurant

---

After rescuing Liu Meng, Bai Yunfei went straight back into his tavern.

In a guest room, he gently put she down on a bed then asked in a deeply concerned manner, “Meng’er, how are you feeling? Are you hurt anywhere?”

Liu Meng smiled at him, saying softly, “I’m fine. You don’t have to worry, Yunfei. They forced me to take a drug then my whole body became powerless. But there shouldn’t be any big problems. I can feel that I’m recovering. I think I should be okay by tomorrow morning at the latest...”

“Really? Are you sure about this?” Bai Yunfei looked at the color of her face carefully. After thinking for a while, he still said worriedly, “I think I should go ask the seniors from the Green Willow School to come and have a look at you. This’ll bother them a bit, but I can only stop worrying after making sure that you’re okay.”

Just when he wanted to stand up, he felt Liu Meng hold his left hand. She raised her voice a little, saying, “There’s really no need for that, Yunfei. I heard from them that this drug merely paralyzes my body for a while, weakening my mind, making it impossible for me to channel my soulforce, and rendering my entire body powerless and immobile...”

His hand pulled by her, Bai Yunfei seemed to feel somewhat uneasy. He sat down on the bed again and said in a low voice, “Then... Alright, if you’re still not okay by tomorrow morning, I’ll take you to the Green Willow School to ask for help.”

Liu Meng showed a smiling expression. Her face slightly reddened. She stared at Bai Yunfei long a long time then said

tenderly, “Thank you for saving me, Yunfei. I knew... you’d definitely come.”

Bai Yunfei shifted his eyes away somewhat awkwardly and gave a slight cough, saying, “Don’t say that, Meng’er. After all, their target was me. It was all because of me provoking them earlier that you were kidnapped.”

“But didn’t you provoke them because of me?”

After saying so, Liu Meng seemed to realize that her words had another meaning and her face reddened even more. She inclined her head, not daring to look at Bai Yunfei again.

The little servant girl Xiao Ning had been keeping watch on one side with wide opened eyes all along. Now, seeing such an atmosphere between the two of them, her eyes rolled and she could not help letting out a laugh then said with pretended arrogance as if she was their senior, “Let me tell you two something. Obviously both of you want the same thing, so why are you still pretending not to understand each other?”

“Cough cough cough!!” Bai Yunfei gave a few dry coughs then stood up, saying, “Meng’er, your body is very weak at the moment so you should go to sleep early. I’ll go and have a rest too. After the fight just now, I’m pretty tired. If you want to talk about something, let’s wait until tomorrow.”

He then walked out of the room in a somewhat embarrassed manner. Behind him, the sounds of Xiao Ning’s lovely laughter and Liu Meng rebuking her in a low voice rang out.

After getting out of the room, Bai Yunfei closed the door. When he turned around again, the embarrassed expression on his face had already disappeared and replaced by one of solemnity!

He stood quietly at the door for several seconds and gave a sigh so soft it was inaudible then went downstairs, found the innkeeper, paid for another room and shut himself in it in complete silence.

.....

The next day, when Bai Yunfei saw Liu Meng again, she already no longer looked unwell. Moreover, she seemed quite happy. After eating the breakfast Xiao Ning had bought for her, she suggested to him that they should go for a stroll on the streets.

Today was somewhat cloudy, but the weather was not bad either. Even though there was no sun, the air was cool and refreshing. Bai Yunfei followed the two girls, walking about aimlessly on the streets.

“What’s wrong, Yunfei? It seems you’ve been preoccupied since the morning. Is it because you were injured yesterday?” Hearing Liu Meng’s deeply concerned voice, Bai Yunfei raised his head and saw a delicate pretty face with bright eyes full of doubt and concern looking at him without blinking.

Bai Yunfei shifted his eyes to one side a bit and said in a seemingly somewhat uncomfortable manner, “No, I’m fine. I’m just wondering... if the Long family’s men will find us now that we’re going on the streets like this...”

Liu Meng was startled then said laughingly, “You don’t have to worry. Didn’t that Long Taogu say yesterday that as long as you defeated them, he wouldn’t come to trouble you anymore? Besides, the other two men were injured by you. They shouldn’t have recovered from this so quickly.”

“Can we believe what they said...?” Bai Yunfei gave a forced smile inside, but his face showed no sign of it. He roused himself a bit and said, “Then, let’s continue to stroll about and buy things we want to buy. After that...”

“After that, I’ll have some words to tell you, Yunfei...” Liu Meng suddenly changed the topic of conversation, saying with a slightly reddened face.

Bai Yunfei halted his words then said doubtfully, “What words

do you have to tell me?"

"This, I'll tell you in a while!" Liu Meng's eyes became a little evasive. She said smilingly, "Now let's continue to stroll about. I like the atmosphere of this street very much! A while later, when we're already hungry, we'll find a place to eat!"

After saying so, without waiting for Bai Yunfei's reaction, she went forwards with Xiao Ning. The two girls began to talk about the various business shops on the sides of the street in a low voice rather excitedly. Bai Yunfei frowned slightly in an unnoticeable manner. In the end, he let out a sigh and had no choice but to follow them.

.....

In the west part of the city, on a similarly bustling street, a lanky youngster dressed entirely in black with a face full of discontentment was walking slowly in the crowd. He had ear-length short hair and a rather handsome appearance, but there seemed to be a sinister air about him.

"Junior uncle Yang is really annoying. It's been a good few days since he left for that Snowpeak City, why hasn't he returned yet?!" While walking, this youngster mumbled discontentedly in a low voice, "It was so hard to go out of the school, I'm still counting on him to take me to some more places.

"But fortunately I was wise enough to stay in this Jade Willow City, otherwise unlike junior uncle, I wouldn't be able to bear staying with those gloomy black-robed men all day long." He raised his head. The unhappy expression on his face had already lessened quite a lot. His eyes were sweeping the street back and forth, "He he, there's really quite a lot of beautiful young girls in this Jade Willow City. In the last several days in this city, I really almost died of pleasure."

Withdrawing his eyes from the body of a seductive woman, the youngster rubbed his stomach slightly and said to himself, "Let's

go find a place to eat first. Afterwards I'll see if I can run into a woman who makes me fancy her, he he..."

.....

At noon, on the second floor of a rather luxurious restaurant, Bai Yunfei and the two girls were sitting at a table next to a window. There were many extremely attractive dishes arranged on the table. The two girls were eating daintily but Bai Yunfei was gazing at the street outside the window in a trance. Nobody knew what he was thinking.

"Why aren't you eating, Yunfei? These dishes don't suit your taste?" Liu Meng's voice rang out. Bai Yunfei withdrew his eyes and looked at this young girl who was looking at him with a deeply concerned expression.

Somehow, he only made eye contact with her for a moment before looking away at the dishes on the table, saying while shaking his head slightly, "No, just now I was thinking about some things..."

"Are you still worried about the Long family? We spent the entire morning walking about on the streets, but didn't nothing happen? Don't think too much..." Liu Meng gave a smile then picked up a piece of fish maw and put it into Bai Yunfei's bowl, saying, "Quickly eat the meal, okay? You see, you haven't even eaten half of the food in your bowl."

Bai Yunfei nodded then slowly ate the meal, but anyone could tell that he was not paying attention to eating.

"Right, Yunfei, I've always wanted to ask you a question. Yesterday, when you fought those three men from the Long family... what weapon did you use? Why, why did it look like... look like a brick?" Liu Meng's curious voice rang out. It turned out she and Xiao Ning had already finished eating and were looking at Bai Yunfei with their chins resting on their hands. Apparently she had asked the question because she had suddenly remembered

something.

The chopsticks in Bai Yunfei's hand trembled slightly. A piece of vegetable he had picked up fell back to the tray. He withdrew his hand and put the chopsticks on the bowl. After hesitating for a while, he said, "Yeah, it was actually just a brick."

"What?" Liu Meng shouted softly. Her beautiful eyes opening wide, she looked at him with an expression of total disbelief, "How was this possible? Where did, where did you get such a... such a formidable brick? Could it be... it's a soul armament, right?"

"Yes, you can say so." Bai Yunfei lowered his head and answered softly.

"Really? That's so awesome! I've never heard about this kind of weapon. Besides, it... seems to be very special. Could it be you made it yourself? Could it be you're a disciple of the Crafting School?" Liu Meng asked in a crisp voice, her expression still full of curiosity.

Bai Yunfei kept silent for a while then said, "No... My master gave it to me. There's also that red spear. My master gave me both of them in the past..."

"Oh?" Liu Meng blinked, seeming to think of something, then said with smiling eyes, "Oh, I know it already. You master didn't allow you to talk about them, right? Um, then I won't ask about them anymore..."

"Actually..." Bai Yunfei frowned. Just when he wanted to say something, he was interrupted by a clamor.

"Mister, the second floor is really full. Please stay on the first floor for a bit..." A waiter's frustrated voice was heard, followed by a clatter of footsteps.

"I want a place next to a window on the second floor. So what if it's unavailable? Just tell those people to move away!"

Along with this arrogant voice, a youngster dressed completely in

black went upstairs. He looked around then unexpectedly pointed to the table where Bai Yunfei and the two girls were sitting, saying to the waiter who had gone upstairs with him, "I want that position. You go tell them to move away. I'll pick up their bill!"

While he was talking, his eyes unexpectedly brightened, staring at Liu Meng. After being entranced for a good few seconds, he laughed out loud all of a sudden.

"Ha ha!! Who would have thought I'd come across such a beautiful girl in this place?! Not bad, not bad, looks like I'm very lucky today!" While talking in an unbridled manner, this youngster lifted his feet and walked over there.

Liu Meng and Xiao Ning looked at this young man with shocked expressions, but Bai Yunfei frowned slightly. He cast a look at him and continued to keep his head lowered, looking at the meal on the table, his eyes glittering slightly.

"He he, young girl, are you willing to go for a stroll with me in the city? You see, the silent guy next to you, at first sight I already know that he's weak and powerless. Don't care about him anymore. Just go with me!" This young man's arrogance and directness were somewhat unbearable, but he said these words as if they were right and fair. It looked like he was normally accustomed to being this arrogant and, moreover, successful being arrogant.

For no reason, a feeling of agitation suddenly surged in Bai Yunfei's heart. Not even he himself knew why he was like this. In the blink of an eye, the agitation turned into fury, which clogged his mind, making it extremely unbearable for him.

He suddenly lifted his head. A rare hint of ruthlessness had unexpectedly shown up on his face, and he stared at this young man with an ice-cold expression.

"Get lost!"



## Chapter 70: In a Flash

---

Bai Yunfei suddenly lifted his head. A rare hint of ruthlessness had unexpectedly shown up on his face, and he stared at this young man with an ice-cold expression.

“Get lost!”

This sudden outburst of his stupefied the several people at the scene for a moment, especially Liu Meng and Xiao Ning, who had never seen him behave like this before. They both looked at him with their faces full of astonishment.

As for that black-clad young man, after looking at Bai Yunfei in stupefaction for a moment, he pointed at his own nose in some disbelief, asking, “You told me to get lost?”

Bai Yunfei cast a look at Liu Meng frowningly then stared at this young man, saying rather impatiently, “I don’t care where you’re from. I’m not in a very good mood at the moment so you’d better not provoke me!”

The black-clad young man stared at Bai Yunfei with eyes wide open for some time. Suddenly, his extreme anger seemed to turn into an urge to laugh and he pointed at Bai Yunfei, saying, “Ha ha! Not bad, not bad! You’re unexpectedly talking like this to your grandpa! You want to play the hero in front of women, huh? Humph! Don’t overestimate yourself!”

As he said so, he unexpectedly made a grab at Bai Yunfei’s collar without a warning sign! This man was really the type who had no regard for laws and ethical principles. After just a few words of conflict, he had immediately launched an attack.

Seeing that the opponent’s strike was actually full of power despite looking casual, Bai Yunfei’s pupils contracted slightly. He turned his body and threw a punch with his right fist in an instant, clashing with the opponent’s hand. A soft sound rang out as the

young man retreated two steps continuously. But the stool under Bai Yunfei also made creaking sounds, seemingly bearing an extremely heavy burden.

“Oh? Soul cultivator!” After stopping, the youngster exclaimed with an astounded expression. There was even a flash of ‘pleasant surprise’ in the look that he gave Bai Yunfei.

“Ha ha! Who would have thought you’re a soul cultivator?! Very good, very good. Your grandpa likes to trample on strong opponents the most!” After saying so, this man unexpectedly attacked Bai Yunfei again with a face full of excitement.

“Ridiculous!” Bai Yunfei was surprised to see the opponent charge up again. His eyes glittered with fury. In the blink of an eye he stood up, took a step forwards and threw a punch at the enemy’s face. That man’s eyes flashed with surprise. He suddenly made a jump while rushing up and landed on Bai Yunfei’s left-hand side like a wildcat. Curling his fingers into a claw, he unexpectedly made a grab straight at Bai Yunfei’s neck.

His fingernails were much longer than those of ordinary people and, furthermore, seemed to sparkle with a cold light. They cut across Bai Yunfei’s artery, but it was merely an afterimage. Bai Yunfei dashed half a step backwards then threw another punch, hitting the opponent in the right shoulder.

Although he did not use the Overlapping Waves Art, the force of this punch was still large enough to make the youngster move back involuntarily nonstop. Only after knocking over a table was he able to stop. Massaging his shoulder, he looked at Bai Yunfei with a totally astonished expression.

“Mid-stage Soul Warrior?!”

After this brief exchange, the two of them had found out each other’s power level. And they were both at the Mid-stage Soul Warrior level.

The other people on the second floor had already run away as soon as they had seen the two of them fight. At the moment, there were only four people left. Liu Meng and Xiao Ning had also retreated to one side and were looking at that young man in front of them with doubtful expressions.

“He he, not bad, not bad, who would have thought I’d make a misjudgement? I didn’t expect you to be a soul cultivator comparable to me in power.” The young man swung his right arm and was still as arrogant as before. He looked at Liu Meng, who was behind Bai Yunfei. His eyes rolling, he said laughingly, “Young girl, watch me beat this guy to a pulp. Then you should just follow me!”

After saying so, he stared at Bai Yunfei again. Retreating several steps, he said, “Humph, brat, don’t think just because you’re on the same power level as me you can fight me to a draw. Let me tell you something, I’m more powerful than you by Heaven knows how many times. I’ll let you have a taste of something soul cultivators from small schools like you can never obtain in your lives...”

He then raised his left hand, and with a forward flick of it, a huge gray silhouette appeared out of thin air in front of him without a warning sign.

Bai Yunfei was somewhat suspicious upon seeing the opponent retreat, but when he saw the real identity of this gray silhouette, his expression changed greatly all of a sudden. His eyes opened wide and his face was full of bafflement.

A huge gray wolf had appeared in front of the young man!!

Its body was about the size of a calf, its four limbs muscular and powerful. Its gray, needle-like hair covered its entire body and unexpectedly seemed to vaguely gleam. Its fangs were slightly bared, its body arched a little. One after another drop of saliva even came out of its mouth slowly. Its eyes were very red, but they

seemed totally soulless.

A ferocious aura hit Bai Yunfei in the face. He even took a step backwards involuntarily, astonishment and shock showing up in his eyes. This was the first time he had encountered this kind of situation so he simple did not know what was going on.

.....

On a large street several thousand meters away from this restaurant, a silvery-robed, long-haired young man was walking slowly thoughtfully. He was none other than Hong Yin.

As always, that white, little animal was lying prone on his right shoulder. At the moment, it seemed to be sleeping. Suddenly, its several long whiskers shook slightly. Then it opened its eyes. Unexpectedly those little rat eyes flashed with a trace of extremely human like amazement. After that, it straightened up its body and gave a couple of squeaks.

Feeling the little animal's strange behavior, Hong Yin immediately halted his steps. He inclined his head looking at it somewhat doubtfully and asked in a low voice, "What's wrong, Xiao Tang?"

Xiao Tang stood up like a human, seeming to be sensing something carefully. Several seconds later, it pointed to Hong Yin's left-hand side with its two little claws and squeaked a couple of times again.

Frowning slightly, Hong Yin turned to the direction it was pointing to and closed his eyes to sense things for several breaths' time. Suddenly he opened his eyes, which were glittering, "The aura of a Soulbeast! Plus, this feeling..."

Without finishing what he was saying, he frowned even more tightly. After considering for a moment, he turned and walked towards an alleyway. The moment he walked past a corner of this alleyway, he immediately disappeared!

People were still coming and going on the streets as usual. Nobody noticed that a living person had just disappeared into thin air...

.....

In the restaurant, seeing the astounded expression on Bai Yunfei's face, the black-clad youngster laughed out loud very complacently and said arrogantly, "What's up? You're dumbstruck? You have never seen this, right? Are you scared? Humph, we can suck soulbeasts into space rings. How can someone from a small school like you possibly understand my Beast Taming School's secret techniques?! Thunderwolf, go up for me!"

Following his order, that massive gray wolf suddenly made a pounce forwards and jumped up to Bai Yunfei's face almost in the blink of an eye with its mouth wide open. He could even smell the stench coming out from that basin-sized large mouth.

Bai Yunfei was greatly frightened. It was not like Bai Yunfei had not fought wolf packs when crossing the mountains earlier, but those ordinary wolves in the forest were just like kittens in front of a tiger compared to this wolf. Moreover, its speed was totally beyond Bai Yunfei's imagination. Right after he had seen its body move slightly, it had gone up to his face just about instantly!

Almost instinctively, Bai Yunfei swung to the left with a slide of his feet. The thunderwolf's blade-like sharp claw nearly scraped his ear. Taking steps continuously, he moved away half a meter in the blink of an eye, finally avoiding this attack.

However, when the thunderwolf's huge body went past him on one side, his expression changed greatly all of a sudden!

This was because Liu Meng was behind him!

In terror, Bai Yunfei had dodge instinctively, but he had forgotten this most important detail!

In the blink of an eye, Bai Yunfei's heart almost stopped beating.

He turned around fiercely and saw that the thunderwolf had already jumped up to the two girls!

Actually, there had been quite a long distance between Bai Yunfei and the two girls earlier. It would definitely have given him and that young man enough space to fight each other. However, who would have thought the young man would suddenly release such a soulbeast to attack the opponent?

And to the thunderwolf, this distance basically meant nothing!

Bai Yunfei wanted to shout a warning, but there was simply no time for this. His eyes almost crimson, he channeled his soulforce to the utmost, concentrating all of it into his legs. Then, using an unprecedented intensity, he controlled all the muscles, bones and acupoints he could control in legs and rushed towards Liu Meng at his fastest speed!

But this was not enough! Given his current position, it would be impossible for him to rush up to Liu Meng before the thunderwolf's attack arrived!

All this takes long to describe but happened quickly. When Bai Yunfei had just moved, he saw Liu Meng pull Xiao Ning, who was beside her, and avoid the attack by a hair's breadth with a shake of her body almost just a moment before the wolf's claw could smash into her!

Bai Yunfei's pupils contracted a bit. He dashed up to the side of Liu Meng, pushed her two more steps aside then raised his right fist and struck the thunderwolf, which had just landed, a fierce blow in the side of its body!

Bang! A loud sound rang out. The thunderwolf was sent flying several meters away directly by this punch, knocking over a table. Its claws were pressed tightly against the wooden floor, creating several long trails. In the end it stopped then unexpectedly sprung forwards again without delay!

Bai Yunfei's eyes glittered with fury. Instead of dodging, he even charged up with a shake of his body! The wolf's claw was swiped at him. Bai Yunfei felt obliquely to one side. The moment the wolf's head went past him, his falling body came to a halt. With a slight shake of his body, he stood firm again. Then, blue veins popping out of his right arm, he hit the thunderwolf fiercely in the stomach!

Ninefold Fist Force!

A dull sound was heard again, but it seemed to be also mixed with an almost inaudible sound of tearing cloth. The thunderwolf's massive body was sent flying away instantly at an angle and it happened to fly in the direction of that black-clad young man, who was standing in front of Bai Yunfei!

At first that young man had been watching the fight between a man and a wolf with great interest. But in less than a minute, he saw his own soulbeast get knocked back by the opponent with a punch. Very frightened, he hurriedly dodged aside.

The thunderwolf did a roll in mid-air then fell firmly to the floor again. Despite having taken a Ninefold Fist Force strike, it did not seem to be affected at all, or perhaps, it did not seem to be aware of the injuries its body had suffered. Giving a growl, it charged towards Bai Yunfei again.

With a solemn expression, Bai Yunfei reached out his right hand. The Fire-tipped Spear appeared in his hand. He wanted to rush up again to engage the enemy.

However, when he had just taken half a step, he stopped all of a sudden because a man had appeared between him and the thunderwolf!

There had been no warning sign. Nobody at the scene knew how this man had appeared. It seemed in the blink of an eye, there was one more person on this second floor out of thin air.

This was none other than Hong Yin!



# Chapter 71: First Meeting With Hong Yin

---

After his appearance, Hong Yin did not look at anyone at the scene. Instead, he looked at the thunderwolf, which was rushing towards him, with a solemn expression.

His eyes flashed with a hint of grief. With a wave of his right hand, he touched the wolf's head in an apparently gentle manner. After that, the huge wolf, which was jumping at him, unexpectedly stopped in mid-air as if it had been swept up by an invisible, gentle force!

Hong Yin pressed his right arm down bit by bit. The thunderwolf's body then landed on the floor slowly as if he put it down. Even though this thunderwolf had been confined by him, it was still growling in a low tone, wanting to struggle with and attack him. When he looked at it, the grief in his eyes intensified.

Temporarily, the second floor of the restaurant was plunged into a strange quietness with the thunderwolf's low-toned growls being the only sounds left.

Seeing the situation in front of him, the black-clad young man suddenly woke up with a start, his face full of disbelief. He even backed off two steps subconsciously and pointed at Hong Yin, saying: "You, who are you?!"

It would have been better for him if he had kept silence, because these words seemed to call Hong Yin's attention to him. Hong Yin, who originally was looking at the thunderwolf with his head lowered, suddenly raised his head and looked at him. The look in his eyes was as sharp as a knife. In the eyes of the young man, he seemed to see an image of a huge blood-red wolf show up behind Hong Yin. A suffocating, savage aura then hit him in the face.

"You're from the Beast Taming School?" Hong Yin asked coldly while staring at the opponent.

These words woke the young man up with a start. The illusion before him disappeared. His entire body immediately loosened up and he unexpectedly felt that he was fortunate to have just escaped death. Retreating continuously again, he asked rapidly, “I, I am Li Long, the son of an elder from the Beast Taming School! My school is one of the top ten schools in the world. My junior uncle is around here! You, you can’t hurt me! Or else the Beast Taming School won’t let you off!”

One could tell that he was really flustered at the moment. Without using that arrogant attitude from earlier, he had hurriedly revealed his own identity and even mentioned the name of one of the ten great schools in the world in the hope that he would be able to scare the opponent.

After Hong Yin had heard these words, his pupils contracted slightly, a tinge of killing intent flashing a cross his eyes. With just one step, he went up to Li Long’s face.

Yes, just one step. Bai Yunfei saw very clearly that he only took one step forwards and when his foot landed, he had already gone up to Li Long, who had been several meters away from him.

Bai Yunfei was astonished in his heart. He cast a look at that seemingly immobile thunderwolf at the scene then with a solemn expression, he moved backwards a bit. Anybody could tell that this man, who had just appeared all of a sudden, was extremely powerful. However, it seemed his target was not Bai Yunfei at all so now the best response was to wait and see.

Hong Yin reached out his right hand and caught hold of the opponent’s left wrist with a grab. His eyes flashed with ferocity as a crisp crack rang out. Obviously he had crushed some bones in the opponent’s arm!

“Ah!!!”

A sad and shrill cry came out from Li Long’s mouth. He wanted to reach out his right hand to push the opponent away but his whole

body did not listen to his mind. He could not move it at all. The bone-piercing pain coming from his left arm almost made him pass out.

With a cold snort, Hong Yin gave the opponent's fingers a stroke using his left hand. The black ring on the middle finger of Li Long's left hand was immediately taken by him.

Then, he casually made a throw, sending Li Long flying several meters away. After falling to the floor, Li Long seemed to finally regain his ability to move and he held his left wrist while wailing nonstop.

Not even bothering giving him a look, Hong Yin put the ring on his left hand and walked up to the side of that thunderwolf. Grief once again showing up in his eyes, he gently stroked its back. That huge wolf then disappeared into thin air, having been sucked into the space ring.

After regaining his composure, he stared at Li Long, who was struggling up from the floor, with an ice-cold expression, saying coldly, "Get lost! Tell your so-called junior uncle that I'll be waiting for him in this Jade Willow City!"

Enduring the acute pain in his left arm with effort, Li Long looked at the ring on the opponent's hand and said in shock, "You..."

"Get lost!"

When Li Long's eyes came into contact with Hong Yin's eyes, which seemed to contain a killing intent he was doing his utmost to suppress, his whole body trembled. Not daring to say anything again either, he staggered downstairs then disappeared.

Bai Yunfei looked at Hong Yin, who was staring at the ring on his finger in a seemingly somewhat preoccupied manner, his eyes flashing a bit. He then moved backwards slowly and, at the same time, put his left hand behind his back and waved to the two girls,

motioning for them to get ready to leave.

However, when he had just taken three steps, Hong Yin, who was pondering with his head lowered, straightened up and looked at him. There was unexpectedly a friendly smile on his face. He nodded slightly to him and said, “You don’t have to be so cautious, little brother. I’ve got no bad intentions...”

Bai Yunfei stopped. Holding the Fire-tipped Spear tightly in his hand, he adopted a defensive posture and stared at the opponent for several seconds, saying in a deep voice, “You must have come here for Li Long. But he’s already left and we are merely tourists who just now had some conflict with him. Speaking of which, we still have to thank you very much for getting into action to help us. Today we’ve still got something to do so we’ll take our leave now.”

After saying so, he put away the Fire-tipped Spear directly then gave the two girls a hint with his eyes, ready to turn around and leave.

“Wait a minute, little brother. I’ve got some words to tell you.”

Bai Yunfei halted his steps and turned around, asking doubtfully, “You know me?”

“Ha ha, we don’t know each other at all. But I know some things related to you. Are you willing to have a brief chat with me?” Hong Yin still said smilingly.

Bai Yunfei was somewhat hesitant. This man was too powerful for him to deal with but he was talking with him so politely. This was already enough to show his sincerity and, moreover, he could not see any malice in his eyes. It seemed he was really interested in being friends with him.

After considering for a while, Bai Yunfei nodded slightly.

Hong Yin laughed then, without saying anything, turned around and walked downstairs. Bai Yunfei and the two girls also went with him. After casually tossing a gold coin to the manager to pay for

the damages, they walked out of this restaurant immediately.

Hong Yin looked at the two girls behind Bai Yunfei and frowned slightly. Bai Yunfei understood what he meant so he turned around and said to Liu Meng, “Meng’er, you and Xiao Ning just wait here for a while, I’ll be back very soon.”

Liu Meng nodded with a seemingly somewhat worried expression, saying softly, “Mm, be careful, Yunfei. I’ll be waiting for you here...”

.....

Bai Yunfei followed Hong Yin into a nearby empty alleyway. The latter looked around then halted his steps, turned to Bai Yunfei, nodded slightly and said, “What’s your name, little brother?”

“Bai Yunfei.”

“Mm, my name is Hong Yin.” After introducing his name, Hong Yin inclined his head to look at Xiao Tang on his shoulder, saying smilingly, “This is my friend, Xiao Tang. Don’t think that he’s just an ordinary little rat. He’s a very formidable soulbeast.”

Slightly startled, Bai Yunfei looked at this ‘little rat’ rather doubtfully. However, now was not the time to be curious so he folded his hands to Hong Yin, saying, “What do you want to tell me when calling me to this place?”

“Ha ha, looks like you’re doubting me somewhat. I can tell you that I want to get to know you a bit just because I know the relationship between you and the Fate School.” Hong Yin first revealed why he had looked for him instead of answering his question right away.

Bai Yunfei was surprised, “You’re from the Fate School?”

“No, there’s no connection between me and the Fate School, but two days ago I had a discussion with senior Qin Zheng of the Fate School, um, he’s the senior who looked for you that night.”

Bai Yunfei fell silent, seeming to be arguing with himself in his mind. Hong Yin did not disturb him and waited for him patiently. A while later, Bai Yunfei raised his head again and asked with a much less cautious expression, "Then what do you want to tell me, brother Hong Yin?"

Hong Yin said laughingly, "I discovered some matters, and I feel that I should tell you about them. You..."

.....

Liu Meng and Xiao Ning were standing in front of a market stall that sold baubles next to the restaurant. Xiao Ning was looking at the various little things on the stall with a curious expression, but Liu Meng was glancing at that alleyway where Bai Yunfei and Hong Yin had gone into in a somewhat preoccupied manner.

Suddenly, her eyes brightened as she saw Bai Yunfei walk out from the alleyway and go towards her. With a happy expression, she pulled Xiao Ning and went up to meet him.

"How are you, Yunfei? Who is that man?" Liu Meng asked while looking at Bai Yunfei in a concerned manner.

"Oh, I'm okay. Don't worry..." Bai Yunfei shook his head, but did not go on to answer her question. Instead, seeming to suddenly remember something, he asked, "Right, Meng'er, earlier you wanted to tell me something, what is it?"

"Oh? This..." Liu Meng did not expect Bai Yunfei to ask this question all of a sudden so after being startled for a moment, she lowered her head slightly, her face gradually reddening. Only after a long time did she say in a tiny voice, "It's, it's that... my father is about to return to Jade Willow City. I want, I want you to go and see him..."

"What?!" Bai Yunfei was stupefied and asked in astonishment, thinking that he had heard it wrong.

Liu Meng lowered her head without saying a word. Her beautiful

hair glided over her shoulders, covering her face, making it impossible to see her expression clearly.

On one side, Xiao Ning cut in, saying, “Mister Yunfei, this is what happened. Yesterday someone from the family found the young lady and told her that master already knows she’s in Jade Willow City and is very angry that she still hasn’t returned home in such a long time so he’s personally set out on a trip, rushing over here. He should arrive in the afternoon today. It’s possible young lady will be taken home. So... she wants you to go and have a meeting with master. Since you’re already a Soul Warrior at such a young age, you’ll definitely have great achievements in the future. Maybe after seeing you, master will... will agree to let her be with you.”

“This...” There was a complicated expression on Bai Yunfei’s face. It seemed he was at a loss as to what to do because of this sudden information.

At this moment, seeming to have finally mustered up enough courage, Liu Meng lifted her beautiful face and stared at Bai Yunfei, saying gently, “Yunfei, when my father arrives, he’ll definitely tell me to go home and keep watch beside Zhang Yang’s coffin... Could you go and see him with me? This means, this means we’ll go together. I think... I think he’ll agree.”

Bai Yunfei looked at Liu Meng in stupefaction. Just when she became anxious inwardly thinking that he would not agree to do this, Bai Yunfei’s slightly quivering voice came into her ears.

“Alright, tonight... And when?”

Liu Meng raised her head and said with a happy expression, “Um, I don’t know exactly when he’ll arrive either. Xiao Ning and I will go and meet him first then... I’ll talk with him a bit before telling Xiao Ning to go and take you there. Is this okay?”

Bai Yunfei fell silent for a short while then said with a nod, “Alright, then I’ll be waiting for your message in the tavern.”

“Mm! Then I’ll leave first, Yunfei. You should go back and prepare a bit. I think my father will definitely approve of you...”

After watching the two girls’ silhouettes disappear in the crowd, Bai Yunfei turned around with a complicated expression then disappeared on the other side of the street.



## Chapter 72: See Through It

---

Bai Yunfei walked back to the tavern in a trance. After he got into his room and slammed the door shut, there was not any sound of movement.

Two hours later, he walked out of the room again. There was no happiness on his face. He just walked on the streets with his eyebrows slightly wrinkled. After walking seemingly aimlessly on the streets for half an hour, he dashed into an alleyway and disappeared.

About another hour later, he returned to the tavern and shut himself in his room.

At around six o'clock in the afternoon, knocks on the door awakened Bai Yunfei, who was sitting on the bed practicing breathing. Xiao Ning's questioning voice then came in from outside the door.

Bai Yunfei opened the door, have a few words with her then walked out of the tavern with her.

.....

Because today was a cloudy day, it was already somewhat dark at the moment and there were much fewer people walking on the streets as well. Bai Yunfei could feel a slight chill in the clear wind that blew into his face.

Before long, he had followed Xiao Ning into a restaurant on the west street. After going up the second floor and pushing open the door of a room, he saw Liu Meng sitting inside and a pudgy, middle-aged man about forty years old next to her.

Seeing Bai Yunfei enter the room, Liu Meng had a very happy expression. She stood up, walked up to his side and said to the middle-aged man, "Father, this is Yunfei. He's a soul cultivator of the mid-stage Soul Warrior level!"

After saying so, she pulled his hand gently, leading him to the table and making him sit down, then said, "Yunfei, this is my father, Liu Yan."

Bai Yunfei looked at the middle-aged man, who was sizing him up, and nodded slightly, saying rather respectfully, "Uncle Liu."

Liu Yan withdrew his eyes and said with a slight nod, "Mm, not bad, though you don't appear to be outstanding, you seem to be a calm and careful person. This is something very hard to come by."

After saying these superficial words, he stopped, gave Liu Meng beside him a look then told Xiao Ning on one side, "Bring all the dishes out together. I've been rushing all the way over here so I'm a bit hungry."

Xiao Ning gave a sound of agreement. The room then fell into awkward silence.

Bai Yunfei lowered his head, seeming not to know what to say. Liu Yan lowered his head too, seeming to be resting because he was really somewhat tired as he had said.

On one side, Liu Meng appeared to be rather anxious. In order to ease the atmosphere, she had no choice but to ask Liu Yan about his business. Bai Yunfei did not understand these matters so he could only listen to them talk about things like the goods and increases in price in a certain city or making a loss because a certain batch of goods had not arrived on time.

A while later, as the dishes began to be brought out successively, the topic of conversation between the two of them gradually shifted to Liu Meng's mother. Liu Meng also said a few words to Bai Yunfei occasionally, wanting to let him take part in the conversation, but he seemed unwilling to talk much and only gave vague answers.

"Right, Yunfei, it seems you've never talked about your family. Where's your family? Why have you never mentioned your

parents?” Seeing that he looked a little lost, Liu Meng asked.

Bai Yunfei fell silent for some time then replied, “I was an orphan. I started to follow my master when I was little.”

“Oh... I see.” Liu Meng seemed to know that she had mentioned a sad event in Bai Yunfei’s life so she immediately changed the topic of conversation, “No wonder you’re so formidable. It turns out you started to study under your master when you were little. It must have been very exhausting, right? You’re really determined.”

“Humph, reaching the mid-stage Soul Warrior level at the age of eighteen, you’re indeed a little more talented than ordinary soul cultivators. But that’s about it...” Hearing Liu Meng praise Bai Yunfei, Liu Yan frowned and said somewhat disapprovingly.

“Father, how could you say that?” Liu Meng seemed to be rather worried, “The level of soulforce isn’t the only thing Yunfei has. He...”

“You want to mention those special soul armaments or something of his again?” Liu Yan interrupted her, saying frowningly, “I’m not a soul cultivator, but I’ve been in contact with the Zhangs of the Glacial School in recent years and gained lots of knowledge. There ain’t no such special soul armaments. Don’t make up those ridiculous so-called special soul armaments on purpose to elevate his status!”

“That’s not true, father. Yunfei really has...”

“So what if he has them? They were merely given to him by his master!” Liu Yan interrupted Liu Yan once again.

“Just stop talking already... I beg you, stop talking...” Bai Yunfei drooped his head. Although his expression was calm, he was ‘begging’ nonstop in his mind.

“How come? Yunfei’s master made them. As his disciple, Yunfei definitely also...” Liu Meng’s voice rang out. It sounded like she was ‘pleading’ to defend him, but in Bai Yunfei’s heart, those

words turned into thousands of needles that pierced into the depths of his heart.

“Yunfei, actually... You also know how to make those soul armaments, right?” Liu Meng held his right hand using her soft, seemingly boneless jade-like hand and asked gently while looking at him in a totally expectant manner.

Bai Yunfei closed his eyes in silence, feeling a trace of warmth coming from his hand. This ‘warmth’, which should be sweet and make him feel happy, turned into a bone-piercing chill after entering his heart, freezing it...

He then raised his head. Upon making contact with her hopeful eyes, his pupils shrunk a bit, but he did not answer her question. Instead, he asked calmly, “Meng’er, do you remember the day when you were kidnapped by the Long family’s men? That time, it was you who told Long Taogu my name, right?”

“Oh? Yunfei, why do you suddenly ask this question?” Liu Meng was startled then said casually, “That day, I was caught by them. In my anxiety, I mentioned your name, saying that you’d come to rescue me... Could it be you’re angry about this?”

Bai Yunfei smiled and shook his head slightly. He then lifted his head and said to Liu Yan sitting in front of him, “Uncle, it’s Meng’er’s birthday in a few days. Could you allow me to accompany her until after her birthday before you take her home?”

“What?” Liu Yan seemed to be dumbstruck by this sudden question of his and cast a somewhat doubtful look at Liu Meng. After thinking for a bit, he said frowningly, “How is this possible? I already promised her mother that I’d take her home. Besides...”

“Ha, ha ha, ha ha ha...” Bai Yunfei’s chuckles interrupted his words. Then the chuckles slowly changed, turning into jeering laughs which were full of satire.

Bai Yunfei still kept his head lowered. His shoulders was shaking nonstop and his laughter contained a profound sadness.

Liu Meng's hand suddenly felt empty. That tinge of tenderness had pulled away. She stood up, took two steps backwards and looked at Bai Yunfei with a complicated expression, saying hesitantly, "You... You've already found out?"

Bai Yunfei stopped his laughter, lifted his head and stared at her with a vague smile, "I've found out what?"

"You mean I've found out this man isn't your father, or this meal is actually a trap, or you approached me earlier only to fool me?"

Bai Yunfei said without waiting for Liu Meng to answer his first question. These words made her expression change greatly.

# Chapter 73: What Should Be Said Has Been Said

---

Liu Meng looked astonished. It seemed she still wanted to say something, but when she met his vaguely smiling eyes, she fell silent all of a sudden then slowly walked back to the side of the table and sat down. Looking at Bai Yunfei with a complicated expression, she said softly, “You... When did you find out?”

“Is this really important?” The corners of Bai Yunfei’s mouth twitched. He shook his head gently then said slowly, seeming to talk to himself but also to give Liu Meng an explanation.

“In fact, it was an abnormal development right from the beginning, wasn’t it? A young lady from a wealthy family, and even a soul cultivator at that, how could she have such an attitude towards an ordinary guy who had helped her for the first time...?”

“But I still believed you. Was it because of that hidden tinge of appreciation or adoration in my heart at the time? I don’t know the answer either. It’s also possible that your ‘excuses’ made me ignore the doubts I had in the beginning...”

“When you were taken ill that time, it was definitely real. The only difference was that it wasn’t accidental. Instead, you used a certain method capable of causing this illness to act up. So, the encounter in the beginning was flawless. The next day, what you told me on Mt. Spring was also half-truths, right? This kind of lying is capable of fooling people the most...”

“I had no doubts at all about what happened during those two days. You let Long Tao and his brother come to trouble me for the second time for initial inspection of me, right? At the same time, it was also to foreshadow what would happen later. Just two days of strolling about made that tiny seed in my heart sprout and grow up. My heart was slowly filled with your image... Ha ha, wasn’t my affection very cheap?”

“According to your plan, it should have slowly developed, right? At least it would have gone on for ten days to half a month to let the ‘affection’ between us build up slowly and develop as ‘naturally’ as possible. Only then would you be able to fool me into giving you the information you want.

“But something you hadn’t expected happened on the second day, that is, I accidentally ran into Qiu Luliu of the Green Willow School again! In the morning that day, actually you had arrived, right? You saw that she and I were talking with each other so you didn’t show yourself. Only after she left did you appear...

“In the morning of the third day, you suddenly come to look for me. It was because you wanted to check up on my situation, wasn’t it? But you unexpectedly discover that bracelet of mine. You said you liked it, so I gave it to you even though it’s related to my secret... After that, when you heard Qiu Luliu would arrive in a while, your attitude changed suddenly. You left right away. At the time I thought you were ‘jealous’, but in fact you were afraid she would recognize you if you ran into her. After all, given your identity, it’s very possible that the two of you had met each other earlier...

“After I went to the Green Willow School, you discovered that it might not be possible to ‘do it slowly’ according to your original plan. So, you carried out that ‘kidnap’ event ahead of schedule, letting the Long family’s men show up again. You took a step further in testing me and at the same time ‘deepened’ the affection between us. Ha ha, rescue romance, such a good scene to elevate the affection between two people!

But it was only because of this staged event that I noticed abnormal things and started to be suspicious!” Bai Yunfei raised his head to give Liu Meng a look then continued with a chuckle, “Do you remember the first line Long Taogu said when seeing me? He said ‘are you that Bai Yunfei mentioned by this girl?’ He knew my name. You said you told him my name...

“But when did I ever tell you that my surname is Bai?” Bai Yunfei’s gentle question made Liu Meng’s doubtful expression change into one of astonishment then of disappointment.

Not caring about the changes in her expression, he continued to say, “Speaking of which, this was all because when we met for the first time, to develop a close relationship between us, you told me to call you so intimately ‘Meng’er’ directly, so when you asked for my name, I told you to just call me Yunfei. Later on, I seemed to never mention that Yunfei is just my given name, and my surname is Bai, right?”

“Of course, perhaps you’ll say that in fact you only told them I’m called Yunfei, but somehow they knew my surname and there’s something fishy about the Long family’s men. Actually when I came up with this idea, I consoled myself like that too. But it’s still unreasonable... In the beginning, we became enemies with Long Tao [the younger brother] because he lust for your beauty, but on the day you were kidnapped you were completely unharmed even though it took me two hours to arrive... At the time I only felt that you were lucky, but when thinking about this later, I found it so illogical. Plus, when Long Taogu and two others fought me, they unexpectedly didn’t use weapons! This was because they were afraid that they’d accidentally kill or seriously injured me when surrounding and attacking me, making it look obviously unnatural to ‘let me go’ in the end, right?”

“Later, your attitude towards me changed considerably as well. I should have felt happy about this, but as soon as I thought of the illogical things, I just couldn’t calm myself down. So using tiredness as the reason, I returned to my room and pondered hard for an entire night. I was unwilling to believe my own guess. I was unwilling to believe that everything was fake...”

“However, a discovery during that incident at noon today shattered my desperate hope completely!”

“Speaking of which, I still need to thank that unruly guy from



the Beast Taming School. Previously I thought it was also staged by you, but this was not the case. It was none other than his arrogant attacks that allowed me to see your flaws!

“Do you remember the first attack from that huge wolf? Because I had never encountered this kind of situation before, I was pretty flustered at the time. Faced with it’s first attack, I chose to dodge, forgetting that you were still behind me. Fortunately, you dodged too, avoiding the wolf’s claw at the last moment. That moment, I felt extremely happy for you... But I also noticed that you had made a dash using a soul skill! Faced with a sudden danger, you subconsciously used a body-maneuvering soul skill! And that technique was exactly the same as the one used by Zhang Zhenshan when fighting me!

“What does this imply? It implies that you’re related to the Glacial School! But this is totally inconsistent with the identity you told me earlier! You said earlier that you had been taught by an expert and had been focusing on cultivation ever since so you were almost unable to fight and hadn’t learned any soul skill... This point alone is enough to prove that you’ve basically been lying!!

“Afterwards, you suggested that I go to see your father... Ha ha, wasn’t this development too sudden? But you still told it to me, wanting to carry out the last investigation and experiment...

“I knew it, but I still came here. Though everything that happened today was so unnatural, I still hoped unreasonably that they were just my illusions... But after I arrived, I found that this place was still full of contrivances, sudden dialogs, sudden topics of conversation...

“In fact, you have also guessed that I already started to be suspicious, right? But you still did this. Were you taking a gamble? A gamble that my affection for you was deep enough, a gamble that I was silly enough, a gamble that my affection for you would be able to cloud my vision??

“In your eyes, since the beginning I’ve been just a fool who was entranced by you to the point I could no longer handle myself, right?”

Bai Yunfei had talked so much continuously, almost giving her no chance to interrupt him. Now he seemed to be finished and also to be tired from talking. He raised his head to look at Liu Meng, whose face had been filled with astonishment all along in front of him, chuckled in self-derision for a bit and shook his head. Then he looked at ‘Liu Yan’ on one side, who appeared to be somewhat at a loss, and showed a hint of disdain on the corners of his mouth, “This man is just someone you found in a hurry to help you with the acting...

“As for your identity, the engagement between you and Zhang Yang should have been real, and Zhang Yang was the son of an elder in the Glacial School. You once said that this school still has another elder called Liu Cheng... Then, you should be his daughter, right?”

After saying so, he turned around to look at the door’s room, which had been closed all the time, saying, “Should I thank you for waiting patiently until I have finished talking so much instead of interrupting me ahead of schedule... ‘Uncle Liu’?”

There was silence outside the door for some time. Then the door was pushed open and a middle-aged man with a solemn expression and two subordinates walked in. There seemed to be even many more people guarding outside.

This man was naturally Liu Cheng. After entering the room, he stood at the door and looked at Bai Yunfei, saying in a cold voice, “Humph! You’ve got some brains, but so what? Since you were stupid enough to come here alone, could it be you still think you can run away?”

“Oh, because your scheme has failed so you’ve finally decided to use force, right, elder Liu? You’ve exhausted all your efforts only

because of the Glacial Piercer Zhang Zhenshan brought back, right? You guys think if you capture me, you'll be able to know its secret?" Bai Yunfei slightly squinted, seeming to be totally unfazed by the current situation.

His unhurried attitude made Liu Cheng frown slightly. In the current situation, even though his scheme had been defeated, he was still at an obvious advantage, but why was the opponent so unperturbed?

Liu Cheng cast a look at Liu Meng, saying, "Meng'er, just get out of here. You've already done what you should have done. From now on, you don't need to care about this anymore."

"Father, you said..."

The expression on Liu Meng's face seemed rather complicated. Disappointed? Guilty? Dumbfounded? The corners of his mouth twitching, Bai Yunfei shook his head gently.

"I know how far I should go. You leave first!" Liu Cheng berated, his expression turning cold.

Liu Meng's whole body trembled slightly. Without saying a word, she stood up, took another look at Bai Yunfei, gave an almost inaudible sigh then walked out slowly.

Bai Yunfei watched her leave with an indifferent look in his eyes, but his heart was in agony. The moment she walked out of the door, her image gradually walked out of his heart as well, carrying with it that budding, naïve love...

Withdrawing his eyes, he took a breath softly and exhaled slowly. The expression in his eyes became resolute and ice-cold. Casting a glance at Liu Cheng and the two men beside him, he reached out his right hand. The Fire-tipped Spear appeared in his hand. He channeled his soulforce and a heat wave filled the room instantly.

"What should be said, has been said. Now..."

"Let's fight!!"

## Chapter 74: One Against Two

---

With a shake of the Fire-tipped Spear, Bai Yunfei attacked Liu Cheng without a warning sign!

Liu Cheng's pupils contracted slightly. His eyes flashed with a trace of amazement. He had not expected Bai Yunfei, who just then had still been talking in an indifferent tone, to take the initiative and attack.

Curling the corners of his mouth showing a hint of disdain, Liu Cheng moved his feet slightly, making a slide obliquely backwards. At the same time, he instructed, "Catch him. Be careful not to kill him."

In fact, there was no need for him to say this, because those two men beside him had already got into action. They rushed up simultaneously, one making a grab straight at Bai Yunfei's right hand, which was holding the spear, and the other throwing a punch towards his heart area.

Judging from Liu Cheng's behavior, he unexpectedly did not think getting into action himself was worth doing. Instead, he wanted to let his two subordinates to capture Bai Yunfei!

Bai Yunfei's eyes focused. With a twist of his right hand, he turned to the left and at the same time made a horizontal sweep with the Fire-tipped Spear. The man on the left hurriedly put up his arms to ward off the horizontally oncoming spear handle, but he was swept aside by the huge force of impact.

"Bang!" A dull sound rang out as Bai Yunfei's back was hit squarely by a punch. However, he only staggered slightly half a step then raised his right foot throwing a kick at the attacker. That man overlapped his hands making a downward block and was also forced back slightly half a step.

Both of them were mid-stage Soul Warriors!

The look in Bai Yunfei's eyes became solemn. Using the Wave Treading Steps, he charged towards the man on the left with a shake of his body and thrust the Fire-tipped Spear out at the opponent's heart. But as soon as he moved, the man behind him also took a step and went after him closely.

When the man in front of him had just dodged, Bai Yunfei halted his body a bit abruptly. Then he took intertwined steps with his feet as if tying a knot and after creating two vague afterimages, he unexpectedly stopped while rushing at high speed and turned around to face the other direction!

The Fire-tipped Spear, which had already been withdrawn as he had turned around, was now thrust out fiercely again at the man who was chasing him from behind!

The expression of that man, who was pursuing and attacking Bai Yunfei, changed greatly. In terror, he turned his body to the left hastily. The Fire-tipped Spear grazed his chest. Before he could rejoice over this, he felt his right waist hit by a large force. It had been hit by a kick from Bai Yunfei. With a painful groan, he was sent flying.

Just when Bai Yunfei wanted to pursue and attack this man, he heard wind sounds coming from behind. It turned out the other man had made a leap and, with his right foot in front of him, was attacking his head.

Bai Yunfei threw a glance and moved his feet a bit. At the same time, he lifted the Fire-tipped Spear up horizontally. This kick hit the spear's handle, forcing him to take half a step backwards. The opponent's other foot then kicked out right away towards his heart.

The muscles of his arms bulging out, he made a push with force. The moment the opponent was pushed away, seeing that it was impossible to attack Bai Yunfei again, he stepped on the spear's handle again at the last moment and made use of the force of Bai

Yunfei's push to flip backwards.

Bai Yunfei was also forced to take another step backwards by that final stamp. At the same time, his body shook slightly. Before he could stand firmly, he felt a pain in his right waist. It turned out the man who had been kicked away by him earlier was attacking him again and had just retaliated by hitting him in the waist with a roundhouse kick.

Bai Yunfei took two steps obliquely to the left. At the same time, he swung his spear out horizontally, forcing back that man, who wanted to pursue and attack him. But he saw the enemy on the other side charge at him with a dash again.

Taking a look around, he saw that table, which was full of dishes, happen to be on one side. His eyes flashing, he retreated another two steps instantly then threw a powerful kick. A clatter of dishes was heard as bowls and plates were sent flying everywhere. That large table had been flipped over by his kick and sent flying towards that attacking man on the left.

That man had already rushed up to a place about four or five meters away from Bai Yunfei. Now that the round table was flying towards him, it was already too late for him to dodge. His pupils contracting slightly, he suddenly pushed his palms out, wanting to shove the table back.

“Careful!” As soon as his hands came into contact with the table's surface, he heard a warning from his comrade. Very frightened, he had no time to think carefully and resolutely abandoned his ongoing movement. Exerting the power of his legs fiercely, he stopped his body's forward charge. When he had just backed off, a soft sound suddenly came out from the round table in front of him. Then a flaming-red spear tip pierced through it, thrusting straight at his chest!

This man had a terrified expression. He had not expected Bai Yunfei to be so fast that he could still chase up and attack him in a

flash after kicking the table away. If not for his comrade's warning, he would have been hit by the spear!

Staring that the spear tip that was always at his heels, this man hurriedly retreated. Only when he had moved back more than two meters did the spear tip finally stop.

Bai Yunfei rushed up to the round table, which was being held in a vertical position. The Fire-tipped Spear in his hand had pierced through it almost up to the hilt. Without slowing down, he threw another kick at the table, sending it flying forwards at an increased speed. Then he pulled the Fire-tipped Spear back and forced the man who was pursuing him from behind to retreat with a horizontal sweep. At the same time, he used the Wave Treading Steps and chased after that flying table.

The previous man was retreating nonstop. When he was just about to let out a sigh of relief, he was surprised to see that table flying towards him again. His eyes flashing, he naturally would not ward it off in the same way as before. With a fierce stamp of his feet, his body shot obliquely to one side.

When he had just dashed out of the area threatened by this table, he saw a flaming-red spear tip yet again!

His eyes filled with shock, he could only do a flip at the last moment then lay down without hesitating to give up his balance, avoiding this spear strike by a hair's breadth. However, although he had evaded this spear thrust, he was unable to dodge the follow-up attack!

Bai Yunfei was extremely fast. Even though his spear thrust had missed, the opponent had also lost his balance. When the spear went past the opponent, he also rushed up to his face and threw a kick at his waist without hesitation. A painful groan was heard and that man was immediately sent flying several meters away violently like a bullet before slamming into a wall with a bang.

Bai Yunfei did not continue to chase and attack him because

another attack was coming at him from behind. He fell to the left, avoiding this punch, which had been aimed at the back of his head. When he was about to hit the floor, he took continuous steps and moved back rapidly at an angle. When he passed the opponent, his body sprung up. As soon as he stood upright again, the opponent threw another punch at his chest. Bai Yunfei's eyes flashing, the Fire-tipped Spear disappeared with a movement of his right arm. He unexpectedly did not try to dodge the attack. The moment he took this punch head-on, he also struck a blow with his right fist!

Ninefold Fist Force!

“Bang!”

“Bang!”

Two dull sounds rang out almost simultaneously. Bai Yunfei retreated several steps continuously but the opponent was sent flying upside down spouting blood!

Without pausing, Bai Yunfei gave a cold snort and immediately pursued and attacked him. The opponent had just been dealt a heavy blow. Right after he fell to the floor, before he could take a breath, he saw Bai Yunfei coming at him again. Terrified, he resisted in a carelessly hurried manner. When he was about to be defeated, the other man finally attacked Bai Yunfei again.

Instead of taking the Fire-tipped Spear out, Bai Yunfei engaged in a dogfight with these two men using his fists and feet.

Sounds of crashing rang out nonstop. Relying on the Goldsilk Soul Armor's defense and the Wave Treading Steps' artfulness, Bai Yunfei seemed to still be able to deal with his two opponents' joint effort easily. Of course, this also actually had to do with them not daring to mortally injure him.

He threw a kick, colliding with a kick from the man on the right. Both of them retreated half a step, but the man on Bai Yunfei's right-hand side grabbed this slight opportunity and threw a punch



at the back of his head.

Bai Yunfei leaned his body to the right a bit. This punch landed on his left shoulder. He staggered half a step but his right waist was hit again by a roundhouse kick.

However, the moment he was kicked in the right waist, his eyes flashed with a hint of shrewdness. Making use of the force of this kick, he took a fierce foot stamp and leaped out towards the left. Then he sped up sharply all of a sudden, creating a string of afterimages, rushing straight forwards.

Unexpectedly, he was rushing in the direction of Liu Cheng!

Liu Cheng had been standing there watching the fight all along. As an elder of the Glacial School and a soul cultivator of the mid-stage Soul Sprite level, he disdained to personally deal with this junior of the Soul Warrior level. However, seeing that the combined effort of his two disciples had been unable to take down the opponent for so long, he had already become somewhat impatient. Just when he was considering whether to personally get into action to settle this battle faster, he saw Bai Yunfei charging at him.

“Don’t overestimate your power! You’re bringing about your own death!” Liu Cheng gave a cold snort in his mind. Even though he was not allowed to kill Bai Yunfei, it was still possible for him to seriously injure him!

Bai Yunfei was extremely fast. He rushed up to Liu Cheng’s face almost in the blink of an eye. But this meant nothing at all to Liu Cheng. By the time Bai Yunfei closed in on him, he had already raised his right arm. With cold air rotating around his palm, he threw a palm strike at Bai Yunfei.

Glacial Palm!

“Bang!”

Nothing unexpected happened. Bai Yunfei was hit squarely in the

chest by this palm strike then was sent flying backwards like a bullet. While in mid-air, he spouted a mouthful of blood.

Despite having sent the opponent flying with just a palm strike, Liu Cheng frowned slightly, his eyes flashing with a tinge of doubt. He felt that... the opponent seemed to have taken the blow deliberately?

As soon as this strange thought emerged in Liu Cheng's mind, his expression suddenly changed, because he had noticed that the opponent was flying away in the direction of none other than a window of this room!

By the time Liu Cheng's expression changed, Bai Yunfei had already been thrown to the side of the window. While in mid-air, he twisted his body all of a sudden and threw a punch at the same time!

“Bang!”

Wood chips were scattered around. Bai Yunfei took a forceful step on the edge of the window with his right foot then quickly jumped downstairs.

“You’ve got some brains, but do you think you escape this way?” Although Liu Cheng was stupefied for a moment by the fact that Bai Yunfei had let himself get seriously injured in exchange for an opportunity to run away, as a Soul Sprite, his reaction was so fast that the moment Bai Yunfei jumped down from the window, he rushed up to it with a shake of his body. Seeing that Bai Yunfei was running like mad on the street after landing, he gave a cold snort and also jumped out of the window to give chase.

The two men who had fought Bai Yunfei earlier had been quite astounded for a short while as well. They had not expected him to suddenly make this move. Now they began to go after him without hesitation too.

Clutching his chest with his left hand, Bai Yunfei forcefully

suppressed that almost unbearable urge to spout another mouthful of blood as he ran. Although he had planned for a long time and taken the opponent's palm strike with his highest defense when the defensive effect of the Goldsilk Soul Armor had been activated, how could a palm strike from a middle Soul Sprite have been so easy to withstand? If not for the defense of the armor, perhaps he would have been incapacitated on the spot.

His internal organs were in severe pain. They seemed to have suffered blunt trauma. Even worse, an ice-cold chill was spreading, making him shiver a bit uncontrollably. He hurriedly took the Fire-tipped Spear out. A sensation of scorching heat spread into his body and eventually canceled out that spreading feeling of coldness.

Using the Wave Treading Steps almost to the utmost, creating a string of afterimages, he ran forwards at high speed.

Ten something meters behind him, Liu Cheng was going after him closely at high speed too. The Ice Treading Steps was only suitable for moving in a small area during combat and unsuitable for covering long distances quickly. But even though he was not using a soul skill at the moment, unexpectedly he was still a bit faster than Bai Yunfei!

As Liu Cheng looked at Bai Yunfei up ahead, who was becoming nearer and nearer to him, his eyes flashed with a hint of surprise. The fast speed of this body-maneuvering soul skill Bai Yunfei was using was somewhat unexpected to him. Who would have thought that a middle Soul Sprite like himself would have to chase after Bai Yunfei over such a long distance to catch up with him?

Seeing that they were about to run out of the west city gate, Liu Cheng gave a soft snort. Channeling his soulforce, he took a forceful step and accelerated sharply again with an outburst of soulforce. He then took a leap, which allowed him to go up to Bai Yunfei's back in an instant, and reached out his right hand to make a grab at the back of his neck.

“You can’t run, brat. Just give yourself up!!”

# Chapter 75: Help Arrives

---

A blast of wind came at the back of his neck. Clenching his teeth, Bai Yunfei poured all of his soulforce into his legs and pushed them against the ground fiercely. The stone slabs of the street under his feet immediately shattered and his body also dashed away several inches in the blink of an eye thanks to this outburst of soulforce.

Seeing that his grab was about to miss, Liu Cheng gave a cold snort and turned the claw into a palm. His right arm then suddenly reached out a bit further, allowing the palm to hit Bai Yunfei in the middle of his back. This was none other than the Arm Lengthening Palm!

“Pu!”

Bai Yunfei spouted another mouthful of blood. His speed increased again, but this happened because this palm strike had hit him, sending him flying forwards ten something meters before leaving him lying on the ground.

A cold expression showed up in Liu Cheng’s eyes. Without slowing down, he rushed up, wanting to grab the opponent.

However, when he was only three or four meters away from Bai Yunfei, his expression changed all of a sudden. He unexpectedly stopped moving forwards and hurriedly backed off right away!

“Whiz... Clang!”

The moment he retreated, a whizzing sound came from the distance through the darkness. A streak of cold light then approached him and in the blink of an eye landed on the place where he had just been.

A sword about one meter long had pierced into that stone slab. Its hilt was shaking slightly, creating slight buzzing sounds.

Liu Cheng stood still staring ahead cautiously with a solemn expression.

“Who dares to run wild in the territory of my Green Willow School?!” A question was shouted then several silhouettes appeared in his field of vision. Judging from their appearances, they should all be women. They were dressed entirely in white clothes adorned with various green patches which looked like willow leaves. As they walked, the corners of their skirts swayed slightly, making those patches appear to be willow leaves fluttering in the wind, which felt rather ethereal under the dim light of the night.

“Green Willow School!” Liu Cheng’s pupils contracted. His expression become even more solemn.

This group of people was not slow either. By the time Liu Cheng could see them clearly, they had almost already gone up to his face. They stopped beside Bai Yunfei. Two beautiful figures then dashed out and helped him up from the ground.

“You’re finally here...” Bai Yunfei wiped the blood off the corners of his mouth and looked at Qiu Luliu and Chu Yuhe, who were supporting him. He gave a faint smile, but a strange thought emerged in his mind, “Why do helpers always come on the scene at the most critical moments? Why can’t they show up a bit earlier? That way I wouldn’t have needed to take the last palm strike...”

Chu Yuhe looked at Bai Yunfei, who had a somewhat strange expression on his face, with a pair of wide opened eyes filled with tears, almost on the verge of crying, and asked anxiously, “Are you okay, brother Yunfei? Are you hurt anywhere? Are you seriously injured? Please don’t make me worry...”

Surprised, Bai Yunfei looked at this anxious little girl then chuckled and said comfortingly, “I’m alright. Don’t worry. I’m just slightly injured. There’s nothing serious about my injuries.”

After saying so he turned to Qiu Luliu, who was also looking at him with a deeply concerned expression, smiled at her in return and said, “I have troubled you, Luliu...”

“You don’t have to stand on ceremony, Yunfei. You’re Yuhe’s sworn brother. My master also said that we should help you.” Qiu Luliu smiled then looked at a middle-aged woman about thirty years old standing in front of Bai Yunfei, saying, “This is my junior aunt Mu Feng, the elder of the Green Willow School. My master specifically told her to go with me to help you.”

Mu Feng inclined her head a bit to cast a look at Bai Yunfei, nodded slightly then raised her head looking at Liu Cheng in front of her, saying with cold laugh, “I was wondering who you were. Turns out you’re elder Liu from the Glacial School. Why did you go into my Jade Willow City without reason instead of keeping watch on your Glacial School? You’re even attempting to harm my school’s guest. What’s the meaning of this?”

Liu Cheng frowned slightly, looked at Bai Yunfei then turned to look at Mu Feng again. Giving a soft sigh, he folded his hands in salute, saying, “You’re taking it too seriously, elder Mu. I definitely have no intention of offending your school. This is merely a personal feud between me and this man. Besides, I didn’t know that he’s related to your school at all, so...”

“There’s a feud between you and him? What is it that can make a soul cultivator of the mid-stage Soul Sprite levellike you personally get into action to deal with a junior of the Soul Warrior stage?” Mu Feng interrupted him and asked in a slightly satirical tone.

“He...” Liu Cheng was somewhat speechless temporarily. After pausing for a moment, he continued, “He killed the son of my school’s elder Zhang, so I want to capture him...”

“Oh? He killed Zhang Zhenshan’s son? Do you have any evidence?” Mu Feng raised her beautiful eyebrows, “Besides, why do you want to avenge the death of elder Zhang’s son? Why do you take the trouble to get into action yourself, elder Liu?”

Liu Cheng fell silent for a while then said in a deep voice, “So this means your Green Willow School wants to save his life?”

“I already said, this man is a guest of the Green Willow School. As long as he’s in this Jade Willow City, my school definitely won’t sit by and watch him get hurt by his enemy. If there’s really a feud between him and Zhang Zhenshan, please tell elder Zhang to come here to confront him in person.” Mu Feng’s tone was resolute and unfaltering. She was the only elder of the Glacial School and a late-stage Soul Sprite, so she was even more powerful than Liu Cheng. Furthermore, they were at the gate of her school at the moment so naturally she would not want to appear weak.

After saying those words, she waved to the people behind her. They then surrounded Bai Yunfei to protect him. With Qiu Luliu and Chu Yuhe supporting him with their hands, they walked out of the city gate slowly.

Seeing that Bai Yunfei was being taken away, Liu Cheng’s eyes flashed with a trace of severity. But noticing that Mu Feng was staring at him on full alert, in the end he did not take any action and watched them walk away with an unsightly expression.

Mu Feng gently pulled her sword out from the ground, put it back in its sheath and looked at the subordinates who had already chased up to this place behind Liu Cheng, saying indifferently, “Elder Liu, if you want to go into Jade Willow City to be our guest, my Green Willow School will definitely welcome you. If you have time, please do me the honor of coming to my school for a visit, my school will definitely treat you with courtesy too... However, if you want to secretly make trouble in this city, looking down on my school, then my Green Willow School won’t be so easy to bully! This place, is not a territory of your Glacial School like Snowpeak City!”

Having said these words, Mu Feng turned around and left without caring about what the opponent thought.

The color Liu Cheng’s face alternated between blue and white. He was extremely furious inside, but there was nothing he could do. Indeed, this place was not Snowpeak City. At the moment, he



simply did not dare to come into conflict with the Green Willow School. He had only brought two disciples from his school with him into this city. Even though his plan had been carried out, this had been done by borrowing the forces of the Long family, which had a rather close connection with the Glacial School.

“Elder, what should we do now?”

Liu Cheng did not say anything and a man beside him could not help asking when he saw this.

Seeing that Mu Feng and her group had disappeared outside the city gate, Liu Cheng sighed in frustration and waved his hand, saying, “Send men to keep a close watch on the Green Willow School’s surroundings. If Bai Yunfei leaves, tell me about this immediately! He’s already injured. Within the next several days, he should stay in the Green Willow School all the time to treat his injuries. Inform headmaster about the situation here right away for him to decide. Before that, we won’t take any action and won’t come into conflict with the Glacial School!”

As Liu Cheng led his men back, he was still frowning tightly, rather irritated inside. Who would have thought one unexpected thing after another would happen to the trap he had meticulously set up so that in the end he would gain nothing from it?

“The day Bai Yunfei appeared in this city, I already sent someone to inform the school about this. Why hasn’t headmaster arrived yet? It’s impossible that he has no interest in Bai Yunfei. Could it be... something happened in the school? And he was delayed by this?

“In the current situation, I can only wait. Do we need to come into direct conflict with the Green Willow School...?”

As this group of men walked away slowly, the street became quiet again. From the entrance of a nearby alleyway, a silhouette then walked out slowly. This person’s entire body had been hiding in the dark. He had been paying close attention to this place all along

without being detected by anybody. This was none other than Hong Yin.

He pondered for a while then turned around and walked out of the west city gate...

.....

In front of the Green Willow School's gate, Bai Yunfei saw Mu Wanqing and You Qingfeng again. Who would have thought these two would be waiting for everybody at the gate of the manor? Bai Yunfei gently brushed away the two girls' hands, which they were assisting him with, stood firmly with difficulty and folded his hands lightly to everybody, saying sincerely: "Everybody, this time I really have to thank you very much for your help. If not for you, I would have fallen into the hands of that Glacial School, and I don't know if I would have been able to survive that."

Mu Wanqing said with a faint smile, "You don't have to stand on ceremony like that, Yunfei. You already became Yuhe's sworn brother so helping you is what my school should do. Besides, as the Glacial School looked down on my Green Willow School like that, if we had done nothing after knowing that they were secretly carrying out a scheme in the city, my school would have lost face."

Things had been so easy according to her, but Bai Yunfei knew that this time, because of himself alone, she had confronted another school without hesitation. This was really a big favor.

"Then thank you very much, headmaster. I'll never forget your school's favor this time, no matter what. Later, if I have a chance, I'll definitely repay it!" After saying so, seeming to have affected his injuries, he gave a couple of coughs and blood came out of the corners of his mouth once more.

Chu Yuhe was very anxious again. She hurriedly went up and supported him, saying sobbingly, "Brother Yunfei, please stop talking. Hurry up and treat your injuries."

Mu Wanqing's expression also changed slightly. She had not expected him to be injured so severely. Frowning a bit, she looked at Mu Feng.

After their eyes met, before she could ask, Mu Feng already answered, "Headmaster, because we were waiting outside the west city gate before receiving the news, when we saw young hero Bai appear while being pursued and attacked by Liu Cheng, he was already..."

"Please don't blame senior Mu, headmaster. I didn't think it out carefully and was already injured before she arrived." Bai Yunfei hurriedly said. Then he wiped the blood from the corners of his mouth and continued in a somewhat embarrassed manner, "Er, headmaster Mu, I think we should go inside first. I need to treat my injuries quickly. Tomorrow I'll come over and thank everybody properly."

"Oh, I forgot about this. Luliu, Yuhe, the two of you take Yunfei into a guest room for him to rest then prepare some vulneraries for him." Mu Wanqing gave a gentle smile and led everybody walking into manor.

After Bai Yunfei had been taken to a guest room, Mu Wanqing and You Qingfeng walked in the other direction slowly. You Qingfeng had not said anything all along, but now he asked, "Wanqing, is he worthy of being helped by you like that?"

"Oh?" Mu Wanqing was startled then said laughingly, "Why do you ask this question again? Didn't I say before that as long as this man achieves something in the future, my school will also benefit from this?"

"But now you have become enemies with a school comparable to the Green Willow School because of him."

"The Glacial School? We're both the two largest schools in the north of Azure Cloud Province so originally there was not much friendliness between us. Besides, I didn't say that we'd have to

become enemies either. At the moment, I'm just assuring Bai Yunfei's safety a bit within the acceptable limit. If something unforeseen happens later, I'll make other plans..."

While Mu Wanqing was talking, a disciple suddenly came to report that there was someone outside the front gate who wanted to pay her a visit, and this was none other than the person who had come here in the afternoon and informed them of Bai Yunfei's situation to help him.

## Chapter 76: Injury Treatment

---

Just when Mu Wanqing and You Qingfeng were talking about Bai Yunfei, a disciple suddenly came to report that the person who had informed them of the situation in the afternoon on behalf of Bai Yunfei had come over to pay a visit.

“He?” Mu Wanqing frowned slightly, seeming to be somewhat puzzled.

You Qingfeng also said somewhat doubtfully, “What has he come here for? Could it be because of Bai Yunfei? But according to my earlier analysis, there shouldn’t be a very close connection between them...”

Mu Wanqing looked in the direction of the main gate, saying, “No matter what, since he already came here, I think I’d better go and welcome him. I feel that he...”

“Oh, I know what you want to say. I also have that kind of feeling. As long as he has no bad intentions, we’ll receive him properly. There’s nothing wrong with this.” You Qingfeng said with a nod.

They both turned around and walked towards the gate again.

Hong Yin was standing with a smiling expression at the main gate. Seeing the two of them walking over, he folded his hands rather apologetically, saying, “Please excuse my sudden visit, headmaster Mu. I would like to stay in your school for several days. Hopefully you will allow me to do so.”

Hong Yin’s straightforwardness surprised Mu Wanqing. She then said smilingly, “You don’t have to stand on ceremony, young hero. Now that you’ve come here to be a guest, my school will certainly welcome you. Right, what’s your name, young hero?”

“Hong Yin.”

“Oh, young hero Hong Yin, it’s already evening so you’d better

have a rest first. Is it okay if I tell someone to take you to a guest room next to Bai Yunfei's?" Mu Wanqing said.

Hong Yin folded his hands to her again, saying, "In that case, thank you very much, headmaster Mu."

After watching Hong Yin walk away under the guidance of a disciple, Mu Wanqing turned to look at You Qingfeng and saw him frowning slightly, seeming to be pondering about something.

"Qingfeng, are you okay?"

You Qingfeng looked in the direction where Hong Yin had disappeared and said somewhat doubtfully, "Hong Yin... I seem to have heard this name somewhere before. But for the moment I can't remember when this happened..."

"Oh? Could it be he's an outstanding disciple of a certain school or family?" Mu Wanqing asked in bewilderment.

You Qingfeng pondered again for some time but still could not remember it. He then shook his head gently and gave up thinking, saying, "No matter who he is, at least both of us can tell that he's definitely more powerful than us. Only, he's hiding it so well we're simply unable to know his power level, which also means he must be much stronger than us... It's best to make friends with this kind of person. Even if this is impossible, we should try as hard as we can not to offend him. I think he seems to think quite highly of Bai Yunfei, but for what reason...?"

"Mm, I'm pretty curious about this too." Mu Wanqing said with a nod, "Given his power, it would have been as easy as turning his hand for him to resolve the problem for Bai Yunfei, but it seems Bai Yunfei didn't want to owe him too much at all so he had no choice but to help him a bit by giving us a message, letting us go and rescue him. I feel that there shouldn't be a very deep relationship between them. At least Bai Yunfei is still unfamiliar with him, but somehow he cares about Bai Yunfei quite a lot..."

You Qingfeng shook his head gently, saying laughingly, “Don’t think about it too much, Wanqing. There’s not much point in guessing either. Now that he’s staying here, this is beneficial to us. If that Glacial School really comes here to make trouble, maybe he’ll get into action. In that case, we’ll have less to worry about, right?”

“Mm, you’re right. Now let’s just wait for the Glacial School’s reaction. When the time comes, we’ll act according to the situation...”

.....

In a guest room in a small courtyard house on the west wing, Bai Yunfei was sitting on the bed in a somewhat preoccupied manner. However, he did not seem to be treating his injuries at all. It was impossible to know what he was thinking about.

“Knock knock knock...” Sounds of knocking rang out. Startled, Bai Yunfei hurriedly said, “Just come in.”

The door was pushed open and Qiu Luliu and Chu Yuhe entered the room. The latter was even holding a large bowl of liquid medicine in her hands. She carefully walked up to Bai Yunfei, handed the bowl to him and said in a deeply concerned manner, “Brother Yunfei, please drink this medicine quickly. It’ll help you in treating your injuries. In a while you should channel your soulforce to digest the medicinal properties and you’ll recover very soon.”

As Bai Yunfei looked at the two of them, his eyes showed that he was moved by their kindness. He received the bowl, drank it up in several gulps then handed it back to Yuhe, saying laughingly: “Thank you very much. You don’t have worry about me. I’m alright. I’ll get well very soon.”

Qiu Luliu nodded to him, “Mm, I know you’re not so weak. Now you should treat your injuries properly. We won’t disturb you anymore. If you need something, just look for us in Willow Leave

House on the left of this courtyard house.”

After saying so, she pulled Chu Yuhe gently and both of them walked out of the room.

Bai Yunfei gazed at the door in stupefaction for a while again. Eventually he gave a soft sigh, concentrated his attention then sat with legs crossed and began to examine the injuries in his body carefully.

Leaving aside the injuries he had suffered in the beginning when fighting those two mid-stage Soul Warriors, he had been hit by Liu Cheng’s Glacial Palm twice. With the first time, he was well prepared for taking the blow. But with the second time, he was hit in the back while running away. Although at the time Liu Cheng had suddenly changed his move and did not use all his power because of this, the blow still inflicted extremely serious damage on Bai Yunfei.

His internal organs were slightly injured, his front ribs seemed to be cracked as well, and moreover, there was an icy-cold stream of energy moving wantonly in his body. Wherever it went, it made his hair at that place stand on end and slowed his perception there down by half a second. Bai Yunfei had tried channeling his soulforce to block its way, but achieved minimal results.

In frustration, he had no choice but to took the Fire-tipped Spear out and diverted its scorching heat into his body. Only by doing this was he finally able to slowly neutralize that icy-cold energy.

“This won’t do... Though I seem to be able to neutralize this cold energy this way, this kind of situation has happened before. I thought I understood it clearly, but last time, if not for senior Ge’s help, I would have ended up in a bad situation. This time, maybe there’s also the elemental force of ice that I can’t detect inside my body. But I simply have no way to know... Must I ask someone to help me? Perhaps headmaster Mu or that senior You can help me get rid of this cold energy, but I really don’t want to owe them



another debt of gratitude...”

Shaking his head, he decided to temporarily stop pondering about this ‘hidden danger’ and heal the injuries he could heal now first.

.....

In the early morning of the next day, when the sunlight came into the room, Bai Yunfei also opened his eyes slowly then breathed out softly. His expression looked much better now than before. It seemed he had recovered well.

He put the Fire-tipped Spear placed horizontally on his legs away into his space ring, kneaded his fists and nodded in a rather satisfied manner, “The bowl of medicine Yuhe gave me really worked wonders. If I had only used my soulforce to make my body recover, it would have been half as effective at best. Judging from my current condition, it’ll take me three days at most to fully recover.”

Right at this moment, sounds of knocking rang out and Yuhe’s tender voice came in, “Brother Yunfei, have you woken up? I have brought breakfast for you.”

“Oh, I already got up. Just come in, Yuhe.”

The door was pushed open gently and Yuhe walked in holding a bowl of congee. She smiled at Bai Yunfei, put the bowl down on the table and said, “Are you feeling better now, brother Yunfei?”

Bai Yunfei shook his head smilingly, saying, “Mm, I’ve already got much better. In two more days, I should be able to fully recover. You don’t have to worry, Yuhe.”

“Oh, that’s good. You should eat some congee first then continue to treat your injuries. You can also go out for a stroll and breathe some fresh air.”

“Alright, thank you very much, Yuhe. If I need something, I will let you know.” Bai Yunfei nodded and said.

“Then... I won’t disturb your injury treatment anymore, brother Yunfei. I’ll bring you another meal at noon.”

After watching Chu Yuhe go away, Bai Yunfei ate the congee then sat back on the bed and cultivated his soulforce for some time. But he always felt somewhat uneasy and could not focus his mind. Frustrated, he had no choice but to decide to go for a stroll outside to see if he could relax his mind a bit.

After getting out of the room, he looked around. This was a small courtyard house consisting of five rooms. Outside the house, there was a small road paved with stone slabs. Both sides of the road were full of grass and flowers of various colors, and they were swaying gently in the wind. At first sight, they were rather pleasing to both the eye and the mind.

Just when Bai Yunfei wanted to walk out to have a look, a person turned into the courtyard from the right-hand side of the gate. As soon as they saw each other’s face, Bai Yunfei was totally surprised, but that person just smiled at him.

“Hong Yin!” Bai Yunfei said in amazement, “Why are you here?”

Hong Yin said laughingly, “What? I can’t be here?”

“Er, no, what I mean is, could it be you’re a member of the Green Willow School?” Bai Yunfei asked doubtfully.

“Is someone who stays in the Green Willow School necessarily a member of this school? You’re also staying here, aren’t you? Ha ha, I’ve only come here to stay for a few nights.”

Bai Yunfei looked at him seriously. Without avoiding his eyes, Hong Yin also looked at him smilingly. Bai Yunfei withdrew his eyes then said after pondering for some time, “Why did you help me like that? We should... should have no relationship with each other, right?”

“Ha ha, correct. Before yesterday, we didn’t even know about each other.” Hong Yin nodded, “But you don’t need to be

suspicious either. At least I've got no bad intentions towards you, right?"

Seeing that there was still a doubtful look in Bai Yunfei's eyes, Hong Yin could not help saying, "Alright, I can tell you more. I know that there's some connection between you and the Fate School. Plus, senior Ge Yiyun personally looked for you. So I want to make friends with you. Perhaps later we'll be able to help each other..."

"How can I help you? You're much more powerful than me. Is there really anything I can help you with?"

"Now that's indeed the case, but who can say for sure what will happen later?"

Bai Yunfei considered frowningly for a while then said sincerely, "I have to thank you very much for your help, no matter what. Yesterday, if not for you, I wouldn't have been able to make my decision so easily."

In that alleyway yesterday, Hong Yin had told Bai Yunfei that when he had been in the Secret Pleasure Tower that day, Liu Cheng had been watching him in the dark. Moreover, he also warned him that Liu Cheng and Liu Meng beside him looked somewhat alike.

It was only thanks to his warnings was Bai Yunfei able to link his suspicions together then decide to 'show his cards' first. He also looked for Hong Yin in advance and requested him to carry a message to the Green Willow School, asking it to send people to help him.

"Ha ha, it's good that you can believe me, little brother Yunfei. In fact, people should treat each other sincerely. There's nothing wrong with being a little cautious, but if you're too suspicious and skeptical, you'll appear somewhat cold and aloof, right?"

Hearing Hong Yin's words, Bai Yunfei was slightly taken aback.

He folded his hands and said with a hint of embarrassment on his face, “This... Thank you very much for your advice, brother Hong Yin.”

## Chapter 77: Approaching Crisis

---

Seeing that Bai Yunfei was so humble, Hong Yin unexpectedly felt somewhat embarrassed. He said laughingly, “You don’t have to be too formal, Yunfei. I just blurted it out. There’s nothing wrong with you being cautious like this either. After all, if someone helped me without reason like this, I’d be somewhat suspicious too.”

Nodding slightly, Bai Yunfei said, “Mm, I’m very happy that I can become friends with a man like you, brother Hong Yin. Later, if I can help you with anything, I’ll definitely do my best to help you!”

“Ha ha, let’s talk about things like this later.” Hong Yin waved his hand. Suddenly remembering something, he asked, “Right, how are your injuries?”

“They’ve already got much better. I think I’ll fully recover in two days.”

“That’s good. If you have any problem with your injuries, just tell me about it. Now you’re too weak so there may be some things you can’t detect...”

“Oh, thank you very much for your concern, brother Hong Yin. I already know exactly what to do.” Bai Yunfei said smilingly, “Right, brother Hong Yin, you specifically came here to look for me? Or...”

“You can say that too. Just now I paid a visit to headmaster Mu because I intended to come to your room and have a look. Right, now I’m staying next door to you.” Hong Yin pointed to a room on the right-hand side.

Bai Yunfei was surprised then said in a somewhat embarrassed manner, “Oh, I see. I’m also thinking about going and thanking headmaster Mu, but I don’t know the roads in this place very well. Sorry to trouble you, brother Hong Yin, but can you please take me

to her place?”

“Of course I can. Headmaster Mu is staying in the Flying Leaves Pavilion on the northern side. I’ll take you there.” Hong Yin nodded in an unconcerned manner then turned around, walked out and motioned for Bai Yunfei to follow him.

After thanking Mu Wanqing again and greeting Qiu Luliu and Chu Yuhe, Bai Yunfei and Hong Yin returned to the small courtyard house on the west wing. Bai Yunfei went into his room and began to heal his body’s injuries again.

.....

At night, in the hall of an extremely large mansion in the northeast part of Jade Willow City, the lamplight was as bright as day, and this was in stark contrast to the pitch-black night sky outside the building.

This place was none other than the mansion of the Long family, a major family in Jade Willow City.

At the moment, the head of the Long family Long Bai was sitting in the first subordinate position on the left with a respectful expression. Sitting in front of him unexpectedly were the headmaster of the Glacial School Yu Fei and Liu Cheng and Zhang Zhenshan.

And two other people were sitting on the left and right sides of the head position. The person on the right side was a lanky man about forty something years old. He was gently stroking his goatee with a rather arrogant expression. And the person on the left side was covered completely in a black robe, making it impossible to see their face clearly. However, judging from their stature, this should be a man. He was sitting there quietly with a surreal air about him. If someone did not stare at him, they would not even be able to feel his presence.

“This time, the Glacial School is extremely grateful for your help,

senior Yang Lin. That Green Willow School is relying on its geographical advantage to protect the murder of an outstanding disciple from my school, which is really disgusting. This time, with your help, we definitely can bring him to justice!” Yu Fei folded his hands in salute to the man with the goatee and said rather respectfully.

Yang Lin waved his hand in a totally unconcerned manner, “It’s just the Green Willow School. Though it and your school were comparable in power before, now your Glacial School has already become a subsidiary of my Beast Taming School. Later you certainly won’t have to be so afraid of it. If you can unify all the big and small schools in the northern part of this Qingyun Province, this will be of some use to my school as well.”

When Yu Fei heard him say the words ‘unify all the big and small schools’ casually, his eyes immediately brightened. His heart was full of excitement, but he suppressed it very well and said respectfully, “If the Glacial School can expand in the future, this will be thanks to the Beast Taming School’s help completely. From now on, my Green Willow School will listen to the Beast Taming School sincerely. We won’t hesitate even if we have to go through fire and water!”

He said with such excitement but Yang Lin did not react much. He only nodded indifferently, saying, “Later, when we want you to do something, we’ll certainly tell you.”

Right at this moment, a bird about the size of a sparrow flew into the room. Yang Lin raised his eyebrows slightly and reached out his hand to catch it. He then shook his wrist and the bird disappeared. Leaning his head a bit to look at Long Bai, he said, “Patriarch Long, my apprentice nephew has come. Can you tell your men to let him in?”

Not daring treat him in a cold manner, Long Bai said yes again and again then stood up and left to personally welcome this man.

Before long, Long Bai returned to the hall with a black-clad young man. As soon as this young man saw Yang Lin, his face was immediately full of grievance. He walked up to him and said tearfully, “Junior uncle, you’ve finally returned. You have to set things right for me!!”

He was none other than Li Long, the disciple of the Beast Taming School who on that day had fought Bai Yunfei in that restaurant then in the end had been taught a lesson by a suddenly appearing Hong Yin.

“Oh?” Slightly taken aback by his behavior, Yang Lin said frowningly, “Why are you... Oh? What’s wrong with your hand?”

Li Long shook his somewhat unnatural-looking left hand and said with a painful face, “Someone broke it. I won’t fully recover until ten days or half a month later. Besides, besides...that guy took away my Thunderwolf!”

“What?!” Yang Lin glared at him. Li Long immediately felt an oppressive aura hit him in the face, making it even rather hard for him to breathe.

“Junior uncle, there, there was nothing I could do. That guy was really too powerful. I simply couldn’t resist him!” Li Long took two steps backwards and explained himself loudly.

“Humph!” Yang Lin gave a cold snort in a somewhat exasperated manner then withdrew his eyes and said frowningly, “Tell me, what actually happened? Tell me clearly!”

Immediately, Li Long did not dare to conceal the facts either. He recounted what had happened in the restaurant that day carefully. Everybody listened to him rather curiously. Only, as Liu Cheng heard him describe what had happened, his eyes flashed in an unnoticeable manner, but he did not say anything either.

After Li Long was finished, he begged, “Junior uncle, you must help me snatch Thunderwolf back! If my father knows about



this...”

Yang Lin lowered his head in silence for a long time. In the end he gave a soft sigh in a rather frustrated manner and raised his head saying to Yu Fei, “Headmaster Yu, looks like we need to temporarily delay going to the Green Willow School and asking for the killer. I must check if the man mentioned by Li Long is still in the city or not first. If he’s here, we must deal with this matter before going to the Green Willow School, okay?”

Yu Fei said with a nod, “Of course there’s no problem. I’ll tell the Long family’s men to carry out a search to help you. They’re quite influential in this city so they’ll make it easier to search for him.”

After saying so, he gave Long Bai a hint with his eyes. Long Bai agreed laughingly, “Right, right, I’ll immediately tell my men to do their best to search for the guy mentioned by this young gentleman!”

.....

At night in the Long family, Yu Fei, Zhang Zhenshan and Liu Cheng were gathering in a guest room, seemingly discussing something in low voices.

“Headmaster, what’s going on? Our school has unexpectedly become a subsidiary of the Beast Taming School? It was only because you were delayed by this matter that you arrived just now?” Only now did Liu Cheng have time to ask this question.

Yu Fei nodded slightly, “Correct. This happened several days ago. Those two people suddenly came and told me that the Beast Taming School wanted our school to become its subsidiary and was willing to support our school’s development.”

Liu Cheng frowned, “Is there such a good thing? The Beast Taming School is one of the top ten schools in the world whereas our Glacial School is basically nameless on a world scale despite being somewhat well-known in Qingyun Province. It was normally

hard for us to ask for protection from a powerful school, but now this kind of thing unexpectedly was handed to us on a plate. Could it be...?”

“I know what you mean. But I can confirm that he’s really from the Beast Taming School. I saw with my own eyes him control three soulbeasts at the same time. Only the Beast Taming School is capable of such a thing.”

“Oh? If so, there shouldn’t be anything wrong. Could it be luck has turned in our Glacial School’s favor, giving us a golden opportunity? Right, that man in the black robe...”

“That man is very mysterious. I can’t even confirm if he’s from the Beast Taming School or not. He and Yang Lin came here together, but he’s almost never said anything and never shown his power either. But I can tell that Yang Lin is pretty respectful towards him, even vaguely regarding him as the leader.”

“What?” Liu Cheng was started, “Yang Lin is a late-stage Soul Ancestor at least. If that man is even more powerful than him then he’s a... Soul Exalt?!”

Yu Fei nodded slightly, “Very likely. No matter what, now that we’re subsidiary to the Beast Taming School, this will definitely help our school’s development in the future. Besides, now we can also make use of their power and go to the Green Willow School and ask for that man.”

Liu Cheng fell silent for a while then let out a sigh, “Headmaster, this time I didn’t handle the matter well. Now I’ve even caused a disagreement between us and the Green Willow School. I’m really...”

Yu Fei waved his hand to stop him, saying laughingly, “You don’t have to blame yourself, elder Liu. We already bumped into Meng’er on the way here. Judging from the general situation she told us, there were really too many unexpected things. You can’t be blamed.”

“You ran into Meng’er?” Liu Cheng was slightly surprised.

Yu Fei nodded, “Yeah, she said she was done with her business and wanted to return to stay with her mother. I think she seemed to be somewhat low in spirit. What happened?”

“Oh, nothing. It’s possible she hasn’t gone home for a long time so she’s somewhat missing her mother...” Liu Cheng was unwilling to talk about what had happened to Liu Meng so he changed the topic of conversation, “Right, headmaster, have you told that man from the Beast Taming School everything about Bai Yunfei?”

“Of course I haven’t. I only said that we wanted to catch him to avenge the death of elder Zhang’s son.”

“Mm, we’d better not tell anyone else about this matter. Even though we’re now already a subsidiary of the Beast Taming School, if we let them know about it, this will only cause our Glacial School a lot of trouble...”

“Before going to the Green Willow School and ask for that man, we should just wait...”

.....

In the Green Willow School, Bai Yunfei was sitting on a bed. There was a pile of weapons and jewelry in front of him, and he was slowly upgrading them one by one. At the moment, being in the Green Willow School, he did not have to worry about his own safety so he intended to use the method of exhausting his soulforce via the Upgrade Technique, thereby improving his soulforce and healing his injuries at the same time.

He planned to heal his injuries quickly then leave this place right away, heading for Beiyan Province. He did not want to give the Green Willow School more trouble at all and hoped that he could leave before the Glacial School came here. That way, the Green Willow School would not have to deal with a difficult situation.

Only, he did not know that the enemy was already approaching

him and would come to this place before he could leave...

# Chapter 78: Soulbeast

---

The next day. Bai Yunfei didn't go out and walk about. He spent the entire day inside the room, slowly healing the injuries in his body. Only at night did he then start to upgrade some of the remaining equipment, blowing up a large number of weapons and jewelry. Finally, his soulforce exhausted, he lay down on the bed.

The night passed quickly. Dawn. Bai Yunfei slowly sat up, stretching rather lazily. Cracking sounds could be heard coming from every part of his body. He shook his arm, stretched his body, took two deep breaths, then nodded with satisfaction.

“Using the upgrade technique is still the fast way to improve! It's simple and efficacious...but unfortunately, the price I have to pay is I pass out at the end each time. Although I know that there's no difference between passing out and sleeping, it's still seven or eight hours of downtime. Although I can force myself awake after three or four hours, I'll feel rather lethargic. The side-effects are huge. It's much safer to wake up normally.”

“It's about time. Today, I'll bid them farewell. It's best to leave this Cuiliu City early.” Bai Yunfei thought these things to himself as he pulled out a jade green fish-shaped necklace, cupping it in the palm of his hand and evaluating it carefully.

Equipment Grade: Superior

Upgrade Level: +10

Additional Attribute: +35 Agility

  

+10 Additional Effect: Increase movement speed by 3%

Upgrade Requirement: 22 Soulpoints

After verifying the properties of this pendant, Bai Yunfei nodded slightly. “The type of movement techniques and fighting

techniques the Green Willow school trains in are focused on agility. I'll give this necklace to Yuhe; she should like it, I imagine..."

As he walked out of the room, the fresh morning air flooded towards him, stirring up his spirits. A short while later, that lass Yuhe would come to deliver breakfast.

He knocked on the door to Hong Yin's nearby room, but there was no response. He thought that the reason was because Hong Yin had gotten up before he did, and so he left.

Bai Yunfei decided to go out for a walk and stroll about the nearby Willow Leaf House. Perhaps he might just so happened to run into Chu Yuhe.

As he walked out of his courtyard, he took a left turn, then walked forward across the slightly damp bluestones on the path. Bai Yunfei slowly strolled forward. There were gem-like drops of dew flowers and grass nearby, and they fluttered gently from the clear wind, then rolled downwards. Bai Yunfei could even hear the tiny dripping sounds. Everything around him seemed so peaceful, yet so filled with morning freshness.

After walking past a small courtyard, he saw a small pond in front of him. In front of the small pond was the Willow Leaf House, where Chu Yuhe and the others resided.

"Eh?" After walking close to the pond, Bai Yunfei suddenly let out a small sound of surprise as he came to a halt. This was because he had discovered that on the rightmost shores of the pond, Hong Yin was seated atop a stone bench, gently petting a gray wolf that lay in front of him. He even seemed to be speaking softly to the wolf.

The creature before him was the soulbeast he had 'stolen' from Li Long of the Beast Taming School that day!

And by his side, there was a maiden who sat there quietly, her

gaze flickering between Hongyin and the thunderwolf with an extremely curious look in her eyes.

“Big brother Hong Yin, Luliu, what are the two of you doing?” Bai Yunfei waved his hands towards the two of them, who had noticed him as well, as he hurriedly moved to walk towards them.

Hong Yin nodded slightly towards him, then once more turned his head to stare at the thunderwolf in front of him. His right hand continued to gently stroke the wolf at its neck, and he continued to murmur unintelligible words. At the head of the thunderwolf stood that little white beast named Xiao Tang. It actually stretched out its two paws in a very human-like gesture as it continuously rubbed the thunderwolf on its ears as it squeaked.

“This...” Bai Yunfei was rather baffled by what this man and his mouse were doing. He was about to say something, but the nearby Qiu Luliu gestured towards him not to interrupt.

Bai Yunfei carefully walked to her side, then asked softly, “What’s going on?”

“Big brother Hong Yin said that he is trying to communicate with this thunderwolf...” Qiu Luliu’s eyes were staring unblinkingly at Hong Yin as she answered in a very quiet voice.

“Uh...communicate?” Bai Yunfei was stunned. He looked towards the thunderwolf, not understanding. He saw how this enormous gray wolf, the size of a small bull, was now just standing in front of Hong Yin like a block of wood. Although the eyes of the wolf were crimson, there was no life in them. If it weren’t for the fact that minuscule trembles could be seen on its body, and if it wasn’t for the fact that it was breathing, Bai Yunfei would’ve questioned whether or not it was still alive.

“Eh? Big brother Yunfei, why are you here?” Right at this moment, Yuhe’s voice rang out from behind. Bai Yunfei turned to look, only to see the little lass carrying a big bowl of porridge and several meat buns as she stared towards him.

Bai Yunfei made a shushing motion towards her, then beckoned her over.

Yuhe walked over. After Bai Yunfei ‘explained’ to her, she gave Hong Yin a very puzzled glance, then said to Bai Yunfei, “Big brother Yunfei, I was just about to deliver you breakfast. Since you are here, you can eat first, then talk.”

Bai Yunfei glanced at Hong Yin, who was still working hard to ‘communicate’ with the thunderwolf, then at Qiu Luliu, who was watching very intently. He nodded, then walked to a nearby stone table, where he sat down and began to slowly eat his breakfast. Yuhe walked to Qiu Luliu’s side, beginning to talk with her in a very soft voice.

Just as Bai Yunfei was more or less finished eating, Hong Yin finally concluded his ‘communication’. He took his hand back, then let out a soft sigh as he stored the thunderwolf back into his space ring.

“Big brother Hong Yin, how did it go?” The nearby Qiu Luliu hurriedly asked.

Hong Yin’s eyes had a hint of disappointment in them as he gently shook his head. “No good. There’s no way to sense its ‘will’ at all. Aside from its instinctive abilities of eating and drinking, nothing can rouse a reaction in it at all. The Beast Taming School... they actually treat soulbeasts in such a manner. I truly cannot set aside my rage...there will definitely come the day when I will find a method to rescue these soulbeasts under their control. Then, I will annihilate the Beast Taming School! What my godfather and the others were unable to accomplish, I will definitely accomplish!!”

However, he quickly seemed to realize that he had lost his composure. Hong Yin let out a soft sigh, calming his enraged heart, then smiled apologetically towards everyone. “Hehe, forgive me. I was rather agitated just now. I didn’t scare you, did I?”

This was the first time Bai Yunfei had seen Hong Yin so angry. In



that instant, he had felt an incomparably savage, brutal aura prepared to explode from Hong Yin. However, the next instant, the aura had been severed, so quickly that Bai Yunfei wasn't sure if he was perhaps mistaken.

“Big brother Hong Yin, this is early-stage third-tier thunderwolf; is it a soulbeast puppet which the Beast Taming School has created? How did you acquire it? You and the Beast Taming School...” Qiu Luliu glanced at the ring on Hong Yin's finger as she asked the question which puzzled her.

“There is no connection between me and the Beast Taming School! Schools like them, which treat soulbeasts so contemptuously...there will come a day when I will make them all vanish!” Hong Yin immediately grew a bit excited once more upon discussing the Beast Taming School, but he then gently shook his head. “I took this thunderwolf away from a disciple of the Beast Taming School within this city a few days ago. At that time, Yunfei was present as well.”

“Oh? This type of beast is called a thunderwolf? Right; what's a third-tier soulbeast?” Bai Yunfei asked with curiosity.

“Uh...”

His sudden question caused both Hong Yin and Qiu Luliu to be rather stunned. Hong Yin looked at him in a strange way. “Yunfei, you don't know about soulbeasts?”

“No.” Bai Yunfei honestly shook his head.

Hong Yin stared at him intently for ten seconds, then suddenly shook his head helplessly. He sighed, “Yunfei, for you to go out adventuring like this is really...”

“Uh...well, no one ever told me in the past.” Bai Yunfei spread his hands in an innocent manner. “That's why I'm asking you to educate me now, big brother Hong Yin.”

Hong Yin chuckled, then nodded. “Fine. I'll explain to you in

detail, then.”

“Soulbeasts are, as the name implies, beasts that can hone their souls. They can be described as the soul cultivators of beasts. Just like soul cultivators, they have tremendous power, and from a certain perspective, they even have some unique, special advantages...such as their lifespan. For soul cultivators, upon reaching the Soul Sprite level, living to be 150 is no problem at all. At the Soul Emperor level, one can live up to 300 years. But for a soul beast, upon reaching the fourth level, they can live at least three hundred years. At the sixth level, they can live at least five hundred years. The more powerful they are, the longer they live.”

“In terms of power, soulbeasts are divided into nine tiers, with each rank divided into early, middle, and late stages. These are equivalent in power to a soul cultivator of the same rank. For example, this early-stage third-tier thunderbeast I just accepted is actually comparable to an early-stage Soul Warrior.” At this point, Hong Yin then pointed to the little white beast on his shoulder. “But Xiao Tang, for example, is a middle-stage fifth-tier soul beast, comparable to a mid-stage Soul Ancestor.”

“What?!” Not just Bai Yunfei; even the two women next to him let out soft cries of surprise. Astonishment on their faces, they stared at Xiao Tang, on Hong Yin’s shoulder.

“It...it’s actually comparable to a mid-stage Soul Ancestor? Then doesn’t that mean it is as powerful as Master? How can that be...” Chu Yuhe said in disbelief as she stared wide-eyed at Xiao Tang, who was lazily stroking his whiskers.

Hong Yin smiled slightly. “Don’t underestimate him. If he were on water...he would be even more formidable than your average mid-stage Soul Ancestor.”

Hong Yin looked at Bai Yunfei, who seemed to have thought of something, then continued, “Soulbeasts train in a way that is completely different from soul cultivators. They don’t have

complicated arts or soul skills, just their own souls. They attune to the elemental power of heaven and earth. Soul cultivators have to reach the Soul Sprite level in order to control elemental power, but soul beasts are innately born with this ability. Even early-stage first-tier soulbeasts are capable of it! The power of their abilities will increase along with their level.”

“The vast majority of soulbeasts are located within the endless forests of the northern parts of the Empire. That place is also known as Soulbeast Forest. Most soul cultivators who want to find a soulbeast partner will go venture there, after they are strong enough.”

“Every single soul cultivator can be spiritually connected to a single soul beast. No one knows why, but it seems as though ever since soul cultivators and soulbeasts have existed, this ‘law’ has existed as well. A soul cultivator and soulbeast that have joined into a ‘contract’ will result in each leaving behind a soul imprint in the other’s soul. This soul imprint can never be erased; even if one dies, the other can never again form a soul contract.”

“Once a soul contract is made, then a companion for life has been made. The two are able to communicate to a certain extent, to cooperate without the need for speech, and even be able to share their soulforce! This is one of the primary reasons why soul cultivators wish to have a soulbeast companion; with a powerful soulbeast companion, one’s own level of power can be increased by several times!”

“Soul cultivators and soulbeasts should be two types of creatures that support and aid each other. But, starting at an unknown time, humans slowly began to change their way of thinking. They began to view themselves as the ‘master’, and the number of soul cultivators that treated their soulbeasts as equals began to lessen. Now, schools like the Beast Taming School have emerged! They have broken the ‘rules’; using some unknown method, they have turned soulbeasts into puppets that have no intelligence at all.

They've avoided the requirements of forming a soul contract and have forcibly put soul enslaving brands on the souls of soul beasts. One person can now control multiple soul beasts. They...they only treat soulbeasts as tools. They should all die!"

One could tell that Hong Yin truly hated the Beast Taming School to the core. It was hard to imagine that a powerful soul cultivator like him would become so agitated when discussing the Beast Taming School.

Bai Yunfei frowned slightly, then said in a rather worried way, "Big brother Hong Yin..."

"ROAAAAAR!"

Right at this moment, an enormous, earth-shaking roar interrupted Bai Yunfei's words.

Hong Yin suddenly raised his head, turning to stare towards the main gate of the Green Willow School, his eyes flashing with light.

"A soulbeast of the fifth-tier! And this feeling...it is the Beast Taming School!"

# Chapter 79: A Powerful Foe Comes to Fight!

---

In the empty space in front of the Green Willow School, there were two groups of people who were nervously staring at each other.

Mu Wanqing was leading a group of disciples at the entrance to the school, staring seriously at an enormous dark-golden ape that stood in front of her.

This was a middle-stage fifth level giant golden-eyed ape. It was more than five meters tall, and it stood there like a small mountain. The fur on its entire body was a dark-gold color, and its eyes were golden as well. However...not a hint of intelligence could be seen within its golden eyes. It stood upright, enormous fists pounding away at its chest with loud and deep thudding sounds. At the same time, it raised its neck, emitting an earth-shaking enraged roar.

Behind it not too far away stood Yang Lin, who had a cold smirk and a sinister expression on his face as he stared towards the members of the Green Willow School in front of him. Behind him stood Glacial School headmaster Yu Fei as well as elders Zhang and Liu, as well as tens of strong members of the Glacial School. To their left was Li Long, as well as a mysterious person whose entire body was covered by a black robe.

Yang Lin felt extremely irritated right now. He had searched for an entire day yesterday without finding the person who had stolen Li Long's soulbeast. Today, he came to the Green Willow School to demand the culprit be turned over, only to suffer a rejection. A minor school like the Green Willow School, in the face of someone from the Beast Taming School, actually dared to refuse their request? He had thought that this would be a minor matter, something which he could resolve with but a single word. How could he not be feeling upset right now?

He felt that it was most likely that a small sect like this one was too ignorant and did not believe him to truly be of the Beast Taming School. Thus, after they squabbled a bit, he immediately released his giant golden-eyed ape. Upon seeing the look of shock on their faces, he nodded in a very satisfied manner, then said coldly, “Headmaster Mu, I will say it one more time; the Glacial School has already submitted to our Beast Taming School. Hurry up and hand over the person who killed Elder Zhan’s son. Otherwise...don’t blame me for showing no courtesy!”

“Hmph! Beast Taming School, what audacious words! Do you think that just because you are reputed to be one of the ten great schools, that you can do whatever you please in the world?” An extremely satirical voice rang out from behind Mu Wanqing as a man in his thirties stepped out. It was You Qingfeng.

“You Qingfeng, of the Wood School of the Five Elements Schools!” Yang Lin’s face changed slightly. He knew that the Green Willow School and the Wood School did have a bit of a connection, which was one of the reasons he had not tried to subjugate them... but unexpectedly, You Qingfeng was present as well.

You Qingfeng glanced sideways at the nearby black-robed man, a hint of wariness in his eyes. He then swept the nearby Glacial School members with his gaze, then said with a frown, “You insist that the guest of the Green Willow School killed the son of Elder Zhang of the Glacial School, but where is your proof?”

“Bai Yunfei killed my one and only son. Many of my subordinates personally witnessed this; can it be that I’m making this up?! You can bring him out before us, and we’ll see if I’ve wronged him or not!” Zhang Zhenshan emerged from the group. Although the opponent was far stronger than him, the hatred he felt for Bai Yunfei caused him to verbally counter-attack without any fear. “This was originally a private feud between myself and Bai Yunfei; I don’t actually wish to cause problems between our schools. I would like to ask your exalted school to hand him over and let us

take care of this matter on our own!”

You Qingfeng frowned slightly. This rationale the opposing party had offered, of pursuing the killer of his son, caused him to momentarily not know how to argue back. He turned his head to glance at Mu Wanqing, about to say something, but then saw Yang Lin snort coldly and say, “You Qingfeng, this is just a trifling matter involving an unimportant junior. Can it be that you are going to oppose my Beast Taming School for his sake? Since I’ve come today, I’m definitely going back with that man! Can it be that you want to see these two schools start to struggle with each other?”

You Qingfeng’s eyes flashed. The situation today was indeed beyond his expectations. As he worried, a gust of wind brushed past his side as a figure emerged onto the scene.

“You are from the Beast Taming School?” Hong Yin glanced at the dull-looking giant golden-eyed ape, then turned his sinister gaze towards Yang Lin.

“Him! Uncle-master, he’s the one who stole my thunderwolf!” As soon as he appeared, Li Long, who was by Yang Lin’s side, instantly pointed towards him and shouted loudly.

Hong Yin’s sudden appearance caused everyone present to feel slightly startled. Even that black-robed man, who had remained silent this entire time, raised his head slightly at this moment, seeming to let out a small sound of surprise as he stared at Hong Yin weighingly.

Yang Lin looked at Hong Yin, his gaze serious. He subtly rubbed the ring on his left hand, then said in a solemn voice, “Who are you? Why are you opposing my Beast Taming School?”

“If you are of the Beast Taming School, then there’s nothing for me to say to you.” A hint of savagery flashed past Hong Yin’s eyes. “So die!”

As soon as his words came out, Hong Yin suddenly kicked off from the ground, moving like a gust of wind as he charged towards Yang Lin.

Yang Lin had been prepared this entire time. As soon as Hong Yin moved, he immediately waved his left hand, causing a soulbeast that looked like a rhinoceros to suddenly appear by his side. Bellowing, it lowered its head and stampeded towards Hong Yin. At the same time, as if by an unspoken order, the giant golden-eyed ape swung out its long, thick arms as it assaulted Hong Yin.

“A middle-grade fifth level sharpshrike rhino!” Hong Yin’s eyes flashed. His body paused, then he leaped into the air, easily flipping past the head of the charging sharpshrike rhino. In midair, he agilely twisted his body, dodging the slamming blows of the enormous ape’s palms. As he fell past the giant ape’s waist, his right leg suddenly tapped out, causing a small tornado that one could see with the naked eye to form beneath his foot. Hong Yin leapt off the tornado, suddenly flashing past the ape’s waist while pushing out with his twin hands in a seemingly soft way on the ape’s body.

Immediately afterwards...the incomparably enormous body of the giant golden-eyed ape seemed to have bound by a soft, gentle wind as it rose into the sky. Struggling fiercely, it was pushed away by several tens of meters, towards the direction of a small creek.

“Xiao Tang!” Hong Yin called softly, and a white figure scurried out from his shoulder, landing on the ape’s shoulder in the blink of an eye.

Ka-thunk! Water sprayed everywhere. As everyone watched, dazed, the mid-stage fifth-tier giant golden-eyed ape was effortlessly and gently pushed by Hong Yin into the river.

After pushing away the ape, Hong Yin didn’t hesitate at all. He suddenly leapt up again in midair, a wind swirling and howling slightly around his body as he instantly flew before the amazed



Yang Lin. His right hand struck out, and a white dagger suddenly appeared in his hand, stabbing straight towards Yang Lin!

However, just as his right hand was striking out, his face suddenly changed. Not hesitating at all, he abandoned his attack, instead sweeping his arm towards the right, so as to block the palm that was attacking him.

The white dagger and the black figure's palm connected. A clear metallic ringing sound was actually heard, and after the collision, a wave of power blasted out between the two, causing everyone in the area to be forced to take several steps back. When they raised their heads to stare at what had happened, they saw that both figures had flown several meters back and were staring at each other.

Boom! An explosion could be heard coming from the small river. Water sprayed everywhere, and an enormous ball of water flew up from the river. Within the ball of water was the enormous trapped body of the giant golden-eyed ape. Only his enormous head was left at the very top of the ball. The giant ape was frantically brandishing its four appendages, but it wasn't able to escape the confines of the water ball in the slightest.

On the right shoulder of the giant ape was Xiao Tang, all the fur on his body standing upright. His body seemed to have been enlarged by a full size, and his little claws were constantly dancing in a manner which seemed to control the enormous ball of water.

Hong Yin didn't look at the situation on the river; rather, a serious look on his face, he stared at the black-robed figure in front of him. He gently flicked a few spots of blood from his dagger, then said in a cold voice, "So you are also of the Beast Taming School?"

The black-robed man's right hand, hidden behind his back, trembled slightly. A small hole had been punctured through his dark gold glove, and a hint of blood was leaking out.

"Bloodhowl Fang...Hong Yin, the Son of the Wolf...at such a

young age, you've actually reached the early-stage Soul Exalt level. What they say about you is true; you are truly a marvelous talent." A hoarse voice rang out from the black-robed man's throat, but it gave off an extremely cold, sinister vibe that prevented others from telling what age he was.

When these words came out, everyone's face changed. Yang Lin took several uncontrollable steps back. Staring at Hong Yin, he screeched, "Hong Yin! You are actually Hong Yin, the Son of the Wolf!"

"Hmph! And who are you!" Hong Yin let out a cold snort, clenching the dagger in his hands tightly. He took half a step forward, preparing an attacking stance.

"Stay your hands. Can it be that you want to fight with me here? If you and I were to fight at full power, I imagine that it the destruction of the Green Willow School would be just one of the side-effects. I imagine you don't wish this to occur, yes?" The black-robed man's voice was very calm. He glanced at the surrounding figures, then at the frowning Hong Yin. He continued, "In addition...do you really want to kill members of the Beast Taming School here? If members of the Beast Taming School are killed here on the grounds of the Green Willow School...what do you think will happen to it?"

His words instantly caused the faces of the Green Willow School members to change drastically. Mu Wanqing's face turned solemn, and she looked rather worriedly at Hong Yin.

A light flickered through Hong Yin's eyes, as though he had made his decision. A long moment later, he let out a soft sigh, then put away his dagger. Taking a single step, he instantly appeared by the small river. He stretched his right hand out, pushing it into the ball of water, gently patting it on the shoulder of the giant ape. The ball of water suddenly became empty! And then, he once more jumped off the air, taking back Xiao Tang with him as he returned to the side of the Green Willow clansmen.

“You...” Seeing that Hong Yin had actually taken away his giant golden-eyed ape, Yang Lin’s face changed. He was about to say something, but when he saw the barely-suppressed killing intent in Hong Yin’s eyes, his entire body trembled. He no longer dared to say a thing as he collected his sharpshooter rhino and, a gloomy look on his face, retreated to the black-robed man’s side.

The black-robed man swept everyone with a glance, then continued to speak in that hoarse, gravelly voice, “We have come here just for the sake of taking a person, not to cause too many other issues. As I see it...Headmaster Mu, you should hurry up and hand that person over.”

Yu Fei’s eyes flickered. Only now did he recover from his earlier state of shock. His eyes flashed several times, then he took a step forward and said loudly, “Exactly! Headmaster Mu, you should hand over this Bai Yunfei! Do not cause trouble between our schools for the sake of an outsider!”

Zhang Zhenshan took a step forward as well, a look of rage on his face as he said, “I cannot live under the same heavens with the person who killed my son! This was originally my personal affair; Headmaster Mu, have that Bai Yunfei come out to fight me alone, and I will deal with him myself and resolve our issues! Otherwise... even if it means becoming enemies with your Green Willow School, I am going to charge inside to take revenge!”

“Hmph! Fight him by yourself? A Soul Sprite wants to force a Soul Warrior to fight alone? I’m impressed at your lack of shamelessness in suggesting it!” Mu Wanqing frowned as she retorted with a cold snort.

“Headmaster Mu, if you stubbornly insist on protecting this person, then that means you are becoming enemies with my Glacial School. Then...don’t blame my school for showing no courtesy! Even if it means causing both sides to suffer, I am going to get justice for my clan’s elder!” Yu Fei had an extremely sinister look on his face as he spoke out angrily, and the Glacial School

members behind him drew their weapons in a savage manner.

The sound of longswords leaving the sheaths could be heard from the Green Willow School's side as well. The two sides stared at each other, weapons at the ready. The atmosphere was extremely, explosively tense right now.

“Zhang Zhenshan, I agree to fight with you!”

Right at this moment, a slightly angry voice rang out from behind the Green Willow School's side...and then a figure with a cold expression slowly walked out.

It was Bai Yunfei!

# Chapter 80: Seven Day Agreement

---

“Zhang Zhenshan, I agree to fight with you!”

Just as the two sides were facing each other tensely with drawn swords, and as battle was about to erupt...Bai Yunfei flew out from the crowd. He stood there by the side of Hong Yin, staring at Zhang Zhenshan with a cold look on his face.

His appearance caused both sides to feel startled. Zhang Zhenshan was the first to react. Upon seeing Bai Yunfei, Zhang Zhenshan's entire body began to shake, and his face began to contort with rage as hatred spat from his eyes. He roared furiously, “Brat, you actually dare to come out! Repay me for my son's life!”

“I can give you the thing you want.” Bai Yunfei saw that Zhang Zhenshan was about to charge out, and so he said these words calmly. As he did, he glanced sideways out of the corner of his eyes towards Yu Fei, who was behind Zhang Zhenshan.

Yu Fei had been staring at Bai Yunfei speculatively as soon as he had stepped out. Upon hearing Bai Yunfei's calm words, a light flashed through his eyes. He reached out to stop Zhang Zhenshan, then stared at Bai Yunfei and said, “Kid, what do you mean by that?”

“Both of us know what I mean by that...right?” Bai Yunfei laughed softly. “I agree to duel Zhang Zhenshan by myself, and if I lose, I'll let you dispose of me as you please, as well as give you the thing you want. But if I win...you must give me back my Glacial Pricker! In addition...this matter has nothing to do with the Green Willow School. In the future, you cannot cause problems for them!”

Yu Fei was slightly startled. He stared at Bai Yunfei for a long time, thoughts flickering through his eyes. Finally, he said in a low voice, “Do you speak the truth?”

Bai Yunfei swept his gaze towards everyone present, then said in a clear voice, “Everyone from the Green Willow School and the Glacial School are present, as well as senior You from the Wood School and the members of the Beast Taming School. They are all witnesses! I shall fight Zhang Zhenshan in a fair battle and resolve our private feud. Who lives and who dies shall depend on each person’s own strength!”

And then, he turned to look at Yu Fei anew. “However...I do have a requirement.”

“What requirement?” Yu Fei raised an eyebrow and asked.

“Seven days. After seven days, we shall gather here again and fight to the death!” Bai Yunfei stared at Yun Fei, saying these words one word at a time.

This time, Yu Fei just pondered for a brief instant before nodding. “Fine! It shall be as you request! Seven days later, we’ll make a wager with lives and the things each of us want. You shall battle our Elder Zhang by yourself! However...you had best not be planning on fleeing. If you do not appear, then I shall consider your debt as now belonging to the Green Willow School.

Bai Yunfei nodded slightly. “So mote it be!”

Yu Fei led the Glacial School’s men in a slow departure. The black-robed man gave Bai Yunfei a reflective glance, then turned and left as well. Yang Lin glanced at Hong Yin with a gaze filled with venomous hatred, but in the end he was unwillingly forced to depart with the black-robed man, slowly disappearing into the distance.

“Yunfei, you were too rash. How can you make an agreement with them like this? The enemy is at the Soul Sprite stage. How can you win...” Hong Yin looked at the silent Bai Yunfei whose head was lowered, then said these words in quite a worried manner.

Mu Wanqing dismissed her disciples, then walked over alongside You Qingfeng to Bai Yunfei. “Indeed, Yunfei. You didn’t have to appear; although they had many experts, we had Hong Yin and Qingfeng on our side. They wouldn’t necessarily have dared to act rashly.”

Bai Yunfei gently shook his head, then clasped his fists in a salute towards Mu Wanqing. He said with sincerity, “Thank you, Headmaster Mu and senior You, for having done your utmost to protect me. However, if I did not appear, then I probably would have brought harm to the Green Willow School. Even if just some small-scale fights break out, if so much as a single person dies or is injured because of me, I will never feel at ease.”

Qiu Luliu pulled Chu Yuhe over. Both of them looked towards Bai Yunfei in a very worried manner, and Qiu Luliu said, “But you truly shouldn’t have agreed to battle Zhang Zhenshan! You aren’t even a late-stage Soul Warrior; how can you beat him?! This buys you seven days at most...why don’t you seize this opportunity to flee? Let big brother Hong Yin take you away. So long as you can leave Azure Cloud Province, given how vast the world is, there’s no way they’ll be able to find you.”

“I can’t do that. Didn’t you hear the last thing they said? If I were to flee, I would have brought trouble to the Green Willow School.” Bai Yunfei shook his head, then said with a laugh, “Don’t worry. Since I’ve agreed, I naturally have a degree of confidence. I won’t necessarily lose...”

“Oh? Young friend Yunfei, can it be that you have a way to win?” You Qingfeng raised an elegant eyebrow and asked curiously.

“Mm, well...I do indeed have a method to raise my power quickly in a short period of time...this was taught to me by senior Gu Yiyun.” Bai Yunfei hesitated a moment, then decided to explain by using Gu Yiyun as his excuse.

“Senior Ancient Blue taught you...?” Hong Yin had a puzzled look

on his face. Suddenly, he seemed to have thought of something, and his entire face changed. “Can it be...a type of soul skill that allows you to explode forth with power of a higher level? You can’t! You can’t activate this sort of soul skill! After using it, your power level will decline, and you will even pay a price of using up your life energy. You are merely at the Soul Warrior stage; you want to use a soul skill like this?! If you do so, even if you defeat Zhang Zhenshan, your life will be ruined!”

Hong Yin’s reaction caused everyone present to be stunned, then turn towards Bai Yunfei with looks of amazement. A light flashed in You Qingfeng’s eyes in particular as an idea seemed to flash through his mind.

Upon hearing Hong Yin’s words, Bai Yunfei was momentarily stunned as well. He lowered his head, thoughts flickering through his eyes. Clearly, Hong Yin had gotten the wrong idea. However... this was the first time he had ever even heard of a soul skill like this. After pondering for a few moments, Bai Yunfei lifted his head, still smiling. “Big brother Hong Yin, you are worrying too much. Things aren’t as serious as you say. Don’t worry; I told you, I have a degree of confidence. I definitely won’t use my future as the price.”

“You...” Upon seeing the calm look on Bai Yunfei’s face, in the end Hong Yin shook his head helplessly. “Fine. Since you’ve already made your decision, I won’t say anything else. If there’s anything I can help with, just tell me.”

“Alright. In fact, I really do have some matters I need you to help me with, big brother Hong Yin. Heh heh. Let’s go back now and stop standing here in the gateway,” Bai Yunfei laughed, then turned towards Mu Wanqing. “For the sake of the battle seven days from now, I want to go into seven days of closed-door meditation. I would like to ask Headmaster Mu to help arrange that for me.”

“No problem. I will make the arrangements and ensure that none



of my disciples go to your courtyard to disturb you.”

Green Willow City. The Long estate.

The black-robed man, Yang Lin, Yu Fei, and the others were all seated within the main hall. The atmosphere was rather gloomy, and everyone seemed to have their own thoughts.

“Senior Yan Xi, you really can’t act against Hong Yin? He took away my Giant Goldeye Ape...” Finally, Yang Lin became the one to break the silence in the hall as he sent a question to the black-robed man. Only now did Yu Fei and the others learn that this mysterious black-robed man was named Yan Xi, and that he was most likely not of the Beast Taming School. But...what was his identity and status, then? Why did he arrive alongside someone of the Beast Taming School who was on a mission to recruit the Glacial School?”

Yan Xi gave Yang Lin a glance, then shook his head. “The adopted son of the Bloodhowl Wolf King...I imagine you know quite a few things about him. You had best just forget about it. There’s no way I’ll fight with him. Although we are both early-stage Soul Exalts, even if I let loose with all of my power, I wouldn’t be a match for him. I have this much self-awareness, at least! You should be celebrating the fact that I stopped him; otherwise, you’d be dead already.”

Yang Lin’s facial expression turned rigid. Although he was unwilling to admit it, he knew this person was speaking the truth. In the end, he could only let out a helpless sigh, then lower his head and say nothing more.

“Tomorrow, you shall leave this place. Otherwise...if you run into him later, you might not survive it,” Yan Xi said, still looking at Yang Lin.

Yang Lin was startled. “Eh? Senior Yan Xi, you won’t be leaving with us?”

“I’m slightly interested in the duel seven days from now. I’ll regroup with you at our next destination after it concludes.” After speaking, Yan Xi turned to look towards Yu Fei. He said calmly, “Headmaster Yu, I have a question; are you truly seeking Bai Yunfei just to take revenge for the death of Elder Zhan’s son?”

Yu Fei’s hand, which was holding onto a cup of tea, trembled momentarily. A look flashed through his eyes, and then he looked towards Yan Xi with quite a bit of fear as he said, “Senior, we are indeed pursuing him for the sake of getting revenge on behalf of the slain son of Elder Zhang. However...I do not dare deceive you; aside from this, we...want to acquire something that he has.”

“Oh? What?”

“A crimson longspear; it should be a low-grade earth-ranked soul armament.”

“Earth-tier soul armament...yes, that would indeed be worth you sending out the full force of your school to go seize it...” Yan Xi lowered his head slightly, seeming to reflect on Yan Xi’s words. “So that’s the terms of your wager? Then what is this ‘Glacial Pricker’ of which he spoke?”

Yu Fei’s heartrate began to quicken. Putting on a look of not daring to hide the truth, he brought out the Glacial Pricker, then walked forward and offered it with both hands to Yan Xi. He said solemnly, “Elder Zhang seized this Glacial Pricker from him when he was chasing after him. I imagine it is very important to him, which is why he wants it back...”

Yan Xi accepted the Glacial Pricker, glanced at it, then handed it back in a rather uncaring manner. He said quite disdainfully, “Merely a human-tier soul armament. Given that he cares about it this much, it probably has some special meaning for him.”

Yu Fei accepted the Glacial Pricker, letting out a secret sigh of relief inside. He didn’t reveal it on his face, however, as he walked back and sat down again. He pondered for a moment, then

instructed his subordinates, “For the next few days, keep a close eye on the area surrounding the Green Willow School. If Bai Yunfei seizes this chance to flee, report it to me immediately!”

“Elder Liu, what do you think is the reason why Bai Yunfei suggested a seven day grace period? To buy himself time to escape? Or does he have something else planned?” Yu Fei glanced at the nearby Liu Cheng, who seemed to have something on his mind, then asked him this question in a rather puzzled manner.

Liu Cheng shook his head. “I don’t know either. However, the reason he stood up was because he didn’t want to implicate the Green Willow School; thus, I imagine he wouldn’t plan on fleeing. He knows he isn’t a match for Elder Zhang, but he still plans to fight. What is he...”

“Hmph, he just wants to rely on soul skill which allow him to instantly raise his power. Aside from that, what else could it be?” Upon hearing their conversation, Yang Lin let out a soft snort and said disdainfully, “That ignorant child. Given his current power, if he truly does use such a soul skill, I imagine that even if he wins, he will either perish or be crippled. However...with Hong Yin present...perhaps he might have some special abilities to...bah, in short, even if he does have enough power to fight with you, so long as you keep the fight going for a long period of time, the backlash from using that technique alone will be enough to ensure his defeat!”

Zhang Zhenshan, upon hearing these words, seemed to have suddenly realized what was happening. He let out a cold snort, then said with a savage expression, “No matter what method he uses, I definitely won’t let him die so easily! I am going to ensure that he tastes what it is like to be living a life worse than death... and only then will I kill him as an offering to my son!”

Green Willow School. Bai Yunfei’s courtyard.

Bai Yunfei had returned to his room, then quietly remained

inside for an hour. Only then did he once more re-emerge as he walked to Hong Yin's nearby room.

“Big brother Hong Yin, there's something I would like to ask you to help me with...”

# Chapter 81: Frantically Rising in Power

---

The Green Willow Sect. Within the western wing courtyard.

Bai Yunfei had returned to his room, then quietly remained inside for an hour. Only then did he once more re-emerge as he walked to Hong Yin’s nearby room.

“Big brother Hong Yin, there’s something I would like to ask you to help me with...”

Hong Yin brought him into the room, then sat down and smiled. “Yunfei, I was planning to go find you. I want to give you something.”

Bai Yunfei was startled. “Something for me? What?”

Hong Yin nodded slightly. Waving his arm, he made a crimson bracer appear, then offered it to Bai Yunfei. “This. I’m giving it to you as a gift.”

Bai Yunfei, slightly puzzled, accepted the bracer, then in a practiced manner sent his thoughts into it.

Equipment Grade: High Rare

Defense: 465

Upgrade Requirement: 78 Soulpoints

The information that appeared in his mind caused Bai Yunfei to feel startled. He cried out involuntarily, “A high-human tier soul armament!”

“Eh?” This time, it was Hong Yin’s turn to be slightly startled. He looked at Bai Yunfein in surprise. “Yunfei, you just gave it a single glance, but you were able to tell its rank?”

Bai Yunfei came back to his senses. Without answering the question, he asked in surprise, “Big brother Hong Yin, you are

going to give it to me?”

Hong Yin nodded. “Right. I have no soul skill scrolls on me, and I imagine that in the next few days, you won’t have any time to train in soul skills. I acquired this bracer by accident, and I’m now giving it to you. I imagine that it should be of help to you in your duel seven days from now.”

“Well...” Bai Yunfei was rather hesitant.

“Don’t decline. You’ve addressed me as ‘big brother’; there’s nothing untoward about me giving you an item. What you need to do is work hard to improve your combat power, so as to better deal with your battle seven days from now. Worry about other matters later...” Hong Yin forestalled Bai Yunfei’s words with a laugh and this explanation.

Bai Yunfei looked at the smiling Hong Yin. He was silent for a long moment, but in the end he accepted and put away the bracer, then said with sincerity, “Then...many thanks, big brother Hong Yin!”

Hong Yin nodded lightly, then asked, “Right...you said you needed my help? Whatever you need from me, just tell me.”

Bai Yunfei didn’t beat around the bush. He said seriously, “Right. I want to ask you to go help me buy a few things.”

“Buy a few things? Buy what?” Hong Yin said, puzzled.

Bai Yunfei nodded. “Weapons and jewelry. Sabers, swords, daggers, knives, bracelets, rings...I want to ask you to help me buy them. The more the better. I need at least a few hundred!”

Hong Yin was momentarily startled. He stared at Bai Yunfei in a very strange way. “Yunfei, are you joking with me? Why do you want to buy these things at a time like this?”

Bai Yunfei wasn’t joking around at all. A very serious look on his face, he said, “Big brother Hong Yin, this is extremely important to me. It involves my duel seven days from now! This is a secret of

mine. I trust you, and so I am asking you to help me, big brother Hong Yin. For now, I can't explain it clearly, but in short...after this matter is concluded, I'll explain to you in detail. Alright?"

Hong Yin frowned slightly. As he looked at the serious Bai Yunfei, he pondered for a moment, then relaxed and nodded. "Fine! Yunfei, I'll do as you ask! Although I don't know what you are planning, I have a feeling that you are going to bring me a surprise, right?"

Bai Yunfei laughed lightly. "I think...I won't disappoint you, big brother Hong Yin."

Late night. Within the quiet courtyard in the west wing. Bai Yunfei quietly sat on his bed, staring at the black ring within his hand.

This was something which Hong Yin had brought back for him after having gone out in the afternoon; it was part of his 'equipment'. This interspatial ring had an extremely large storage space; it contained hundreds of weapons and jewelry within it. The first time he had mentally swept the insides of the interspatial ring, even Bai Yunfei himself couldn't help but take a deep breath. The amount within...he wondered if Hong Yin had perhaps completely wiped out the inventories of all the weapon shops and jewelry shops within the city.

After pondering for a time, Bai Yunfei put the ring on his finger, then took out from within the ring the bracer which Hong Yin had gifted to him.

The bracer was completely crimson; it was rather similar to the Firetipped Spear in that regard. It was plainly designed, without any decorations. It was very smooth, and even in the darkness of the night, it radiated a hint of light. After carefully observing it for a period of time, Bai Yunfei put the bracer on his right arm, pushing it past his wrist and up to his right elbow. It protected nearly the entirety of his lower arm, and it felt rather soft and

elastic. He filled with just a hint of his soulforce, and could sense the his lower arm clench slightly. The bracer was now completely pressed against his lower arm, and a surge of heat came from it, giving Bai Yunfei a sense of greater power.

He experimentally waved his right arm a few times. It didn't feel the least bit uncomfortable. He pulled out a dagger, then hacked down towards the bracer strongly...and the dagger snapped. The bracer wasn't even marked.

He nodded slightly, a look of delight appearing on his face. "With this...my strength has improved yet again. Then...I'll upgrade it first."

Roughly ten minutes later.

Upgrade Successful

Equipment Grade: High Rare  
Upgrade Level: +10  
Defense: 465  
Additional Defense: 253

+10 Additional Effect: When blocking, there is a 9% chance of absorbing and converting the attack power into personal attack power, releasing it with your next attack.

(It can be held for 3 seconds. The amount of converted attack power cannot exceed the defensive strength of this item.)

Upgrade Requirement: 78 Soulpoints

"It can absorb and convert attacks? Does that mean...that not only can it block attacks, it can make an enemy's power my own for a time? Good, good! At a critical moment, it can produce a wondrous effect!" Bai Yunfei's eyes were shining. After carefully scrutinizing the item, he put away the bracer, then rubbed his



forehead, a slightly tired look on his face. “I used up more than half of my soulforce. Then...I’ll continue. Next I’ll upgrade ordinary items en masse. No matter what...I need to increase my power as much as I can within the next seven days!”

He picked up a shortsword, glancing at it, then murmured mentally, “Upgrade.”

Several minutes later.

Upgrade Failed
Equipment Destroyed

Bai Yunfei’s eyes focused. Before the shortsword transformed into scrap metal and dissipated, he put it back within his interspatial ring, then pulled out a three-foot long saber.

“Upgrade!”

Continuous upgrading. After having destroyed eight items, Bai Yunfei’s soulforce was finally used up, and he fell down onto the bed.

Roughly five hours later, the comfortably sleeping Bai Yunfei’s fingers twitched slightly. He then slowly opened his eyes, once more standing up. He lifted up his arms, massaging his temples, a slight frown on his face, as though he were in pain.

“Forcibly waking myself up really feels quite miserable...” Bai Yunfei mumbled these words, then shook his head and withdrew a shortsword from his interspatial ring. “But...this isn’t the time to complain. Since I’ve decided, I need to go all out!”

“Upgrade!”

After another ten minutes or so, Bai Yunfei had once more exhausted his soulforce. He collapsed onto the bed.

By the time he once more woke up, it was already day. Not resting at all, he immediately grabbed another weapon and continued to upgrade.

Upgrade. Faint. Wake. Upgrade.

This was a continuous cycle. Like a man possessed, Bai Yunfei ignored all consequences as he frantically worked to increase his power.

After he had killed Zhang Yang, Bai Yunfei's only thoughts had been of avoiding conflict and fleeing. He wanted to carefully flee out of Azure Cloud Province and escape the attacks of his pursuers. But now...since he could no longer flee, his only choice was to fight with all his power!

Thus, Bai Yunfei had used this method of frantically increasing his power, a method he had never before dared to use. Even though the repercussions were unknown, he needed to grow stronger, stronger, stronger! Strong enough to defeat the foes who were chasing him, and then openly leave Azure Cloud Province!

Time passed, one day at a time. The door to Bai Yunfei's room had remained shut this entire time. He had prepared much sustenance prior to this, and so he didn't even need people to send food. Chu Yuhe, Qiu Luliu, Mu Wanqing, and You Qingfeng would often come stand outside of the courtyard in the west wing, but they didn't disturb him. They would just stand there for a while, softly ask Hong Yin, who had been standing out guard this entire time, if there had been any noticeable changes, then leave.

Hong Yin had remained on guard outside the courtyard this entire time. He watched as time slipped onwards, and he felt extremely worried in his heart. For the sake of not disturbing Bai Yunfei, he had never tried to find out what was going on inside. All he could do was sense in a vague way that Bai Yunfei's aura seemed to be constantly growing in strength at a very strange rate...but nothing dangerous seemed to be happening, and so he just waited

quietly, prepared to deal with any sudden emergencies as necessary.

Upgrade Successful

Equipment Grade: Superior  
Upgrade Level: +10  
Additional Attribute: +33 Strength  
  
+10 Additional Effect: +150 Strength to the arm wearing this item.  
  
Upgrade Requirement: 22 Soulpoints

Yet another upgrade success. The information which entered Bai Yunfei’s mind caused his eyes to light up. In fact, for a moment he forgot how tired he was. Staring at the amber bracelet in his hand, he revealed a look of delight on his face. “Strength increase! Excellent! This is an effect I’ve needed this entire time!”

He put away the bracelet. As he temporarily lost control of his emotions, a sense of absolute exhaustion flooded his mind. Bai Yunfei hurriedly gritted his teeth, once more picking up another ring, one which flashed with red light.

“I’m about to hit my limit again soon. How many points did I use up? I’m somewhat unsure...nearly 2000 soulpoints, right? I can feel as though I’m about to break into the late-stage Soul Warrior level...”

“I have four more days left...I wonder how many soulpoints are needed for the Soul Sprit stage. In short...I need to continue!”

“Upgrade!”

Upgrade Failed

Bai Yunfei subconsciously put away the destroyed equipment, then picked out another item.

“Eh? What was the earlier upgrade at? Was it +9 or it was it +10? I don’t even remember...I’m at my limit again. It doesn’t matter...I need to seize every instant!”

“Upgrade!”

At the beginning, Bai Yunfei had intentionally put away some of the items he had been lucky enough to upgrade to +10. Towards the end, however, the constant upgrade process had become almost an automatic, robotic decision. Upgrade. Upgrade again. Destruction. Switch item. Upgrade again. In fact, he wasn’t even sure how many upgrades he had performed, or what upgrade level he had reached. All of the items he had upgraded were beginning to slowly blur together.

All he knew was a single thing – that he was to continue upgrading. He would feel as the soulforce in his power slowly was used up until depletion, at which point he would pass out. After waking up, he would verify the time, then continue upgrading...

Day after day, night after night...seven days passed in the blink of an eye like this!

# Chapter 82: Essence Fireseed, Equipment Mutation

---

Day after day, night after night...seven days passed in the blink of an eye!

Dawn. The appointed day. Bai Yunfei once more awoke from his stupor. After mentally adjusting himself, he glanced at the skies outside, then lowered his head. He raised his right hand, clenching it strongly, then shut his eyes again, carefully sensing things.

A moment later, Bai Yunfei once more opened his eyes, a hint of surprise in them. But then, he frowned once more, a look of worry appearing.

“I need just a bit more. I can sense that with just a bit more, I’ll enter the Soul Sprite stage! But I’m caught at this critical juncture...will I have enough time?” Thoughts flashed through Bai Yunfei’s eyes as he considered the current situation. “Most importantly of all...at the Soul Sprite stage, for my soul’s elemental attribute, I’ve already decided to choose fire, but if something changes...”

“Still, the next stage is right before me. If I stop now and fight Zhang Zhenshan as a late-stage Soul Warrior...” Bai Yunfei’s frown grew even deeper as he mentally struggled with what to do. Moments later, a vicious look on his face, he revealed a hint of determination and madness in his eyes. “If I’m going to do it, then I’m going to do it all the way! I made my decision seven days ago; how can I shirk back at the final instant! I have a few more hours before the afternoon...I can do this!”

Waving his wrist, he pulled out a long saber, swept it with his gaze, then murmured softly to himself, “Upgrade!”

In an incomparably practiced manner, he spent tens of minutes upgrading items before finally exhausting his soulforce and

passing out on his bed.

The sun slowly rose. Hints of sunlight seeped through his thin window screen, shining into his room. One hour. Two hours...

Slowly, the little room seemed to begin to change slightly.

Bai Yunfei still seemed to be asleep on the bed. His breathing was regular, and there was nothing strange about it. Then...what was different?

As time flowed on, the difference in the room became more and more apparent...it was the light!

Under the bright light of the sun, the room should have been illuminated already. But at some point in time, a faint red light stealthily appeared, growing increasingly apparent. It slowly deepened into a crimson color, and then other colors slowly began to emerge as well. The colors appeared out of nowhere, increasing in number and richness. Towards the end, the entire room had transformed into a rainbow color...and then the light slowly began to flow about. Moments later, all of the light focused in one region; the region around Bai Yunfei!

After spending some time swirling around and 'inspecting' Bai Yunfei, finally a hint of crimson light slowly left the 'squad' of light and gracefully flew towards his chest, then slowly merged into his body.

Its actions seemed to serve as a signal, instantly causing all the other colors in the surrounding area to begin to move in unison as they flew towards Bai Yunfei. They approached every part of his body, then slowly moved in.

More and more light fused into his body, and more and more light appeared out of nowhere. Slowly, Bai Yunfei's body began to change. His forehead began to slowly furrow and tighten. Towards the end, his face was completely contorted and twisted, as though he were under immense pain. His fists were clenched, and his

entire body was trembling slightly.

If Hong Yin were present, he would have been able to tell with a glance...that this was advancement into the Soul Sprite stage!

However, Bai Yunfei's current situation was tremendously different compared to most Soul Warriors advancing in power.

When Soul Warriors reached the limit of their power, after accumulating enough soulforce, the natural elemental energy of heaven and earth would be summoned, at which point they would decide to enter the Soul Sprite stage. First, they would choose their elemental essence affinity, and most would choose the type they were most suited towards. But of course, some would choose two types or even more. Those who made such decisions were either unearthly geniuses...or peerless fools. Because there was an element of choice, when the natural elemental energy of heaven and earth was summoned, when the flesh was being baptized for the first time, only the type of elemental energy that one had chosen would appear. It would merge into the body, then become the elemental essence energy for the wielder.

But there had never been, from ancient days until today, a situation where a Soul Warrior who was advancing to the Soul Sprite stage was in a state of unconsciousness...

Elemental energy entered his body, entered every inch of Bai Yunfei's body as it was being tempered. However, because Bai Yunfei was unconscious and unable to voluntarily 'choose' which sort of elemental energy he wanted, this current situation appeared, where a mishmash of energies was entering. His right arm was crimson; this was the fire element. His left leg was ashen white; this was the ice element. His left arm was golden yellow; this was the metal element...

Bai Yunfei's body began to shake harder and harder, and more and more agony appeared on his face. Beads of sweat constantly fell down from his forehead. If this were to continue...this random

mishmash of elemental energy alone would be enough to tear his body completely apart.

“Aaaah!”

Finally, a miserable cry rang out from Bai Yunfei’s throat. He suddenly opened his eyes. This time...he didn’t ‘voluntarily’ wake up; he was tormented awake by a bone-deep pain that came from throughout his body!

His mind was completely blank for a moment. By the time he regained his senses, he saw all the types of light before him which were merging into his body...followed by a series of nearly coma-inducing pain that came from virtually every part of his body.

“This is...elemental energy of heaven and earth!” Bai Yunfei gritted his teeth, thinking frantically, “But why is there so much of it! What’s going on...right! My choice! I need to choose!”

He knew that the most important thing right now was being calm. Bai Yunfei suppressed his agony, shut his eyes, and began to investigate the state of his body.

Chaos. It was utterly chaotic. The soulforce in his body was like an untamed stallion that had become unleashed. It was bounding everywhere without any pattern, with some of it seeming to pull in the power from the outside world into the body, and some of it strongly resisting and pushing back against that power.

“I can’t control it. I can’t control it! What should I do...what should I do?!” Bai Yunfei’s sweat continued to grow, and the worry in his heart was incomparable. He swept his left arm with his sense...then let out a surprised, “Eeee? My right arm doesn’t feel uncomfortable at all. This is...fire!”

“Fire! I can control it! This is what I want...I just want fire element. The rest of you can all beat it!” The situation in Bai Yunfei’s right arm caused him to feel surprised and delighted. Without hesitating at all, he controlled the elemental fire in his



right arm, pushing it out to spread throughout his entire body, seizing the ‘territory’ which the other types of elements had taken over.

The reason why all sorts of elemental energy had flooded into his body earlier was because he had been passed out. Now that he had regained his consciousness and was voluntarily choosing fire, his body began to reject the other types of elemental energy. A short while later, Bai Yunfei was finally able to drive out the other types of elemental energy, and the rainbow of colors surrounding his body seemed to have lost their guide. The colors slowly vanished, leaving behind just a crimson color that swirled around Bai Yunfei, slowly fusing into his body.

“Whew...” He could feel the agony racking his body gradually lessen and then vanish. What replaced it was a warm, comfortable feeling. Bai Yunfei finally let out a sigh of relief, and a look of delight appeared in his eyes. It was as though he had finally escaped danger.

Soulforce circulated throughout his body. One ball of elemental fire after another merged into it. Bai Yunfei could sense a series of blazing surges of energy constantly wash through every part of his body, and with each pass, he felt as though he could sense his body grow slightly more powerful.

Slowly, after the blazing energy within his body had made several loops within it, all the blazing energy gathered at one of the apertures within his heart. Soul cultivators termed this aperture as the ‘essence aperture’; as the name suggested, it was the place used to store the elemental essence of a Soul Sprite. When advancing from the Soul Warrior level, gathering elemental essence was the final step; after the body was tempered for the first time, the body would be able to receive its first batch of elemental energy, and it would automatically gather the energy into the body, slowly circulate it, then finally form it into the ‘elemental essence-seed’ that would accompany the soul cultivator for his entire life.

Bai Yunfei could sense that all of the elemental fire within his body was slowly concentrating around his heart. A 'hot' feeling slowly grew stronger, as though...a seed of fire was beginning to form within his body. It constantly absorb all of the oncoming elemental fire, and it slowly grew larger, larger, larger...

More and more elemental energy appeared out of nowhere, and more and more of it flooded into his body, gathering at his heart. More and more...perhaps too more?

By the time the fireseed in his body had grown to the size of a thumb, Bai Yunfei had slowly come to the realization that something was wrong. He felt as though...he was growing 'too hot'?

The earlier warmth had grown increasingly great, transforming into a fiery heat that then transformed once more into a scorching blaze.

"This isn't right! It feels...as though I'm unable to control it! It's too much. Too much!" He discovered, to his terror, that he was actually becoming unable to control the elemental fire that was being absorbed into his body!

The result which Bai Yunfei feared the most was happening; because of how frantically he had increased his soulforce, the process by which he had advanced past the Soul Warrior stage and charged into the Soul Sprite stage caused this process of forming a fireseed, what should have been a simple and easy process, to mutate!

He was unable to control the complete essence fireseed!

He stared at the world, which now appeared completely crimson. He could feel the blazing, scorching heat within his body, and a look of panic appeared in his eyes. "I'm almost at my limit! If this continues, I'm going to be burned to death by the elemental fire! What should I do? What should I do?! I'm almost unable to endure this amount of elemental fire! Wait...right! Share it! The fire...

Firetipped Spear!”

When this thought flashed through his mind, Bai Yunfei’s eyes lit up. Not hesitating at all, he lifted up his right hand slightly, and with a thought he caused the Firetipped Spear to appear in his hand. Instantly, Bai Yunfei could notice the elemental fire within his body hesitate slightly...and in the next moment, Bai Yunfei seized back just a bit of control and forced a pulse of elemental fire into the Firetipped Spear.

It was as though a barrel that had been completely filled with water had suddenly sprung a leak. The continuously expanding fireseed within Bai Yunfei’s heart actually did as he wanted, sending a pulse of elemental fire out through his arm and into the Firetipped Spear.

“It works!” Bai Yunfei was overjoyed. He could feel the pain in his body gradually begin to ebb. A thought flashed through his eyes, and he pressed his left hand against his ring on his right finger. That crimson bracer also appeared on his hand. Not hesitating at all, he pushed it onto his right arm.

The blazing pain within his body dropped once more, and Bai Yunfei let out a sigh of relief. Not daring to relax at all, he hurriedly controlled the constantly expanding fireseed in his heart to guide its energy out, restricting its size to roughly the size of an infant’s fist.

Strands of elemental fire essence flowed out from the developing fireseed, carrying streams of elemental fire. Under Bai Yunfei’s control, it flowed through his right arm, into the bracer and into the Firetipped Spear.

Both soul items were gleaming now, and were now beginning to throb as though they had their own heartbeat. Because the bracer came first in the sequence, it absorbed the most amount of elemental energy, and so the light of the Firetipped Spear was slightly dimmer. These two soul items, thanks to Bai Yunfei’s

actions to reduce the risk to himself, were quietly beginning to change...

After an unknown period of time that could've been anywhere from a few minutes to an extremely long period of time, the surrounding red light had finally been completely absorbed into Bai yunfei's body, causing the entire room to once more return to its usual situation. However, a lingering warmth remained within the air...

Bai Yunfei slowly opened his eyes. He wanted to sit up, but multiple notifications flashed through his mind that caused him to forget all of his actions due to surprise.

Upgrade Successful
Upgrade Successful
Upgrade Successful

# Chapter 83: The Changes in the Two Items

Three consecutive ‘upgrade success’ notifications appeared in his mind, causing Bai Yunfei to be stunned for more than ten seconds. Only then did he suddenly come to his senses and sit up.

He placed the Firetipped Spear before him, then sent his senses into it.

Equipment Grade: Middle Legacy

Upgrade Level: +11

Attack: 859

Additional Attack: 563

+10 Additional Effect: When thrusting, there is a 15% chance to cause an explosion

Upgrade Requirement: 90 Soulpoints

Bai Yunfei stared at the Firetipped Spear in his hand, his mind seeming to have exploded. “Middle-grade Legacy! It rose in quality! There were changes in both its secondary effect and attributes... and its upgrade level increased as well!”

“Eeee? Wait a second...” The stunned Bai Yunfei paused. “+11? It only increased by a single level? But I clearly heard three notifications of ‘upgrade success’. That means...”

He turned his gaze slightly to look at the crimson bracer. Bai Yunfei gently pressed his left hand atop it, then sent his mind into it.

Equipment Grade: Low Legacy

Upgrade Level: +12

Defense: 613

Additional Defense: 605

+10 Additional Effect: +10 Additional Effect: When blocking, there is a 9% chance of absorbing and converting the attack power into personal attack power, releasing it with your next attack.

(It can be held for 3 seconds. The amount of converted attack power cannot exceed the defensive strength of this item.)

+12 Additional Effect: By using soulpoints, summon a flaming winged dagger. While in use, it will consume soulpoints. The power is determined by the number of soulpoints used.

Upgrade Requirement: 86 Soulpoints

Bai Yunfei stared dazedly at the two soul armaments for dozens of seconds, then sat up, closed his eyes, and took two deep breaths. Finally, he calmed down his frantically beating heart.

“Not only did the quality increase, the upgrade level also increased by one level and two levels respectively...they didn’t fail!” Bai Yunfei gently stroked the two soul armaments, both excited and extremely puzzled. “But...I clearly didn’t issue an upgrade order. Can it be...that it was because I used it to share the burden of elemental fire?”

Bai Yunfei subconsciously rubbed his chest. Within his chest, there was a ball of fire that was like a heart, slowly pulsing.

“What a strange feeling. It feels as though my entire body is filled with elemental fire, and I can sense the elemental fire of the surrounding world...” Bai Yunfei raised his left arm, swinging it through the air as though pushing at something, then once more shut his eyes, attuning to his surroundings.

“The elemental fire in the air feels so incomparably clear to me... and they feel very friendly...eeee? These are...living creatures?” While attuning, Bai Yunfei felt as though he could ‘see’ outside the room. There was a little bird resting atop a tree, and all sorts of

other little creatures living in the grass. Or perhaps, more strictly speaking, what he was sensing was their souls. This was the searching technique which only a person who had reached the Soul Sprite level could use; the soulsense.

“Eh? Someone’s outside? What a familiar feeling...it’s big brother Hong Yin and the others! They...right! This isn’t the time to be researching these things...” Bai Yunfei suddenly realized the most important thing right now. Lifting his head, he stared outside the window. It was already past noon; based on his agreement on that day, the Glacial School members had most likely arrived already...

By the time Bai Yunfei pushed his door open, he saw that outside the courtyard there were three people. There was Chu Yuhe and Qiu Luliu, looks of anxiety on their faces, and there was also Hong Yin, who was smiling while quietly consoling the two of them.

“Mm? Yunfei came. See? I told you, he’s fine...” Hong Yin, upon seeing Bai Yunfei walk out, first said a few words to the two women, then turned and nodded towards Bai Yunfei. “Yunfei, just now...you caused quite a stir. Fortunately, you calmed down afterwards; otherwise, I was at the verge of charging inside.”

Bai Yunfei chuckled towards them. “A small problem occurred during my training earlier, but I’m fine now. Don’t worry; I’m doing perfectly alright now.”

Hong Yin gave him a weighing gaze. “Yunfei, you actually...reached the Soul Sprite level? What sort of soul skills do you train in...how long can you maintain it for? Right...there’s no time to waste. Hurry up and go; the forces of the Glacial School have already arrived!”

He still was under the impression that Bai Yunfei had relied on a soul skills to forcibly increase his power for a short period of time. Bai Yunfei didn’t know how to explain, and upon hearing Hong Yin’s words, he lifted an eyebrow. A look flashed through his eyes,

and he no longer tried to explain. His hand around his Firetipped Spear clenched. “They arrived? Then we cannot let our ‘guests’ wait too long. Let’s go right now. We can talk after I win!”

We can talk after I win!

A sentence filled with confidence. It came from the powerful soulforce roiling in his body, it came from the powerful item in his hand! The current Bai Yunfei was filled with a desire for battle; in fact, he was rather impatient and eager to test his current level of power, as well as test the power of the two items which had inexplicably changed.

A simple sentence, but it caused Hong Yin and the other two to both feel shocked. They stared as Bai Yunfei strode boldly outwards. A hint of a strange light flashed through Hong Yin’s eyes, then he called out to the two women to hurriedly follow up.

Time was slowly passing. It was past noon.

In front of the Green Willow School, just like seven days ago, two groups of people had gathered. However, things weren’t as tense this time, and no swords were drawn. Both sides were fairly calm.

Zhang Zhenshan was seated atop a willow tree, a cold look on his face. Every so often, he would sweep the courtyard in front of him with a sinister, vicious gaze, like a beast awaiting its prey.

Beside him was Yu Fei and Liu Cheng, as well as a group of Glacial School disciples. They all stared nervously towards the Green Willow School’s forces, seeming rather impatient. The black-robed man named Yan Xi was also standing to one side without saying a word, arms folded and eyes closed calmly.

“Headmaster Mu, it’s already past noon. Bai Yunfei still isn’t here. What’s this about? Is he afraid of coming out?” Yu Fei raised his head, giving the main gate of the Green Willow School a frowning glance, then spoke out these words impatiently.

“The agreement was today; no one said it would be exactly at



noon. Simply put, your venerable school was unable to control your impatience and so came early. Bai Yunfei is currently preparing; he'll emerge soon. I'll have to ask you all to wait a bit longer." Mu Wanqing gave Yu Fei a glance, then responded to him calmly.

"Hmph! I know that the little brat is training some sort of soul skills, but for him to not come out...can it be that he's unable to endure the backlash from it and has died..." Yu Fei let out a cold snort, preparing to say a few words of mockery, but suddenly a look of surprise appeared on his face as he turned to stare towards the courtyard.

Just as he stopped talking, the nearby Yan Xi let out a soft sound as well, lifting his head to stare behind the Green Willow School's forces. You Qingfeng, Mu Wanqing, Liu Cheng, and Zhang Zhenshan all revealed looks of surprise as well as they all looked towards the courtyard in the west wing where Bai Yunfei lived.

"Qingfeng, this is..." Mu Wanqing had a puzzled look on her face for a few moments, then queried the nearby You Qingfeng in a rather uncertain way.

You Qingfeng frowned slightly. He nodded, then said, "Yes...the ripples of advancing to the Soul Sprite stage, only...it seems rather odd."

"Is it Yunfei? Can it be that something went wrong in his soul skills? Should we..." Mu Wanqing's face changed slightly. She was rather worried.

"No need. Have you forgotten that Hong Yin is there? And generally speaking, one cannot interfere in this sort of matter. I imagine that a result will come soon..." You Qingfeng shook his head slightly as he whispered in a low voice.

Yu Fei and the others who stood in front of him were no longer speaking either. They, too, were focusing on sensing that extraordinary elemental energy ripple.

A long time later, everyone sensed the mishmash ripple of elemental energy vanish, leaving behind just elemental fire. Another period of time later, the elemental fire vanished as well, and all went back to normal.

“He advanced? How can that be...what sort of soul skill has such a powerful effect...” Yan Xi’s eyes, hidden behind the black robes, revealed a look of surprise as he spoke softly to himself.

Yu Fei was silent for a long moment, then let out a cold snort. He said to the nearby Zhang Zhenshan, “Even if he was able to temporarily power up to the Soul Sprite level, so what? Elder Zhang, you’ve been at the Soul Sprite level for many years; you are a soul cultivator who is nearly at the mid-stage Soul Sprite level. How can you lose to a Soul Sprite who forcibly uplifted himself to that level? However...if this battle proves difficult, then just do as senior Yan Xi instructed; delay! The backlash caused by this sort of strengthening soul technique will be extremely fierce; by then, he will definitely lose!”

As he spoke, he lowered his voice once more. “However...you absolutely must not kill him. Spare his life. After we get what we want from him, you can then kill him!”

Zhang Zhenshan had a serious look on his face, but the hatred in his eyes hadn’t ebbed at all. In fact, it had grown even stronger. He nodded slightly, still staring unblinkingly at the gates to the Green Willow School, awaiting for the person who had killed his only son to emerge.

For a time, the entire field had become utterly silent. Everyone’s gaze was focused on the gates to the Green Willow School.

Moments later...a series of footsteps rang out, followed by a fast-walking figure.

This person wore gray robes. On his right arm was a crimson bracer, and a similarly crimson spear was clenched tightly in his hands. Waves of heat were swelling outwards from this item.

However, it was a bit of an disharmonious picture; aside from his two black interspatial rings, he was actually wearing two other seemingly-decorative rings. On his wrist, he actually wore a bracelet as well in a rather awkward way.

Bai Yunfei nodded slightly towards You Qingfeng and Mu Wanqing. Not hesitating or pausing at all, he walked straight towards the empty ground between the two sides, then pointed the Firetipped Spear towards Zhang Zhenshan.

“Zhang Zhenshan, you want to take revenge for your son, right? Then come out and fight!”

“I’ve waited a long time for you, brat. I don’t care what methods you’ve prepared; today, you are going to die a miserable death!” Zhang Zhenshan had been stared at Bai Yunfei with utter rage upon seeing him. He let out an enraged roar, then flew out and charged straight towards Bai Yunfei.

“Hmph. After we fight, we’ll see who actually wins and who actually loses!” Bai Yunfei let out a cold snort. Saying nothing else, he ran forward at a similarly rapid pace to greet his foe!

The Firetipped Spear trembled as he filled it with his soulforce. A red light flashed, actually forming a ball of fire in front of the Firetipped Spear. As the flames spun around the spear, he stabbed it straight towards Zhang Zhenshan!

## Chapter 84: Battling Zhang Zhenshan Again

---

A strange look flashed through Zhang Zhenshan's eyes as he saw the flame-wreathed spear stab towards him. Previously charging forward, he came to a sudden halt then immediately used the Ice Treading Steps. He dodged slightly to the left, avoiding the extremely powerful spear thrust.

Glacial qi swirled around Zhang Zhenshan's twin palms; the pair of Icesilk Gloves that Bai Yunfei had previously damaged had actually been repaired. Without giving any warning, he suddenly glided forward across the earth and moved close towards Bai Yunfei. His twin palms struck out, one aimed at the face, the other at the abdomen!

Bai Yunfei launched himself flying backwards, delivering a backwards spear-blow to block the upper palm while kicking out with his left leg to strike against the lower palm. Borrowing from the collision force, he somersaulted backwards. Before he even landed, he brandished the spear and struck out yet again.

Zhang Zhenshan had wanted to continue to pursue and attack, but his path was blocked by this spear. His only choice was to once again dodge before charging forward. By now, Bai Yunfei had already landed on the ground. He didn't change his stance; instead, he sent it piercing forth once more!

Zhang Zhenshan dodged past the blow while striking out with his left palm, slapping it against the body of the spear, pushing it to one side. He then took a half-step back with his left leg to steady himself, then formed his fingers into a claw as he clawed towards Bai Yunfei's spear-holding left hand.

Bai Yunfei stepped to the left, dodging while also pulling away his left arm to one side, avoiding Zhang Zhenshan's claw. He hurriedly took several minute steps. In a very brief period of time, he actually completed a full circle, his Firetipped Spear spinning with

him and sweeping towards the enemy's waist.

Zhang Zhenshan knew that his opponent had a very nimble agility technique, but he hadn't expected it to improve this much compared to last time. There was no time to dodge; all he could do was step slightly to the side, then use both arms crossed over each other to block this strike.

Smash! The spear slammed against his arms, letting out a dull thudding sound. Zhang Zhenshan frantically retreated backwards, and as he did he felt as though his arms had been struck by a blazing branding iron. In fact, a hint of a scar had been left on him from this blow.

He circulated the ice-type elemental energy within his body to dissipate the blazing energy. He just barely had a chance to find his footing before Bai Yunfei once more struck at him, not pausing at all. That wave of heat once more surged towards him!

Spear-shadows were flying everywhere, and palm-shadows folded in on themselves. There were continuous thudding sounds as the waves of heat collided against the icy qi, and craters began to appear in the earth beneath the feet of the two contestants.

A serious look appeared on the faces of the onlookers as they watched the two fight unceasingly. It seemed as though the two were on par with each other. Yu Fei and Liao Cheng began to frown, and their gazes fluctuated as they followed the movements of the two fighters. They hadn't expected Bai Yunfei's attacks to be so ferocious...and by the looks of it, Zhang Zhenshan was actually engaged in more defense than offense!

Yan Xi's eyes, hidden beneath his black robes, were flashing. As he watched Bai Yunfei's actions, he mused to himself, "Is this truly power that has come from using a soul skill to forcibly increase one's level of power? His attacks are fluid, and there's no indication at all that he's being harmed by any sort of backlash. His movements, his punches...they are clearly soul skill of

tremendous power! What is his status, exactly? And that spear; according to what Yu Fei said, it should be a low-grade Earth-ranked weapon, but...”

Right at this moment, the two fighters simultaneously struck out with their right arms against each other, one using his palm, the other using his fist. As their blows collided, they both retreated right away. However, after Bai Yunfei took two steps back, he stabilized his footing, then launched himself forward, not resting at all as he once more stabbed out with his spear!

Zhang Zhenshan felt amazement in his heart. He knew that this must be due to the Goldsilk Soul Armor; otherwise, there was no way his opponent could have almost ignored the effects of the attack, stabilizing himself with two fewer steps than Zhang Zhenshan himself needed. By now, Zhang Zhenshan had already retreated next to a willow tree and had dissipated the power of Bai Yunfei’s punch, but the spear-tip of the Firetipped Spear had already pierced towards his eyes!

Resigned, he had no choice but to focus on defense yet again. He retreated backwards with hurried steps while dodging backwards to the right.

The Firetipped Spear grazed past Zhang Zhenshan’s shoulder, thrusting deep into the thigh-thick willow tree behind Zhang Zhenshan with absolute ease.

Zhang Zhenshan’s eyes lit up. The opponent’s spear had been trapped in the tree! To pull it out again would cost a moment of time. Zhang Zhenshan was just about to halt his backwards motion, planning to use this opportunity to seize the initiative...but just as this idea flashed through his mind, he felt a sudden feeling of shock flutter through his heart, because he saw the look of delight appearing in Bai Yunfei’s eyes!

“Damn! It’s that...”

BOOM!!!!

He didn't even have a chance to complete his thought. Just as the look of amazement appeared in Zhang Zhenshan's eyes, an earth-shattering sound interrupted him!

The secondary effect of the Firetipped Spear, the fire explosion, had been activated!

A red light could be seen coming from within the trunk of the tree. In the next instant, the tree crumbled with a cacophonous shattering sound. No splinters of wood flew about, because when the Firetipped Spear stabbed into the tree and blew it up, the shattered parts had been instantly burnt to ash. The crown of the tree, however, was sent flying outwards. It landed hundreds of meters away, amongst the members of the Glacial School, causing a bit of panic.

In the instant the fiery light appeared and the enormous explosion could be heard, Zhang Zhenshan immediately, frantically retreated, not hesitating in the slightest. His Ice Treading Steps were used to the limit, but he was still unable to move faster than the wave of heat that was sweeping towards him from the front! As Zhang Zhenshan frantically retreated, he also crossed both his arms to protect his head.

As the heat wave struck forward, he felt as though blazing knives were slicing past his body. Even breathing became difficult for a moment. However, as he flew backwards, the 'pushing' power of the heatwave helped him retreat slightly faster.

"The air waves caused by the explosion are already so powerful... if I were to be struck head-on by it..." This thought flashed through his mind, and cold sweat began to pour down his head and into his robes, wetting them.

The power of this fire explosion was far greater than the power in the past. In fact, even Bai Yunfei himself was stupefied momentarily. Upon seeing Zhang Zhenshan retreat in a sorry manner, a look flashed through Bai Yunfei's eyes as he once more

shot forward towards him! His right hand released its grip around the spear, allowing it to fall into his left hand. He then spun the spear behind him to gather circular momentum, then once more gripped it with his right hand and once more delivered a powerful thrust with it!

Faced with this new attack from the spear, a look of astonishment appeared on Zhang Zhenshan's face. The trepidation he felt towards this Firetipped Spear was now many times greater than it had been in the past. He filled both his legs with soulforce as he once more frantically retreated, just barely dodging past the spear. However, due to his excessive haste as he moved, his movements became slightly unbalanced. Bai Yunfei charged forward, spinning around and borrowing the power of the centrifugal force to send the Firetipped Spear towards Zhang Zhenshan with a sweeping blow. The spear struck Zhang Zhenshan on the waist, knocking him towards the left.

Agony radiated outwards from Zhang Zhenshan's waist, nearly causing him to vomit up a mouthful of blood. By the time he had neutralized the power of this blow, Bai Yunfei's next attack was incoming as well!

The two once more engaged in a flurry of attacks. However, unlike the last time, Zhang Zhenshan was able to launch fewer and fewer assaults; he was almost completely forced on the defensive!

Yan Xi frowned slightly as he watched from outside the dueling grounds. His gaze flickered from the battling Bai Yunfei to the Firetipped Spear in his hands. A look of surprise had flashed through Yan Xi's eyes when the Firetipped Spear's strike had turned explosive. As he continued to watch, the look of surprise in his eyes grew increasingly strong, as well as an increasingly and extremely deep level of puzzlement.

"No mistaking it; that's a high-earth tier soul armament! But...Yu Fei clearly said that it was a low-grade Earth-ranked artifact. Was he lying to me? But he shouldn't have been; there's no way he



could be so stupid. In other words...previously, the spear was indeed just a low-grade soul armament...”

Suddenly, Yan Xi’s eyes suddenly lit up, as though he had thought of something that was completely inconceivable. For the first time, a look of astonishment appeared on his face. “Was it because of the advancement in power? There’s only one possibility...forging through flame elemental energy! The Crafting School!!!”

Yan Xi’s eyes were flashing. The more he thought about it, the more convinced he was that his idea was correct. “That’s right. This is the only possibility! Only those of the Crafting School who are advancing the power of their souls are willing and able to lessen the amount of energy drawn forth by their essence fireseed, using it to instead temper and refine their soul armaments! Only the inner sect disciples of the Crafting School are capable of this!”

“Yu Fei is an absolute idiot bastard! He actually dared to claim that this person doesn’t have any background! He was previously just a Soul Warrior, but was already in possession of powerful soul armaments and soul skill, and he also knew the secret method by which fire essence can be used to temper soul armaments...his status in the Crafting School is definitely not low!” Yan Xi frowned as he pondered frantically. “Although I don’t know why and how he ended up being attacked and pursued by this puny Glacial Sect without anyone from his own school helping him...it’s best not to have any conflicts with him. The intricate plans our school has have no margin for error. I was just sent here to ensure the recruitment of a few small schools; we absolutely cannot offend the Crafting School right now.”

As Yan Xi pondered mentally, yet another change occurred within the ongoing battle.

One wrong move would result in an advantage being lost; an advantage being gained could cause a cascade of successes!

A serious look was on Zhang Zhenshan's face as he completely focused on defense. Bai Yunfei, on the other hand, was happily fighting to his heart's content! In the past, when Zhang Zhenshan had been in a weakened condition, the only thing which Bai Yunfei had been able to do was flee. But in this battle, Bai Yunfei actually had seized the upper hand!

After exchanging dozens of blows, Zhang Zhenshan's left arm and left part of his waist had both been sliced open by the Firetipped Spear, which had left behind two bloody wounds. However, the 'explosion' effect hadn't occurred, but despite that, each time Zhang Zhenshan had been struck by the Firetipped Spear, he could feel the specter of death brushing past him.

He had thought that this would be an easily won battle, but at this point, it was his opponent who was suppressing him. All he could do was defend in a rather haggard fashion. Zhang Zhenshan's face grew increasingly unsightly, and the hatred and rage in his eyes grew stronger and stronger as well. As he once more dodged, so as to avoid the enemy's spear from striking his left shoulder, the anger in Zhang Zhenshan's eyes transformed into utter madness.

He was the exalted leader of the Zhang clan, and an Elder of the Glacial Sect! And yet, today, he was being completely suppressed by a person of the younger generation who just a few days ago he had been chasing after. What's more, this person was the culprit who had killed his son! No father should be forced to bury his own son!

"Brat, don't be so smug! I'm going to take your life as compensation for my son's!" Zhang Zhenshan had a look of madness in his eyes. Faced with another attack from the spear, he actually didn't dodge; instead, he lifted up his left hand and grabbed the spear! The Icesilk Gloves on his hands were completely unable to withstand the sharpness of the Firetipped Spear, and blood immediately began to flow from his hand. It was

as though he had grabbed a blazing iron with his bare hands, and a crackling sound could be heard. However, he completely ignored these things. His hand around the spear's tip, he pushed it to the side, then slid backwards as he moved straight towards Bai Yunfei. His right palm was glowing with glacial qi, and he struck viciously against Bai Yunfei's chest!

Zhang Zhenshan's madness had caught Bai Yunfei completely off-guard. In addition, the secondary effect of the Firetipped Spear did not trigger this time either. That brief moment of stupor caused Bai Yunfei to be hit dead-on by the Glacial Palm, and he was sent flying backwards.

Zhang Zhenshan's left hand still remained tightly clamped around the Firetipped Spear. Leaping forward, he actually moved at the same speed as Bai Yunfei, delivering yet another palm blow to Bai Yunfei, this one to the abdomen!

The qi and blood within Bai Yunfei's body were flowing about chaotically. When he saw the enemy palm strike descend, a vicious light flashed through his own eyes. He didn't defend at all, instead using a leg to kick towards Zhang Zhenshan's left hand, which remained clamped on the Firetipped Spear.

Thud! His flank was struck by the palm, but Zhang Zhenshan's grip on the spear had been kicked loose. However...Zhang Zhenshan completely ignored his mangled left arm, instead launching a third blow against Bai Yunfei, who was falling towards the ground in a frantic retreat!

After two successive Glacial Palms, Bai Yunfei could taste blood in his throat, seeking to come out. He watched as Zhang Zhenshan moved towards him yet again. His Firetipped Spear could not be unleashed right now. His arm trembled slightly, then the Firetipped Spear vanished. His right hand formed into a fist, instantly moving to block in front of his chest. The third palm strike of Zhang Zhenshan slammed directly against that gleaming red bracer.

This time, Bai Yunfei just shook slightly, seeming to have taken no damage at all. However, before he was able to stabilize himself, Zhang Zhenshan launched yet another ferocious attack against him!

## Chapter 85: The Foe Retreats and Backlash

---

Bai Yunfei drew back his Fire-tipped Spear and moved to use his bracer to protect himself from Zhang Zhengshan's Glacial Palm. Before he could even stabilize his footing, another strike was already coming close!

Zhang Zhengshan's eyes had gone scarlet as if he had gone berserk. In this moment's assault, he had seemingly given up all sorts of defense in order to attack crazily. The images of his palm had practically blurred together. Even the injuries on his left hand had been forcibly frozen over before moving to attack.

Retreating one step after another, Bai Yunfei's continued to dance as he fended off his opponent's strikes in a continuous manner. Although it seemed as if he had been suppressed by Zhang Zhengshan, his eyes didn't show any panic in them—instead, in the midst of dodging and weaving around the palms, his eyes flickered with a light as if he was thinking about something....

In terms of close combat ability, Bai Yunfei was clearly not of the same level as his opponent. Although he wasn't slow in speed and was quite nimble in movement, he had revealed several holes in his defense after several minutes of combat. His opponent had struck out at his left shoulder, and despite the Goldsilk Soul Armor providing defense, Bai Yunfei had still been sent staggering back two steps in pain. Simultaneously, the glacial qi had already greedily entered his body.

Circulating his soulforce, the essence fireseed in Bai Yunfei's body expanded and contracted for a moment before a part of the elemental fire had migrated over to his left shoulder area, causing the glacial qi to disappear instantaneously.

A chilling breeze had then slammed against his face. Opening his eyes just a little bit, Bai Yunfei then saw a mangled palm with the glacial qi swirling around it come flying to meet him! Without any

time to dodge, Bai Yunfei had only managed to bring both arms up in a cross to protect his face. One muffled echo later, Bai Yunfei had been forced back half a step again. But because of the protective defense of his bracer, he had barely suffered any sort of damage besides a small portion of the blow.

After one palm, the other palm came to attack with even more power behind it. Remaining in the same position, Bai Yunfei allowed for his bracer to take the hit. After several palm strikes, Zhang Zhengshan had realized that he was unable to strike the head with just his palms alone and had then diverted his palms to attack Bai Yunfei's shoulder.

After a misstep from Bai Yunfei, he brought his right arm up in a horizontal fashion while trying to dodge. This had opened him up to another of Zhang Zhengshan's palm before he unleashed yet another barrage of strikes. The position of the two men had been reversed. Now it was Zhang Zhengshan who was attacking frantically while Bai Yunfei remained calm with his all out defense.

But, with a closer observation, one would be able to see that there was something strange—Bai Yunfei looked like he had given up several chances to strike back and was instead blindly defending himself from Zhang Zhengshan as if waiting for something....

Finally, after being struck by a palm in the abdomen again, Bai Yunfei used his bracer to defend himself from the second strike. His eyes flashed furiously with an explosion of light as if the moment he was waiting for had finally approached. After defending himself from one more powerful palm, his entire body had suddenly shifted. His right fist had retreated to his waist instead of being held up to defend himself from the palm of Zhang Zhengshan that was aimed at his stomach. Foregoing any type of defensive maneuver, Bai Yunfei's right leg stepped forward half a step. With his right hand forming a fist, he let loose a single punch without hesitation!

“Bang!” Zhang Zhengshan's Glacial Palm struck against Bai

Yunfei's stomach at the same time as Bai Yunfei's fist struck against Zhang Zhengshan's chest!

Ninefold Fist Force!

“Bang!”

“Crack!”

With a bone-cracking sound, Zhang Zhengshan's body had flown away like a bullet with a mouthful of blood spraying out from his mouth! Bai Yunfei had staggered several steps back with blood spilling from his lips as well.

This was the very first counterattack from Bai Yunfei after he had put away his spear. And so when his opponent had rained down on his body with palm after palm, a predicament where a gap like so had taken result!

(+10 Additional Effect: When blocking, there is a 9% chance of absorbing and converting the attack power into personal attack power, releasing it with your next attack. It can be held for 3 seconds. The amount of converted attack power cannot exceed the defensive strength of this item.)

Bai Yunfei had endured for so long to finally wait for this effect to be triggered to attack with the combined strength of the palm strength he had absorbed and converted along with his own Ninefold Fist Force!

This change had been far too sudden to the point of stunning every single one of the spectators watching the battle. Naturally, for the extremely strong individuals like Hong Yin, Yan Xi and the others, their eyes flashed with a pensive light as if they had seen something....

Seeing Zhang Zhengshan being hurtled away, Bai Yunfei's eyes flashed dangerously. He couldn't be sure if this one fist would be enough to determine victory, so without any hesitation, his feet pushed off from the ground to quickly give chase—he couldn't give

his opponent any time to even breathe!

After spitting out a mouthful of blood, Zhang Zhengshan had made no movement. At a look, he was not stunned, but he had been heavily injured and could not move for the time-being. The Wave Treading Steps had been faster than Zhang Zhengshan's speed from being thrown away. Before Zhang Zhengshan could even fall to the ground, Bai Yunfei had already caught up to him with his right hand flying forth to grab hold of his opponent.

“Stop! We admit defeat!”

Just at that moment, a voice exploded from the left side before a figure came jetting out. With one hand grabbing onto Zhang Zhengshan, the other hand circulated with glacial qi before striking at Bai Yunfei's chest!

It was Liu Cheng that had come forth. Bai Yunfei's fist had astounded everyone from the Glacial School after Zhang Zhengshan had been sent flying away. Liu Cheng had seen the heavily injured state of Zhang Zhengshan and was afraid that Bai Yunfei would kill him. So for that reason, he had no other choice but to make his move to save Zhang Zhengshan.

Bai Yunfei's fist had stopped Liu Cheng's palm, but he did not continue after that. Instead, his body had halted while he looked at the palm that Liu Cheng had lashed out with in shock. Just when his opponent had attacked, Bai Yunfei could see in his sleeves a faint blue-colored bracelet—there was no mistaking it. Just like Bai Yunfei, Liu Cheng was wearing a rather uncoordinated looking bracelet, but Bai Yunfei knew the reason why Liu Cheng was wearing it, for this bracelet would allow for the wearer's speed to become even faster....

In an instant, a furious sensation had welled up within his heart and flooded out into his chest. This fury had carried an indescribable amount of stimulus....with this surging fury, Bai Yunfei's eyes had gone bloodshot. Bringing up his right hand into a



fist, he proceeded to strike at Liu Cheng right in front of him!

Liu Cheng looked behind to where he was protecting Zhang Zhengshan only to see that his face was contorted in pain. His mouth continued to stream with blood, but he was able to stand for the moment albeit with difficulty. Clearly, he was in no condition to continue fighting, but when Liu Cheng turned around to say something, he saw that Bai Yunfei had launched himself in silent towards him with an outstretched fist!

Alarmed, Liu Cheng knew that he was unable to dodge with Zhang Zhengshan right behind him and had instead put up his arms helplessly. Circulating his soulforce, Liu Cheng prepared himself to receive the fist.

Overlapping Waves Art, Eighty One Fold Fist Force!!

This one strike was something that Bai Yunfei had never used before even in this last battle of his. The strongest of strikes from the Overlapping Waves Art!

“Bang!”

“Crack!”

Just like Zhang Zhengshan, Liu Cheng’s bones had let loose a cracking sound before he too was sent flying away like Zhang Zhengshan had.

As he flew through the sky, several bits and pieces of his broken bracelet came falling down to the ground from his sleeve.

“Brat, you’re looking to die!” Yu Fei had gone up with Liu Cheng to interrupt the fight, but he had hesitated on interfering with it. But when he saw that Liu Cheng had been injured as well, indignation had filled his heart. At the same time, the surrounding air around him seemed to froze as frost began to appear and gather around Yu Fei’s right fist before slamming down onto Bai Yunfei.

A squall had engulfed the area without warning before Yu fei’s palm could even touch Bai Yunfei. This gale of wind had

immediately blew back against Yu Fei, sending him flying backwards. After tumbling to the ground several steps, Yu Fei picked himself up from the ground with his left hand holding his chest while blood came forth from his mouth. His face looked towards Hong Yin who was right besides Bai Yunfei with shock.

“This was to be a fair duel. For headmaster Yu Fei and elder Liu Cheng to interfere, what is the meaning of this?!” A light voice could be heard as Mu Wanqing and You Qingfeng hurried to Bai Yunfeng’s side.

Seeing the group of people gradually coming forward, Yu Fei’s face had darkened and his eyes flashed several times as if he was thinking of a plan.

Bai Yunfei suppressed a mouthful of blood and stared down Yu Fei, “I’ve won, so return the Glacial Pricker to me!” he spoke coldly.

After speaking, he looked to Hong Yin by his side. Understanding Bai Yunfei’s intentions, Hong Yin’s body flickered away from sight only to reappear right in front of Yu Fei with an icy expression, “I won’t press you about your treacherous conduct just now. Leave the Glacial Pricker here and scram!”

With Hong Yin staring so closely and his soulforce pressing down onto him, Yu Fei couldn’t help but step back half a step. He knew that with the entire Glacial School combined, they would not be a match for this person in front of him. His face flushed with a green and white color before finally taking out the Glacial Pricker and handing it over to Hong Yin unwillingly. Then turning around, he gave a signal to the disciples behind him to pick up Zhang Zhengshan and Liu Cheng before making a quick departure.

Yan Xi had also given a deep look towards Bai Yunfei before turning around without another word to leave as well.

Bai Yunfei remained motionless from where he stood. His right hand involuntarily began to tremble a little bit with blood dripping

down his arm. The outburst from the Eighty One Fold Fist Force had caused his entire right arm to tear up, his muscles and bones suffering from the tearing.

But he didn't seem to have noticed this nor did he spare a glance at his enemies leaving. Instead, his perplexed eyes seemed to have stared at the small pile of blue fragments with a complex expression..

After some time, he suddenly broke out into laughter that contained sarcasm and self-deprecation, "Ah, this is your "treasured" bracelet...."

Lifting his left hand, he gave his right arm a gentle nudge before a golden straw hat appeared in his hand.

"I gave it to you, but you didn't want it....so what you sent me, why should I keep it?"

"Bang...." One crisp echo later, a ball of fire appeared in his palm before engulfing the straw hat and quickly transformed it into specks of ash that scattered and blew away into the sky....

"Yunfei....are you alright?" Hong Yin asked in concern from the side. Bai Yunfei closed his eyes and sucked in his breath before slowly exhaling. Opening his eyes, there was a look of absolved calmness to him. Tilting his head up to give everyone a smile, he nodded.

"Don't worry, I'm fi-...."

Before he could even finish, the expression on his face suddenly went rigid and cut off his words before falling to the ground without a warning.

Startled, Hong Yin hastily held Bai Yunfei up. Looking down, he could see that Bai Yunfei's eyes were shut with his face contorted with pain. His body continued to spasm as if he was undergoing some sort of gigantic pain.

This sudden development had caused everyone around them to

panic. The girl Chu Yuhe herself was on the verge of crying while Mu Wanqing gently patted her shoulder to console her. Turning to look at Hong Yin who was inspecting Bai Yunfei, Mu Wanqing whispered, “Hong Yin, Yunfei must be....”

Hong Yin’s face nodded his head heavily, “It is the anticipated backlash. We’ll have to return to the school and think of a plan right away...”

## Chapter 86: Fireseed Spirit Mushroom

---

In one of the rooms of the western courtyards in the Green Willow School.

Bai Yunfei was laid on one of the beds with a strange crimson red color appearing all over his body. His eyebrows pinched together in pain as he clenched his fists together so much that his fingernails had dug into his skin and shed blood that instantaneously evaporated. The veins on his arms and neck were clearly visible, and his skin was as cracked as a dry field—his right arm was most noticeably mangled. Rivulets of blood had secreted onto his skin before evaporating into a bloody mist.

The temperature of the room was completely because of him, and it was still increasing rapidly. Even the mattress under him had a faint black spot of being burnt. It was as if....there was a ball of fire that was raging within his body. It was ready to cut open his chest, come out of his body, and burn his entire body until there was nothing left.

Hong Yin sat right by the bed with his hands held against his stomach. His eyebrows were furrowed together while his eyes were closed shut in thought.

After some time, Hong Yin finally opened his eyes and slowly stood to turn around to face You Qingfeng and the others.

“Big brother Hong Yin, what is going on with big brother Yunfei? He’s going to be fine, right? Please....you have to save him!” Chu Yuhe immediately ran to Hong Yin when she saw him rise. Her face had turned upwards to look expectantly at Hong Yin.

You Qingfeng walked up as well to look at the bedridden Bai Yunfei. Concerned, she asked, “Hong Yin, little brother Yunfei’s circumstances doesn’t look too reassuring! Do you have any plans right now?”

Hong Yin sighed with a shake of his head, “Yunfei is in an abnormally bad situation right now. I have no idea what method he used to uplift himself to the Soul Sprite stage or how he managed to condense his essence fireseed. But because he broke through too fast, his body wasn’t able to completely harmonize with the elemental fire. Whatever method he used, he had unexpectedly managed to condense a half of the essence fireseed to advance. There wasn’t anything that could go wrong in the battle, but the more and more he used the elemental fire, the faster he found himself in this current predicament. With half of the elemental fire not under control, it grew in amount, causing it to go out of control within his body and burning. If this goes on, I’m afraid it might become fatal....”

Hong Yin’s eyebrows grew even closer together, “Right now the interior part of his body is in chaos. I don’t dare involve myself in it. If there is a soul cultivator with the water element, they could temporarily abate the problem. But alas, with my wind affinity soulforce, or your wood affinity, we cannot do anything to rein in the berserk elemental fire in Yunfei’s body....”

“Then what do we do? Didn’t you just say the more we wait, the more dangerous it gets....” Mu Wanqing’s eyebrows knotted together in worry.

You Qingfeng looked to Hong Yin for a moment before suddenly speaking out, “Hong Yin, if it was you, you’d be able to do it, correct? You’d remove the unstable essence fireseed in his body....”

Hong Yin nodded his head faintly, “I would indeed do that. But, if we really did that, we would be destroy Yunfei’s entire future! Not only would his strength drop back down to the Soul Warrior stage, he would never be able to make a breakthrough again....”

“What? Is it that serious?” Mu Wanqing was astonished, “Is the backlash of a soul skill truly that terrifying?”

Hong Yin shook his head, “Yunfei’s circumstances is quite unusual. I don’t even know what he did....but in short, I don’t wish to destroy his future....”

He looked back to Bai Yunfei whose face seemed to be even more pained. Sinking his head down in thought, Hong Yin’s eyes continue to flash as if he was hesitating. After some time, he seemed to have reached some sort of conclusion. His eyes grew resolute as he turned around to You Qingfeng. “Big brother You, there is something I require your assistance with.”

You Qingfeng was startled, “Eh? Don’t tell me you actually thought of some way to save Yunfei? If you have need for me to do anything, then say it. I will do my best to help!”

Hong Yin’s right hand shook, unexpectedly bringing out a plethora of plants from his space ring. They looked to be medical ingredients—at least ten different sorts. A gentle wind had kicked up from around his body before levitating the ingredients into the air.

With another lift of his hand, a small fire the size of a palm had appeared above his hand. It was some sort of flaming red object. With its appearance, the entire room seemed to have skyrocketed in temperature once more. A wisp of elemental fire came pulsating out from Bai Yunfei’s body with a strong resonance to the fire from the item.

Hong Yin stared at the plant in his hand for some time before looking up to You Qingfeng. “Use your affinity with wood and extract the essence from these ingredients. Then mix it with this thing and give it to Yunfei. It should help him get through this crisis for now.”

You Qingfeng looked astounded at the floating plants in front of Hong Yin; each one of these were extremely precious ingredients. But when he saw the one item held in Hong Yin’s hand, he was instantly stunned. As his eyes opened wide, he cried out, “That’s

a....fire....fireseed spirit mushroom!!”

Mu Wanqing had been shocked at the strong amount of elemental fire that came out from the item in Hong Yin’s hand as well. When she heard You Qingfeng’s gasp, she couldn’t help but ask in confusion, “Qingfeng, what is a fireseed spirit mushroom? Why is it that I feel it’s....”

“You feel that it contains the essence of fire, correct?” You Qingfeng nodded as he became calm once more. Explaining, he said, “Your sense isn’t wrong. This ‘fireseed spirit mushroom’ contains an extremely pure amount of the essence of elemental fire. This precious material grows in the deepest part of the Soulbeast Forest, the million year old volcano. From its growth to maturation, it requires at least several hundred years worth of time. Soul cultivators at the stage of Soul Warriors and upwards can use this to make a direct breakthrough to the Soul Sprite stage. It can also condense the essence fireseed with ease and without any danger! Even a soul cultivator without any gifts for the fire affinity can become incomparably close to the elemental fire with this. It can even be said that whomever possesses a single fireseed spirit mushroom possesses an absolute opportunity to advance into the Soul Sprite stage!”

“Furthermore, for a soul cultivator at the stage of Soul Sprite without the affinity for fire, then they could without fail gain another elemental essence from within their body!” You Qingfeng spoke up to there before turning to look at Hong Yin. “Are you certain you wish to give this to Bai Yunfei? This is.....”

Hong Yin gave a determined nod of his head, “It is important to save a life. I will bother big brother You with this then.”

You Qingfeng gave a moment’s consideration before answering promptly, “Very well! If brother Hong Yin brings out such a precious item to save a life without consideration, then how could I be so miserly to not squander some of my original property strength?!”



Reaching out, You Qingfeng's hand grabbed at the ingredients that flew to his hand. After calming himself, a green halo of light began to slowly appear above his palm to envelop the ingredients within it and rotate them. From the outside, the ingredients could be seen slowly withering away before turning into ash. A clear and transparent drop of liquid could be seen being squeezed out before floating up on the side.

After several repeats of the process, all of the ingredients Hong Yin had taken out had been reduced to ash. In their place, several drops of clear and transparent liquids could be seen.

You Qingfeng's forehead had several beads of sweat on it, but he looked to the fireseed spirit mushroom in Hong Yin's hand, unsure on whether or not he would have to do the same to it. In midst of his stares, Hong Yin spoke out, "You've worked hard, big brother You. You needn't break down this ingredient. For the next step, allow me to take over."

Letting out a faint breath of air, the green halo of light in You Qingfeng's hands retreated back into his own body. He walked to the side where he then sat down on a stool. From the looks of things, breaking down and extracting the essence from these ingredients had required a large amount of energy from him.

Hong Yin extended an arm to allow the several drops of liquid to slowly fly to his hand. An azure-colored whirlwind had then formed on his palm, forcing the liquids to begin to rotate around the fireseed spirit mushroom. After several breaths worth of time, the fireseed spirit mushroom let out a "bang" sound before transforming into a fist-sized flame. Even the liquid revolving around it had been engulfed before the temperature in the room had clambered up once more.

Hong Yin's face had grown grim as the whirlwind in his hand flew faster and faster. That ball of fire in his hand had gradually grown smaller as if it was being forcibly compressed. Finally, it had decreased to the size of a newborn's fist. Furthermore, the

several drops of liquids seemed to have been melted into the flames to become one with it.

Hong Yin let out a gentle sigh of air as he directed the ball of fire towards Bai Yunfei's body. Fixating his eyes on him, Hong Yin spoke gently, "Yunfei, I know you can hear what I'm saying. I am administering this to you, do not reject it. Let it flow to your essence fireseed and fuse with it. Let it control the elemental fire within you, and free yourself from this danger!"

Bai Yunfei's eyes were still closed, and his body continued to tremble. But there was a faint grunt that could be heard from between his teeth as if he was answering Hong Yin.

Hong Yin's eyes flashed without anymore hesitation. His left hand pinched Bai Yunfei's chin and pulled open his mouth. With his right hand, the ball of fire was immediately stuffed within Bai Yunfei's mouth!

Bai Yunfei's body began to violently jerk around. His teeth continued to clench tightly as the ball of fire was swallowed down into his abdomen. Afterwards, his face warped in even more pain, there were even some parts of his body that had even split open, but no blood had come out. Instead, another bloody wisp of mist had risen up in a grotesque manner.

Not too long after, his eyebrows had smoothened out and the body tremors had lessened as if the situation had begun to turn around.

Seeing this turn of events, Hong Yin had finally let out a sigh of relief. Turning around to look at everyone, he said, "There shouldn't be any problems now. Let us all head out. Whatever happens next, it will be up to Bai Yunfei to deal with. If nothing out of the ordinary happens, he should be fine by tomorrow...."

Walking out of the room, Hong Yin watched You Qingfeng and the rest leave as well. He stood in the middle of the courtyard in heavy thought before shaking his head, "Having done things this

way, it was well worth it. With all things considered, I had no plans to cultivate the elemental fire in the first place....there is a secret to Bai Yunfei. I would think that he would definitely not disappoint me then....”

Hong Yin returned to his own room and shut his doors. And so the western courtyards had descended into a gentle calm once more.

The moon was beginning to ascend as the stars began to sparkle as well. Time went by bit by bit as Bai Yunfei remained in his room. That burst of raging elemental fire hadn't ceased in its pulsating from start to finish. But it had gradually went from a chaotic mess of energy into a moderate and regular burst of energy. Receding and extending, it was quite similar to the rhythmic pattern of a heartbeat.

With the end of the night came day. And the moment when the sunshine shined into the room, Bai Yunfei's finger moved from its place on the bed and his eyes gradually began to open....

## Chapter 87: Mid-stage Soul Sprite!!

---

With the end of the night came day. And the moment when the sunshine shined into the room, Bai Yunfei's finger moved from its position on the bed and his eyes gradually began to open....

Slowly sitting up, Bai Yunfei looked over his own body for a moment before holding his right hand up to eyes. Studying it for a while, he seemed to be in looking at it pensively.

“That was too dangerous.... I didn't think that uplifting myself a stage so crazily would result in this. I nearly lost my life just then. A technique to strengthen my soulforce like this may be a shortcut, but I can't continue to use this in the future without fear of the consequences.” Thinking about his loss of control over the elemental fire and the unbearable pain it had brought, Bai Yunfei couldn't help but feel some lingering fears on it. For that moment, he had truly thought that he was about to die then and there.

“It's all thanks to big brother Hong Yin....without his help, then even if I saved my life, my life wouldn't be as easy to become as strong as I desired. Would I even still be able to live on so carefreely?”

Bai Yunfei gave a look over on his body. The essence fireseed in his stomach was two times as big as it was the day before yesterday at around the size of a fist. It seemed to have wrapped around his heart and pulsed along with the rhythmic beat of his heart. Wisp after wisp of the elemental fire had flowed out with each beat and circulated along with his soulforce throughout his body. There was a surge of power that flooded his body, making him feel far stronger than he had ever felt.

“Mid-stage Soul Sprite!!” Bai Yunfei's eyes sparkled, “That whats-it-called ‘fireseed spirit mushroom’ big brother Hong Yin gave me has such a miraculous effect! But, this also demonstrates the depths of his heart. I'm afraid this will be a hard favor to

return...”

After a moment of thinking, Bai Yunfei sighed and gave up thinking about it. Getting down from the bed, he threw open the doors and walked out.

The clean air outside had assaulted his face, rousing his spirits quite high. At the same time as he walked out from his room, the neighboring room to his own gave a creaking sound before the doors opened and Hong Yin came walking out with a faint smile.

Bai Yunfei’s eyes flashed with emotions. He knew that Hong Yin had been worried for his wellbeing for sure by carefully paying attention to his situation.

Giving a nod to Hong Yin, Bai Yunfei spoke gratefully, “Big brother Hong Yin, it’s all thanks to you that I....”

“Haha, Yunfei, you speak as if we are strangers to each other, you don’t need to take this so seriously.” Hong Yin waved his hand dismissively at his words. “I saved you because you have made me believe it is worth it helping you. I know you will achieve many things in your future since you still have many secrets, isn’t that right?”

“That....” Bai Yunfei hesitated for a moment, unsure of how he should respond.

“Naturally, that is only my guess. You don’t need to tell me, but I think that you won’t disappoint me, correct?”

Bai Yunfei had looked a little embarrassed. After being silent for half a moment, he shook his head gently and spoke honestly to Hong Yin, “No matter the case, big brother Hong Yin saved my life this time. I will never forget this, I think that....”

“Eeeh? Big brother Yunfei’s fine! That’s great!” Just at that moment, an alarmed cry of joy could be heard from outside the courtyards. Turning around, Bai Yunfei could only see an emerald-green clothed Chu Yuhe come running towards him with a joyous

expression. You Qingfeng, Mu Wanqing and even Qiu Liliu could be seen entering the courtyard behind her.

“Big brother Yunfei, are you okay? Are you completely better now?” Chu Yuhe scampered towards Bai Yunfei and asked question after question in concern.

Bai Yunfei looked at Chu Yuhe with a moved eye. When it came to this little girl, he didn't have any idea on how to be a brother. It was only because of Mu Wanqing's manipulations that he had carelessly recognized her to be his sworn sister. But Chu Yuhe had regarded him extremely highly and regarded him to be her actual older brother.

Nodding, Bai Yunfei smiled faintly, “Oh, Yuhe doesn't need to worry. I'm fine, I'm all better now.”

Afterwards, he looked to Qiu Liliu behind Yuhe and nodded to her. Then he cupped his hands together towards You Qingfeng and Mu Wanqing. “Senior You, headmaster Mu, words cannot describe my gratitude. From today onwards, I will definitely find a way to repay your kindness!” He spoke cordially.

“Yunfei, you speak too much like a stranger. You are the sworn brother of Yuhe, helping you should be a given thing. Furthermore, we didn't even help you much. It was Hong Yin that saved you; if you wished to repay someone, then it should be him.” Mu Wanqing shook her head with a smile.

“Yunfei, your strength....” Ever since You Qingfeng had walked into the courtyard, he had continued to stare at Bai Yunfei as if there was a question he was not sure about.

“En, not only has my injuries fully recovered, but I have fully condensed my essence fireseed and stabilized it. My strength has also reached the mid-stage Soul Sprite level as well.” Bai Yunfei nodded before letting loose the restraint he had to allow the others to feel his current strength.

“That’s....that’s utterly inconceivable! Big brother Hong Yin’s ‘fireseed spirit mushroom’ has that strong of an effect?!” Qiu Luliu stared in disbelief at Bai Yunfei. She couldn’t help but cry out in alarm before sighing and speaking in dejection, “Yunfei, let me say something here, okay? When I first met you, you were only a late-stage Soul Apprentice. But now...even though I know you came across good fortune, this rate of progression from you is too much of a blow to me. And to think that I used to believe my own talent for cultivation was quite decent!”

“Eh, Luliu, what words are you saying? I only had good luck, that’s all. Plus, it was all thanks to big brother Hong Yin. I nearly died, just how amazing could I be after that?” Bai Yunfei couldn’t help but laugh.

Hong Yin had only looked at everyone before saying, “Let’s not continue to stand in the courtyards and head into one of the rooms....”

.....

After an hour, You Qingfeng and the others had finally left. Mu Wanqing was the leader of a school after all and thus had many things to busy herself with.

Mu Wanqing had told Bai Yunfei that the Glacial School had already left Jade Willow City. Their two elders had been injured by Bai Yunfei, Zhang Zhengshan most especially. His ribs had been fractured in several places, and his internal organs had been ruptured. It would take several dozen days for his wounds to completely heal.

After sending them off, Hong Yin looked pensively at Bai Yunfei. “Yunfei, what’s wrong? Don’t tell me you’re worried about the Glacial School taking revenge? Don’t worry then. They won’t be seeking trouble with you for a good while. Even more so, with your current strength, you don’t need to fear them either do you?”

Hearing that there was something else applied in his words, Bai

Yunfei was rather stunned, “Big brother Hong Yin, you overestimate me. Today, I am a mid-stage Soul Sprite, but I am still nowhere close to being able to go head to head with the headmaster of a school....”

“Haha, I’m just joking.” Hong Yin gave a secretive laugh before abruptly changing the subject. “Ah, Yunfei. The bracer I gave you for your battle against Zhang Zhengshan, could I have it back now?”

“Ah?” Bai Yunfei’s face went rigid. He had no idea that Hong Yin would suddenly speak about such a topic and couldn’t respond to it for some time afterwards. But after lowering his head in silence, his face changed slightly and sighed. With a wave of his hand, the crimson bracer appeared in it. Bai Yunfei placed the bracer onto the table and forced out a smile, “En, this was big brother Hong Yin’s item to begin with, I should return it to you....”

Hong Yin’s lips curled into a smile at Bai Yunfei’s clearly pained expression. Trying his best to pretend to be calm, he could no longer help but let out a chuckle and teased Bai Yunfei, “Yunfei, I was just joking with you. You really are serious, just what type of person do you take your older brother Hong Yin to be? I clearly said that I had given it to you, just how could I take it back like that? Haha....”

Bai Yunfei was stunned. “That....”

“Haha, I only wish to see just how much you’ve ‘transformed’ this bracer....” Hong Yin held out an arm towards the bracer, and the moment it touched his head, the smile on his face had immediately vanished. Turning flabbergasted, he looked at the bracer in his hands and circulated his soulforce into it, causing the bracer to glow red.

“High-earth tier!” Even with his earlier preparations, Hong Yin still couldn’t help but gasp, “How is that possible? When I gave it to you before, it was definitely a high-human tier soul armament.



How could it just jump three tiers and into the earth rank....”

Hong Yin had been thunderstruck for a moment before his head snapped to Bai Yunfei with sparkling eyes, “Yunfei, are you from the Crafting School?”

“What?” Bai Yunfei had been glad that he didn’t need to return the bracer back, but at the same time, he had to think of a way to explain how the bracer had ‘upgraded’. Hong Yin’s question had stunned him however, and he replied with his own question, “Big brother Hong Yin, how you ask if I am from the Crafting School? Don’t you know of my situation? From the very beginning, I was taught by senior Ge Yiyun....”

Hong Yin’s eyes stared strangely at Bai Yunfei for some time before finally regaining his wits and shaking his head. “I know that you are tied to the Fate School, that’s why I asked. Otherwise, I would have thought you to be an inner disciple of the Crafting School....”

“En? Why do you say that?” Bai Yunfei’s eyebrows raised up in confusion.

“This bracer’s transformation is truly too inconceivable. I can only think of one way that this is possible, and that is if you are a disciple of the Crafting School. A disciple that understands the way to use the essence fireseed to refine and create a soul armament!”

“People say that the Crafting School has a secret method for when they advance in soulforce, they can use the condensed essence fireseed and the strengthened amount of pure elemental fire to craft a soul armament. They can upgrade this soul armament, and because of the essence fireseed that has harmonized with their own body, they create a special connection between their soul and the soul armament. From this, they can bring out the true power of their soul armament, and so the men of the Crafting School call them soulbound armaments.”

“Naturally, this is something only the people of the Crafting

School is willing to do. Other soul cultivators with the essence fireseed are very reluctant to do so. The more they have, the less they are willing to waste some of it to craft a soul armament. After all, there is only one time to condense the essence fireseed, and the more it grows, the far smoother the path of cultivation will be for them in the future....”

“I’d guess that this bracer’s transformation was definitely because of your advancement that it grew, correct? That must be the reason why you only had half of the essence fireseed as well. But, you really aren’t a disciple of the Crafting School, so how was it that you are able to improve the bracer to such a degree like this....”

Bai Yunfei’s head drooped down as he quickly processed the information given to him by Hong Yin. His eyebrows furrowed together as his eyes sparkled with light.

Gradually, there was a light of understanding that flashed through his eyes....

## Chapter 88: 'Flame Dagger' of the Bracer

---

Bai Yunfei's head drooped down in thought. Gradually, there was a light of understanding that flashed through his eyes....

“So that's the reason. I didn't understand why the Firetipped Spear and the bracer had been upgraded, but if we follow what big brother Hong Yin says....then it was because of the fireseed essence. Although I'm not from the Crafting School and don't know the way of crafting....I have the Item Upgrade Technique! I may not know why this is, but if my guess isn't wrong, when the essence fireseed mixed with the soul item, the Upgrade Technique had also made a special connection to it to have this type of result. But not only was the quality of the item increased, it was upgraded without my control of it. Could this be....the mystery that is the Upgrade Technique?”

“But, my Upgrade Technique didn't have anything to do with the essence fireseed in the past....maybe after I became a Soul Sprite, the condensed essence fireseed had gained some sort of special property to it that allows for a hundred percent upgrade rate? It's a shame I can't experiment on this and find out. After having the essence fireseed fuse with my body, it's become too different since before I became a Soul Sprite....”

“Yunfei, what are you thinking about?” Hong Yin's voice entering his ear had caused Bai Yunfei to snap back into awareness.

“It's nothing....big brother Hong Yin, I think....” Bai Yunfei hesitated. Then as if he had made up his mind, he spoke to Hong Yin, “Big brother Hong Yin, could I see all of your soul armaments?”

Hong Yin stared blankly, “Eh? What for?”

“That is....” Bai Yunfei didn't know how to respond. But then he thought of a way, “You know already. I have a few secrets that I cannot let others know about. In truth, the reason why the Glacial

School is so dead set on chasing me down is mainly because of this. I know big brother Hong Yin won't put me in danger, and even if I have no reason to explain in detail, I will tell you. I can....upgrade weaponry. Although I can't upgrade it to the point of this bracer, I can at least bring up the power by a small amount....”

“What! Is that true?!” Hong Yin's eyes let out a brilliant ray of light as he stared seriously at Bai Yunfei.

“En. I cannot explain the method, but I can do it.” After speaking, Bai Yunfei didn't hide anything back and maintained a calm expression.

The light in Hong Yin's eyes receded as he gave a contemplative look. With a shake of his right hand, a white dagger appeared in it. Handing it over to Bai Yunfei, he said, “Even if it's a weapon like this, what can you do with it?”

In the split moment he saw the dagger, Bai Yunfei immediately felt his heart leap into his throat. A strong bloody smell could be felt from it. And for a moment, Bai Yunfei had felt that there was an illusion placed onto him that made him see a red-eyed wolf growling towards him.

This illusion had been for a moment before vanishing. When Bai Yunfei had regathered his thoughts, there had been nothing out of the ordinary, and the dagger was just an ordinary one. No—calling it ordinary wouldn't be apt. Because at a closer observation, he had discovered that this dagger would be better off being described as the fang of some sort of beast. It was practically grinded and polished from a fang and fashioned into a crude type of dagger.

The Bloodhowl Fang was rumored to said to belong to the Bloodhowl Wolf King when it reached the eighth level. It would use its own fang to craft a weapon with an unbelievably sharp point and tremendous power. In the world of soul cultivators, it was an extremely well known soul armament. Naturally, Bai Yunfei didn't know that, but he could feel that this weapon had a

strange make to it and felt doubtful.

But despite the doubtful look on Bai Yunfei's face, when he took the weapon into his hands a thunderstruck look overtook it.

Equipment Grade: Low Regalia

Attack: 2257

Upgrade Requirement: 113 Soulpoints

“Low regalia!! Regalia....” Bai Yunfei was stupefied. His mind was in turmoil, and so he couldn't help but utter out in shock, “Low-heaven tier!”

Hong Yin had been studying Bai Yunfei's expressions. It was at this moment that his eyebrows rose up with an ‘just as expected’ type of look. Smiling, he said, “As I expected, Yunfei, you could tell the quality of it at a single touch? Not bad. This dagger is called the “Bloodhowl Fang”. Although it is barely just at the heaven rank, its power is unbelievable strong.”

“So how about it? Even if its a heaven-tier soul armament, will you be able to increase its strength as you said you could?” Hong Yin stared at the contemplative Bai Yunfei with an expecting look.

After a moment to think, Bai Yunfei braced himself and nodded his head. “En, there won't be any problems. I just need some time. Tomorrow I will return this back to big brother Hong Yin.”

“Oh, really now?” Hong Yin was overjoyed. Smiling, he said, “En, take your time, there's no need to rush. Even if you took a few days, it would be fine.”

Bai Yunfei smiled at the sight of an overjoyed Hong Yin, “Haha, big brother Hong Yin, how could you be so carefree? This is a heaven-tier soul armament. Aren't you afraid I'd run off with it?”

Hong Yin stared blankly for a moment before shooting a baleful eye at him, “You underestimate your old brother. Do you really

think you would be able to run away from me? Haha....”

After a brief discussion, Hong Yin had reminded Bai Yunfei of several facts that should be known regarding the original property of his soul and to not try to increase his soulforce for the time being. Bai Yunfei would have to first familiarize himself with the newfound energy he had as well. He was at the middle Soul Sprite stage, but even if his body had adapted to the energy, he still needed to learn how to control it. His level of control was still at the Soul Warrior stage and so he would have to first familiarize himself with the power of the Soul Sprite before he could try to advance again.

.....

That night, Bai Yunfei sat cross-legged on the bed with the Bloodhowl Fang in hand and his mind solely concentrated on upgrading it.

This would be the very first time he was able to upgrade an equipment at the level of Artifact, so Bai Yunfei didn’t dare to be sloppy about it. Who knows whether or not during the upgrade that it would behave in a similar pattern to a Rare or Legacy item.

But it had been smooth sailing for now. The things that Bai Yunfei was worried about had never come to past. Aside from a few wasted soulforce and the lower probability of the upgrade being successful, nothing unexpected had happened, allowing Bai Yunfei to upgrade the item all the way to +10.

Equipment Grade: Low Regalia

Upgrade Level: +11

Attack: 2257

Additional Attack: 1263

+10 Additional Effect: When attacking, there is a 30% chance to inflict 'Intimidation', forcing the opponent's overall attributes to drop 20% for 10 seconds.

Upgrade Requirement: 113 Soulpoints

---

Bai Yunfei wiped at his head with his left hand in exhaustion. “An Artifact tier equipment is not that easy to upgrade. To just upgrade it to +10, I’ve already failed six times and wasted around 2500 soulpoints. I’m almost at my limit, so that must mean the amount of soulpoints I have as a mid-stage Soul Sprite would be around 3000 or so....”

“Any equipment above the Rare tier would have roughly half the original attack power as an additional attack power when it’s +10. Does that mean all soul armaments are this way? It’s sad that I don’t have much contact with many soul armaments or any way to test it. Plus, I don’t dare continue to upgrade them! The dangers are too much, and if I fail now, then I wouldn’t even have two sticks to rub together. The Firetipped Spear and bracer were upgraded by luck. It’s too bad there won’t be a second chance of having that happen again....”

Bai Yunfei tilted his head to look at the Bloodhowl Fang with some satisfaction, “It has more than half its original attack power now, I wonder if big brother Hong Yin will be happy with this? The additional effect isn’t bad either. Thirty percent is already pretty high, and dropping the opponent’s overall attributes by twenty percent, does that mean their speed and strength? With big brother Hong Yin having such a superior strength, combined with this effect, then....he’d be able to control victory itself!”

Putting away the Bloodhowl Fang, Bai Yunfei thought for a moment before taking out the crimson bracer.

“The +10 additional effect I’ve already tested when battling Zhang Zhengshan. Its effect was extremely unusual and basically meant that I was able to borrow my opponent’s strength for my own attack. Combining defense and offense together, I was able to flip the tides of battle around unexpectedly! This +12 ‘flame winged

dagger' is something I haven't tried before. It consumes soulpoints upon activation? Does that mean...."

Bai Yunfei adorned the bracer onto his right arm and then concentrated his soulforce to enter the bracer. The bracer flashed with a crimson light that filled the entire room, but other than that, nothing had changed.

"Eh? What does this mean? Why didn't the 'flame winged dagger' appear...." Just as Bai Yunfei was confused, the words 'summon flame winged dagger' had popped up in his mind and....

"Bang!"

With a gentle booming sound that shook the entire room, another crimson burst of light flew out from the bracer along with a ball of fire on top of it. Forming over Bai Yunfei's arm, a 'piece' of fire began to extend outwards from the bracer and elongated and thinned out to form a flaming dagger roughly a third of a meter long.

Bai Yunfei was stupefied for a brief second before immediately shaking himself out of his thoughts. Fixating his eyes onto the 'flame winged dagger', his eyes began to sparkle.

"Is this it? This is an extremely small form, I wonder how strong it is...." With a twist of his left hand, a +9 dagger appeared in it. Holding it up to his eye level, he waved his right hand down so as to command the flame dagger down.

"Crack!" With a sharp clattering sound, half the blade had fallen to the floor. Bai Yunfei had held the other half where several drops of molten iron could be seen dripping from the broken edge. From the looks of it, the blade seemed as if it had been smelted and molted off!

"Siiiiii...." Bai Yunfei let out a breath of cold air before waving his hand to recollect the broken blade. Looking at the slightly shaking flame dagger above his right arm, he had a gleeful smile. "What a



strong flame! This is the smallest form yet, so if I add even more soulforce into it....”

Bai Yunfei urged his soulforce into the bracer, causing the flame dagger to explode and elongate another third of a meter longer. The scorching heat of the blade had skyrocketed as well.

Gazing his eyes onto it, Bai Yunfei cut off the stream of soulforce and watched as the dagger become a spark and disappearing out of sight.

“Good, good!! I didn’t think that this ‘flame winged dagger’ would have such a strong power! Although the soulforce consumption is big, it is completely worth it! Like this, my strength has grown once again!!” Bai Yunfei’s heart was beating with emotions. He looked at the crimson bracer and muttered to himself, “Well then. I’ll call you the ‘Flameblade Bracer then!”

After a moment’s rest, he took out a piece of jewelry from his space ring.

“Then I’ll upgrade some jewelry too and give the best one to Yuhe. When one promises something, they cannot eat their words....”

“Upgrade....”

## Chapter 89: Upgrade Complete

---

On the next brisk morning when Bai Yunfei had finished cultivating and was washing his face, Chu Yuhe brought him breakfast “on time”.

“Brother Yunfei, are you up? Master said that you just made a breakthrough and needed time to consolidate and had forbidden me from seeing you yesterday... How are you feeling now?” Chu Yuhe asked while placing a bowl of congee and several dishes of food onto a table.

“En, I’m fine. Yuhe doesn’t need to worry about me.” Bai Yunfei smiled.

“That’s great then. Brother Yunfei should eat something. I made this breakfast myself!” Chu Yuhe had a dainty smile on her face as she sat in front of Bai Yunfei. Resting her head on her lily-white hands, her eyes blinked repeatedly as she watched him.

Seeing how this girl was waiting with that ‘praise me’ expression, Bai Yunfei couldn’t help but laugh. His heart felt a happy emotion well up inside of him, “En, I’ve troubled you, little sister Yuhe.”

“It was no trouble. No trouble at all! Big brother Yunfei should eat quickly now.” Chu Yuhe’s smile grew even wider and happier.

“Oh, I forgot to ask. Is big brother Hong Yin still next door, has he eaten breakfast yet?” Bai Yunfei asked while staring at the door.

“Hehe, brother Hong Yin woke up a long time ago! Sister Qiu already gave him some breakfast earlier. Now the two of them are both at the lakeside looking at some dog.”

“Eh? Dog?” Bai Yunfei was taken aback before realizing something, “Oh, do you mean the Thunderwolf? Is brother Hong Yin trying to communicate with it again?”

“En, he is. Big brother Hong Yin is trying his best to talk with it, but it’s ignoring him. Even if Xiao Tang dances on its head or a

finger is used to scratch its ear, there is no reaction.”

Bai Yunfei looked at the ‘mischievous’ look on her face before smiling, “Haha, don’t say that to Xiao Tang or else it’ll get angry and dump you into water.”

“Hmph, I wouldn’t even bother with it. How could a rat be so arrogant?” Chu Yuhe lifted her nose up in an adorable fashion, but she had stopped saying anything bad about Xiao Tang.

Bai Yunfei shook his head before suddenly remembering something. Taking out an item from his space ring, he spoke, “Ah, Yuhe. I promised to give you a present before, but the matters with the Glacial School took too long. Haha, take a look and see if you like this or not.”

With that, he gave the emerald-colored fish-shaped pendant to her.

Equipment Grade: Superior

Upgrade Level: +11

Additional Attribute: +60 Agility

  

+10 Additional Effect: Increase movement speed by 3%

  

Upgrade Requirement: 34 Soulpoints

This was the remaining piece of jewelry left over from Bai Yunfei’s yesternight attempt at upgrading. In the past he had prepared to give her a fish-shaped pendant as well, but the one now was far stronger than the fish-shaped one.

Chu Yuhe revealed an overjoyed expression at the pendant as she took it into her hands. Giddy, she exclaimed cheerfully, “What a beautiful little fish! I really like it. Thank you, brother Yunfei!”

“En, it’s good if you like it. Try it on, you’ll be even happier!” Bai

Yunfei smiled with a mysterious tone to his voice.

“What do you mean? What will happen when I wear it?” Chu Yuhe asked. Curiously staring at the pendant in her hands, she finally began to put it around her neck.

“Ehhh? What a strange feeling...” A split second after wearing the pendant, Chu Yuhe felt stunned. Her mouth dropped open in exclamation.

Her current strength was quite weak, so an abrupt increase of 60 points in agility was a considerable increase to her.

Seeing the stupefied look on the girl’s face, Bai Yunfei gave a satisfied nod of his head. “How is it? Yuhe, do you feel even lighter than before? Let me tell you, when you wear this pendant, you’ll be even faster than before. Haha, how happy are you now? Do you like it?”

The girl was stupefied for a very long time before a look of excitement overcame her face. Staring at Bai Yunfei with stars in her eyes, she said, “Brother Yunfei, is this really because of the pendant? How magical! Did brother Yunfei make this?”

Bai Yunfei nodded. “En, this is your big brother Yunfei’s secret. This will also be Yuhe’s secret. You can’t let anyone else know this. Even if it’s your master or sister Qiu, you cannot tell them. Can you promise me that, Yuhe?”

Chu Yuhe’s face had gone as blank as a board before finally speaking earnestly, “En! Yuhe will remember this and won’t let anyone know about the secret behind this pendant!”

Bai Yunfei gently nodded his head before turning to eat the breakfast on the table. Chu Yuhe continued to happily play with the ‘magical’ pendant that was wrapped around her neck.

Now that he had given the upgraded pendant to Yuhe, Bai Yunfei didn’t have any more worries. The loveable little girl would definitely not reveal his ‘secret’ easily. No one would be able to

figure out that such an ordinary-looking pendant would have such a particular effect unless they knew about it beforehand.

.....

After eating breakfast, Bai Yunfei and Chu Yuhe walked out of the bedroom together and headed for the lake. From far away, they could see Hong Yin and Qiu Luliu both sitting on top of stone stools by the lake. In front of the two were two large figures. Aside from the Thunderwolf, there was the gigantic Giant Goldeye Ape.

One of Hong Yin's hands was pressed against the head of the Thunderwolf as he gathered his spirit and tried to 'communicate' with it. Xiao Tang was on the head of the Giant Goldeye Ape, and continued to leap and jump while tweaking its ears in an attempt to 'bully' the ape. However, there was no response from either creature. Their eyes were void of spirit, and there was no physical reaction at all.

Bai Yunfei stood to the side and gave a nod to Qiu Luliu. Without disturbing Hong Yin, he just stood behind Hong Yin without a word.

Chu Yuhe walked up to Qiu Luliu's side and the two women later walked a few steps away. Their voices were quiet as the little girl began to 'show off' her recently acquired gift. Naturally, she only let Qiu Luliu feel the pendant with her hand. She told Qiu Luliu that it had a 'cute' and 'exquisite' appearance without ever mentioning its special use.

Half a moment later, Hong Yin finally opened his eyes. With a dejected sigh, he waved his hand to recollect both beasts.

"Brother Hong Yin, what happened? Did it fail?" Seeing Hong Yin act this way, Qu Luliu took two steps forward to ask.

Nodding, Hong Yin replied in a low voice, "There was simply no progress at all. Actually, I knew it was a futile attempt, but still... ai!"

“Brother Hong Yin, please don’t be discouraged. I’m sure that you’ll find a way!” Qiu Luliu gave some words of comfort when she saw the look of frustration on Hong Yin’s face.

Sighing, the look of frustration drained from Hong Yin’s face as he turned to Bai Yunfei with a smile. “Yunfei, how did last night's cultivation go? How much longer do you think you’ll need to consolidate your newly acquired strength?”

“I feel that it’s going well. Nothing bad has happened so far. I think that, at most, it’ll take another five or six days before I get a full grasp of being a middle Soul Sprite.” Yunfei nodded.

“Ai, Yunfei. Why is it that I feel that each word you speak is like a physical blow to me? Really. I can’t afford to be lazy anymore. I must practice hard to increase my strength. Little sister, let us return to cultivate...” Qiu Luliu gave a feigned and exaggerated faint as a joke before pulling the still confused Chu Yuhe toward the other courtyards. In truth, she realized that there was something both Bai Yunfei and Hong Yin wanted to say to each other; therefore, she had made an excuse to leave first.

Watching the two girls leave, Bai Yunfei smiled to Hong Yin and waved his right hand. The Bloodhowl Fang appeared in his right hand before he handed it over back to Hong Yin.

“Eh? You really finished that fast?” Hong Yin was startled, and skeptically picked it up with his hands.

The moment the Bloodhowl Fang touched his hands, Hong Yin’s eyes flashed brightly and he immediately shut his mouth to stop from saying anything more to Bai Yunfei. His face carried a look of seriousness as he studied the weapon in his hands with rapt attention.

The Bloodhowl Fang was his weapon, so he was extremely familiar with it. With a detailed examination, his eyes brightened even more as a thunderstruck expression overcame his face.

“Mid-heaven tier! A mid-heaven tier!! It actually increased a rank....” Hong Yin had a look of utter disbelief as he spoke.

Hearing his words, Bai Yunfei’s eyes suddenly flashed with realization, “When the attack power reaches over 3000, does it become a mid-heaven tier soul armament? For them, they rank a soul armament based off of its attack and defense. Naturally, they never had an ‘additional effect’ before... but with the Upgrade Technique, it shows off the original quality. For example, the Flameblade Bracer was originally a low-earth tier armament before I upgraded it. But after upgrading it to +12, brother Hong Yin said that it was a high-earth tier soul armament. That must be because after the upgrades, the cumulative sum of the attack or defense power was enough to become a high-earth tier soul armament...”

“This really is too crazy to be true. Yunfei, just how did you manage this? In a single night, a low-heaven tier soul armament became a mid-grade one. If news of this were to leak into the world of soul cultivators, do you know just how big of a clamor this would make? As far as I know, even a talented senior of the Crafting School would find it incomparably difficult to increase the ranking of a soul armament. Back when my adoptive father first made this armament, the Bloodhowl Fang was only at the high-earth tier. It was only after an enormous payment that a senior of the Crafting School managed to use countless of materials and an entire month to bring it up to the heaven tier. Even after that, he had been forced to take a dozen days of closed door cultivation to make up for the exhaustion. But you...” Hong Yin thought about how it had taken a single night to increase the quality of the armament with a seemingly calm expression, but he had no idea just what to say to Bai Yunfei next.

“Oh? The senior of the Crafting School is truly amazing!” Bai Yunfei hadn’t paid attention to the lack of ‘compliment’ by Hong Yin since he had been shocked by what Hong Yin had said about the Crafting School.

According to what he now knew of the properties of upgrading a soul armament with the Upgrade Technique, a high-earth tier soul armament had an attack or defense power between 1200 to 2000. After the Fire-tipped Spear and Flameblade Bracer were upgraded, they were considered to be low-heaven tier soul armament between 2000 and 3000. For the soul armament past 3000, they were mid-heaven tier. For the time being, Bai Yunfei had no idea just what it would take to be considered a high-heaven tier.

If the Bloodhowl Fang was at its prior high-earth tier, then it would have roughly 1200 attack power at the very least. Even if it was upgraded ten times, it would add another half of its attack strength, meaning that it would be able to make it to the top of the high-grade earth-tier. However, a man of the Crafting School had been able to bring it to the low-heaven tier!

Hong Yin's lips twitched. He simply had no idea how Bai Yunfei would be able to easily upgrade a soul armament to such an extent. Just how would a senior of the Crafting School be so amazing in comparison...



# Chapter 90: Departure

---

Bai Yunfei thought for a moment before temporarily putting those thoughts aside for later. Raising his head, he said, “Ah, brother Hong Yin, there is still something concerning the Bloodhowl Fang that I need to tell you.”

“Eh? Concerning the Bloodhowl Fang?” Hong Yin was surprised. Then as if thinking of something, he grew worried and asked, “Is it because it was upgraded, there’s some sort of side effect to using it? Don’t tell me that it’ll impair the soul armament in some way?”

Bai Yunfei shook his head with a smile, “Brother Hong Yin, don’t worry. It’s not that. As it is now, this soul armament won’t have any side effects. I just wanted to tell you aside from it being increased in strength by a half, there is... there is still an even more special ‘function’.”

Hong Yin sighed in relief before asking in confusion, “A special ‘function’? What does that mean?”

“Oh, that is....” Bai Yunfei thought for a moment. He was unsure of how to explain this additional effect to him and had to ponder to himself before finally explaining, “When you are using the Bloodhowl Fang against an opponent, there is a thirty-percent chance that your opponent will have his or her body’s capabilities reduced by twenty-percent. For example, speed and strength. When you feel some of your soulforce leak into your Bloodhowl Fang without your control, that means that you have activated this special ‘function’.”

“Eeee...” When Hong Yin heard what Bai Yunfei said, he still had the same look of confusion as before. “What... what do you mean by that?”

It was not as if he did not comprehend what Bai Yunfei was saying. It was only that, to his knowledge, there had never been a soul armament that had such a ‘function’ like this before, so he

was quite distracted.

Bai Yunfei nodded his head in earnest, “You didn’t hear wrong, and I’m not joking with you. It’s as I say. In a battle, there is a chance to weaken your opponent’s fighting capabilities.”

“Is what you’re saying true?” Hong Yin’s eyebrows creased together unconvinced, “But...”

“How about this. We will test it out and let big brother Hong Yin experience the feeling. I believe that you will understand what I mean then.” Bai Yunfei laughed gently before taking the Bloodhowl Fang into his own hands. “I’ll attack you right now. Naturally, I’ll make the simplest chopping motion. Brother Hong Yin just needs to block it. I doubt there’ll be any problems now will there?”

Hong Yin looked at the earnest look on Bai Yunfei’s face with some excitement. He could see that Bai Yunfei held the Bloodhowl Fang and gave a rather expecting nod, “En, that’s fine. I’ll see for myself just how special that ‘function’ of yours is!”

Bai Yunfei said nothing more. He hoisted the dagger to gently slash it down toward Hong Yin. Hong Yin formed a sword with his fingers. A nearly invisible azure-colored light appeared on the tips of his fingers and blocked the Bloodhowl Fang. Naturally, there was no actual effort of fighting seriously from Bai Yunfei. Otherwise, a mid-heaven tier soul armament would never be able to be so easily blocked like this.

After the fourth strike, Bai Yunfei’s eyes began to sparkle as he felt a part of his soulforce trickle into the soul armament without his control — effect activated! With this realization, he stopped attacking and displayed a faint smile at Hong Yin.

The split-second after blocking the fourth ‘attack’, Hong Yin’s curious expression was replaced by a thunderstruck one. His entire body began to slightly tremble, and he took several unconscious steps back. Then, with a terrified look at his right hand, he

evidently realized the changes that had occurred in his body.

“This... this...” Hong Yin’s head turned to look at Bai Yunfei in complete disbelief.

Bai Yunfei smiled, “How is it? Brother Hong Yin, did you feel that your strength had suddenly dropped by twenty-percent or so? There’s no need to worry. It’ll last another ten seconds, but you’ll recover even faster if you use your soulforce to resist it.”

Two seconds after Bai Yunfei had finished speaking, Hong Yin’s expression loosened before he resumed his usual one. Still in shock, Hong Yin stared at the soul armament in Bai Yunfei’s hand before slowly speaking, “It’s really... Yunfei, you’re saying that as long as I use this to fight, there is a thirty-percent chance for the opponent to enter the same state I was in?”

Bai Yunfei nodded before handing the Bloodhowl Fang back.

Hong Yin accepted it with a stunned glance at the soul armament in his hands. Finally recollecting it, he sighed to calm down his nerves and looked back at Bai Yunfei with a strange expression. “Yunfei, you’re really... you must know that if word of you being able to make such a ‘change’ to this Bloodhowl Fang were to get out, how much of a clamor that would make?”

Bai Yunfei laughed, “I know about that naturally, but I think that brother Hong Yin won’t easily tell my secret, would you?”

Hong Yin looked at him for a half moment longer before suddenly breaking out with a laugh. Excitement flashed through his eyes, “Yunfei. I’m really glad to have rescued you. I didn’t expect such a huge return so quickly. The way I see it, using the fireseed spirit mushroom to receive a transformed Bloodhowl Fang was completely worth it.”

“Brother Hong Yin’s fireseed spirit mushroom was an act of kindness that saved my life. To upgrade the strength of the Bloodhowl Fang was something that was only a slight effort in

repaying my debts. Please do not worry about it.”

“A slight effort...” Hong Yin’s eyebrows slightly flew up. Deciding not to continue asking about this, he asked, “Ah, Yunfei, are you prepared to leave from here? Where do you plan to go next?”

Bai Yunfei nodded, “En, I’ve given it some thought. After a few more days, I will leave here. If not for the Glacial School, I would have already been in the Northern Cliff Province. I’ll go straight through Northern Cliff Province toward the Great Plains Province to pay a visit to the Crafting School.”

“Oh? Do you really plan on going to the Crafting School?”

“Yes. I would say that brother Hong Yin has a bit of understanding with my secret. It is best shown on soul armaments, but after a certain point of upgrading, there is a big risk of completely destroying the soul armaments. For example, the Bloodhowl Fang is at the best I can upgrade it without risk of destroying it. If I tried to continue and upgrade it, there is a chance it would have been destroyed, leaving us with nothing. Therefore, I wish to visit the Crafting School; if I can learn to craft soul armaments myself, then combined with my abilities, I should be able to accomplish much more. Plus, brother Hong Yin said that those from the Crafting School are capable of recrafting and strengthening a soul armaments to make it even stronger. I wish to know this as well and see if there is any relation with the method I have.”

“It’s... possible to make it stronger...?” Hong Yin’s lips twitched as he failed to keep his shock from showing. He never would have thought that the increase of strength already done to the Bloodhowl Fang was considered to be in that ‘risk-free range’. Although Bai Yunfei said that there was an ever-increasing risk of the soul armaments being destroyed, he did not say it would always end in failure. If he succeeded, then the power then... let alone his mind, Hong Yin’s heart was quickly leaping in place.

“Ah, brother Hong Yin. What do you plan to do from here on out?” Just as Hong Yin was stuck deep in his thoughts, Bai Yunfei’s voice snapped him back to reality.

“I’ll stay here in Qingyun for a while. I originally came here to look for senior Ge Yiyun, but since I’ve stayed in Cuiliu City for several days, I don’t even know if senior Ge is still in the Qingyun Province...”

“Is that so? Then it seems that we’ll be destined to meet again in the future. If brother Hong Yin ever needs my help in the future, please come to the Crafting School and find me.”

“Haha, the Crafting School is very stringent on accepting apprentices. Are you that positive that you’ll be accepted in, Yunfei?” Hong Yin chuckled before explaining himself, “But if it’s you, I doubt there’ll be any problems. You are a soul cultivator with the property of fire and have the strength of a Soul Sprite. As long as there is no suspicions to your character, the Crafting School will not decline you. Furthermore, you haven’t entered the Crafting School yet but you already own a soulbound armament. A feat like this is pretty awe-inspiring to the Crafting School. Being inducted straight into the Crafting School as a leading disciple wouldn’t be too unimaginable.”

“Soulbound armament...” Hearing this, Bai Yunfei couldn’t help but look at the Flameblade Bracer wrapped tightly around his right wrist. Fingering the space ring on his hand, Bai Yunfei could feel the presence of the Fire-tipped Spear inside. There was a wonderful feeling between him and the two soul armaments, and even the response from the Fire-tipped Spear could be felt.

“Oh. Brother Hong Yin, I’ll give this space ring back to you.” Bai Yunfei suddenly remembered that Hong Yin had brought him all the equipment he used to train in a space ring with considerable size inside. Taking it out, Bai Yunfei wished to return it to Hong Yin.

Hong Yin carelessly waved his hand, “You take it, Yunfei. I don’t need this space ring.”

“Oh, then I’ll have to thank brother Hong Yin again.” Bai Yunfei didn’t decline the ring and placed it back within his robes.

Hong Yin tilted his head down in thought before seemingly coming to some resolution. With a shake of his right hand, he took out a white skull fragment belonging to some sort of beast. It was about the size of his palm and he offered it to Bai Yunfei.

“Yunfei, take this with you. I believe that one day, you’ll enter the Soulbeast Forest to find your own soul beast to partner with. Many soul beasts now treat soul cultivators with hostility because many soul cultivators have had an extreme change in attitude toward soul beasts. In the future, if you come across a strong beast, take this out. As long as there isn’t some sort of conflict between you and the soul beast, they will not make things difficult for you.”

“Soulbeast Forest? Why would I go there?”

“You’ve forgotten what I said. Every soul cultivator wishes to have a strong soul beast as a partner. You won’t understand this now, but you will understand when you enter the Crafting School and become stronger. When the time comes for you to gain a soul beast to call a partner, you must treat them as you would a friend. Don’t be like some soul cultivators and treat soul beasts like a slave or a sacrificial pawn...”

“Don’t worry, brother Hong Yin. I’ve long since learned from you how to treat a soul beast.” Bai Yunfei looked to Xiao Tang on Hong Yin’s shoulder. Taking the bone fragment, he asked, “But this, how do I use it? Do I just need to take it out? Why is it that I feel that this is just a regular-looking bone fragment?”

“Pour a bit of your soulforce into it.” Hong Yin instructed.

Bai Yunfei did as Hong Yin instructed, and pushed his soulforce into it. The bone fragment immediately flashed with a red light

before a blood-colored wolf suddenly appeared over the bone. There was a tyrannical aura that exuded from it, and Bai Yunfei nearly dropped the bone fragment in fright as if this red light was the precursor to an explosion. However, he was able to quickly calm himself.

Hong Yin chuckled, “It’s as you see it. Though you have to remember, use it for a soulbeast with extraordinary strength and is advanced enough to be able to speak with the human tongue. Soul beasts of an inferior level won’t be able to recognize such a thing.”

Bai Yunfei thought for a moment with hesitation. “Brother Hong Yin, something like this... shouldn’t it be extremely precious? Yet you’re giving it to me...”

“You don’t need to pay attention to that, just take it.” Hong Yin waved his hand. “You call me brother, and I, Hong Yin see you as a friend, so there is no need for these formalities. The continent is boundless, but the world of soul cultivators can be small at times. We will definitely meet again.”

“Then... I won’t say anything more about it. If brother Hong Yin wishes to increase the power of his soul armament, then please find me. This is the only way I can think of ever repaying you with my skillset...” Bai Yunfei spoke in embarrassment.

“What are you saying? You speak as if your brother Hong Yin is just treating you as a way to help strengthen my soul armaments.” Hong Yin laughed. “But still. When you enter the Crafting School, there’ll be a day when you become a crafting artisan and there will be plenty of people looking to have you make a soul armaments for them. When the day comes for me to find you, you have to make me your first priority in making an exceptional soul armaments.”

“No problem! As long as I can do it, I will definitely make brother Hong Yin a one-of-a-kind soul armament!!”

Bai Yunfei took the bone fragment and thought for a moment before asking, “Brother Hong Yin, I’m still not that experienced in

combat. With this sudden explosion of strength, I still need to be able to coordinate myself in an actual fight. For the next few days, could I trouble brother Hong Yin in exchanging blows with me and giving me pointers on fighting?”

“Of course! Why not here and now? Let me see just how familiar you’ve become with your power as a middle Soul Sprite.”

“Okay!”

.....

In the following days, Bai Yunfei became at ease with himself, and focused completely on familiarizing himself with his strength with Hong Yin. He profited greatly from their sessions, and sometimes even You Qingfeng would come to be the one to fight him. As a result, Bai Yunfei’s skill in combat improved by leaps and bounds with a tremendous amount of experience.

In his spare time, Bai Yunfei would sometimes travel with Chu Yuhe. The girl knew that he would be leaving in a few days and was reluctant to see him go. He had to guarantee her many times that he would be back one day to find her in order to make her feel better.

In these few days, Bai Yunfei had felt that he was getting by quite richly. It had been a fight for survival since he had stopped in Talus City, and now he could feel the warmth of having everyone as friends.

Six days later outside the gates to Jade Willow City in the morning.

Bai Yunfei was sent off by everyone. After leaving the extremely eventful Jade Willow City, he began to trek toward the Northern Cliff Province.

Before he had left, You Qingfeng had given him a sealed letter and had told him he would be able to reach Gaoyi City after making his way through the Northern Cliff Province to the Great



Plains Province. In the city would be the Liu family which was an affiliated power of the Wood School. If Bai Yunfei needed any help at that time, he would be able to hand over the letter to the Li family.

After walking several hundred meters, Bai Yunfei turned his head back to slowly look at everyone. Hong Yin, Chu Yuhe, Qiu Luliu, You Qingfeng, and Mu Wanqing... in comparison to when he had stumbled and scrambled to escape from Talus City to his hurried exit from Snowpeak City, leaving Jade Willow City with so many people sending him off unexpectedly brought forth a feeling, never-before felt, of reluctance to leave.

Seeing everyone wave their hands, Bai Yunfei sucked in a deep breath and turned away resolutely. He gradually disappeared down the road.

After several twists and turns, Bai Yunfei had finally stepped out of this 'trap' that had been his 18 years of life, and had finally stepped onto this unknown-filled 'path of freedom'...

With the Crafting School as his goal and the need to transverse through the Northern Cliff Province, what other wonderful stories will be told here?

Whatever may happen on this unknown road, one would only know after walking it....

-----

The first book has ended, but my heart still feels a little sorrow. I had originally planned on making the departure a little more detailed, but because I'm not experienced with describing emotional moments, I couldn't accurately depict it. And so my brush has made its course. After an entire day, only 4000 characters had been written for this chapter. Even I'm a little speechless, I had originally planned to release this yesterday, but it ended up being pushed to tomorrow. I will need to carefully plan the events in the second book, so I will need some time to think

and tidy up my thoughts. I hope everyone can forgive me for this.

And finally, thank you to everyone one of my readers that have supported me up to now. I hope in the future everyone will be satisfied with my story!

# Book 2 - Wandering the Northern Cliff Province

# Chapter 91: Just Arrived at Stonegroove City and the Space Ring is Already Stolen?!

---

The Northern Cliff Province was on the very border of the Skysoul Empire. At this time in the eighth month of the year, the Northern Cliff Province had been in a very long drought. It was scorching the majority of the time and the entire earth baked.

Stonegroove City was the provincial capital of the Northern Cliff Province. It was also the most flourishing area in the entire province. A single eye wouldn't be enough to see the entirety of this gigantic city standing on top of a mountain. The most particular part to this city was the surrounding parts of the city. There were countless of stones scattered everywhere in a dense blanket. Some lay high and some lay low, but these areas were like forests of stone. The entire Stonegroove City was 'guarded' by this stone forest.

As the sun began to set, the scorching, hot weather dipped in temperature. On the southern road to Stonegroove City, a single white-robed figure wore a straw hat. He basked in the sunset's glow as headed leisurely toward the city.

The youth raised his head up to the sky. With the shabby straw hat, hands that were completely out of sight, and short, simple hair, he was not very outstanding in looks. However, the firm and serious expression on his face gave any observer a feeling that he was trustworthy.

This youth was Bai Yunfei. From Jade Willow City to now, he had almost always walked on the main roads the entire way without coming across any danger. So naturally he had been in no rush to travel and had felt the emotional rush of traveling for the very first time. Slowly, but not too slowly, he walked around and familiarized himself with the surrounding world. He had spent over a month traveling before he reached the provincial capital of

the Northern Cliff Province.

The reason why the word ‘almost’ was used was because twenty days ago, Bai Yunfei had taken a “totally clear and impossible to be lost” path which had changed his direction. It had taken him half the day to realize that the road was not like what the map had said. Lost, he had found himself in a forest before Bai Yunfei had realized this was wrong. He figured he would be able to quickly make his way out, but the results...

After an entire day of walking around, he had finally made his way out of the forest muddle-headed. It was by good fortune that he had discovered an inn near the forest. Although the fact there was an inn out in a place like that was strange, Bai Yunfei had thought nothing of it and chose to enter the inn to take a quick rest.

He had in fact come across one of the “Black Inns” spoken of in legends. It had been fortunate that the knockout drugs in the well Bai Yunfei had drunk from were not of a good quality. An ordinary person would be affected, but for Bai Yunfei, who was a middle Soul Sprite, it had only taken a circulation of his soulforce for him to flush out the drugs. Those evildoers, who had that wicked gleam in their eyes, had been beaten black and blue by Bai Yunfei, and were forced to scream for their fathers and cry for their mothers as they tried to run away.

It was with noses full of snot and eyes filled with tears that they had sworn they only wanted riches and never harmed anyone’s lives. Bai Yunfei had verified that they weren’t lying before letting them go. If Bai Yunfei had a heart that detested criminals as much as his enemies, then he would have cremated them right where they stood.

After making his way back to the main roads with difficulty, Bai Yunfei had decided that without the direct guidance of another person, he would not travel down a minor road again.

Afterward, Bai Yunfei had traveled as he pleased down the road. He had then finally arrived in the Northern Cliff Province after leaving Jade Willow City forty days ago.

Looking ahead at the stone forest and the protected city above it, Bai Yunfei felt quite shocked. This was a sight he had never seen before. From just this majestic sight alone, Bai Yunfei felt a little elated, and the travel fatigue he had built up was alleviated a little bit as well.

“I’ve already traveled halfway! I’ll rest in this city for two days and continue my journey after. I bet that in not too long, I’ll reach the Great Plains Province and then the Crafting School!” Bai Yunfei began to walk even faster toward the city.

As he got closer to the stone forest, Bai Yunfei discovered that the distance between each pile of stones was quite far. Some of the stones were dozens of meters tall, some were about the height of a short person, and some were wide enough for several people to form a ring around them. There were some stones that were like rocky sticks jutting from the ground while others were buried deep into the ground. In either case, they did not seem to be in danger of collapsing any time soon.

From the stone forest to the city gates, the path was completely straight. Walking past the stone formations felt like there were guards standing watch by the side. They gave the feeling of welcoming him.

After entering the city, Bai Yunfei was greeted by a never seen before level of flourishment. In the past, he had thought that Jade Willow City was a magnificent city in terms of how much it flourished, but compared to Stonegroove City, Jade Willow City was like a beginner magician in front of a grand magus.

In terms of the width of the streets, the streets of Stonegroove City were double that of Jade Willow City. Five or six carriages wouldn’t even be enough to completely fill the city streets. Even at

night, there were still plenty of people to be seen walking to and fro. Sometimes, there would even be a chariot that shuffled back and forth with a loud clamor.

There were many buildings on both sides of the street that stretched for as far as the eye could see. Despite it not being completely dark out, all of the buildings had plenty of lanterns light. From far away, the interior of the buildings were even brighter than the outside.

Bai Yunfei looked at a three story tall pavilion. On the top, there was a giant signboard labeled “McBun” — clearly it specialized in selling steamed buns. The interior of the building was extremely busy— business was very prosperous for them. The scent of a meat bun could be smelled from the outside, and those passing by couldn’t help but twitch their noses at the aroma. Plenty of people who had just entered the city, hungry from their travels, would brighten at the sight of it and enter the building.

Bai Yunfei felt hungry when he thought about it. Giving it a second thought, he figured this store was much better than the previous store he had been to, the ‘Happy Bun Store’, so he walked right in.

After being escorted to the second floor by a waitress, Bai Yunfei was told they offered many different types of buns. With the waitress offering him the specialties of their store to him, Bai Yunfei ate like a king. In the end, he finally understood just why this store had so many customers. After buying these unique buns, anyone that ate them would be pleased.

After demolishing ten of the buns on the table, Bai Yunfei took a sip of his tea in satisfaction. Picking at his teeth with a toothpick, he called for them to bring him the bill.

Getting up, Bai Yunfei had already taken out several coins to give to the waitress. Turning around to walk down the stairs and out the building, the coin purse in his hand disappeared from sight.

The happily full Bai Yunfei was not paying attention when he left the building. When he had taken out his coin purse from his space ring, a middle-aged man with matted hair and a rather ordinary appearance had been secretly watching him from the corner on the second floor. At the sight of the coin purse, his eyes had gleamed with excitement.

When Bai Yunfei had walked down to the first floor, the man had stood up to pay his bill and followed Bai Yunfei closely. Even as a middle Soul Sprite, Bai Yunfei wasn't paying attention at all!

The streets were still brightly lit since it was not that late, and plenty of people were walking to and fro. Bai Yunfei was in no rush to find an inn to sleep for the night. He decided to stroll around the city first to understand the basic layout of the city and buy a few things.

After half an hour, Bai Yunfei had discovered that there were plenty of soul cultivators in this city!

The unique and abundant soulforce of a soul cultivator would easily create a resonance with other cultivators. Even if he was unable to determine a soul cultivator's true strength, as long as the difference in strength wasn't too much, then a person would be able to tell that the other person was a soul cultivator.

Bai Yunfei could see several rather arrogant looking soul cultivators that made no attempt to hide their power and subsequently intimidated the surrounding civilians into scurrying away from them lest they provoke them. These soul cultivators seemed to be used to it as well. They continued to walk and laugh like tyrants as if they were the only ones on the street.

"Can even a middle Soul Personage dare be so arrogant? Are they not afraid of angering any other soul cultivators? Perhaps... they belong to some of the strongest factions in this city?" Bai Yunfei watched a single soul cultivator throw down someone who hadn't been able to move away in time with narrowed eyes. When he saw



how those few who had been tossed to the ground bowed and scraped their heads in forgiveness, Bai Yunfei could only shake his head. Not caring enough to do anything, he turned around to continue down the road.

Just as he turned around, a single figure had failed to move out of the way in time and crashed into him. While Bai Yunfei didn't budge an inch, the man let out a short cry and fell backwards.

Startled, Bai Yunfei instinctively reached out a hand to grab the wrist of the other person. The other man had been startled as well, and grabbed onto Bai Yunfei's hand so that he was pulled up before falling to the ground.

"Hey! Just what's wrong with you — turning around so suddenly without caring where you are?" A rather frail-looking middle-aged man spoke unhappily while rubbing his right shoulder with his left arm.

"Oh, my apologies." Not expecting to have the other person speak first, Bai Yunfei was stunned. Without arguing, he gave several words in apology before letting the middle-aged man walk away grumbling.

Shaking his head lightly, Bai Yunfei paid him no more attention and continued walking. Before he could even take two steps, his eyebrows suddenly narrowed together in doubt.

"I feel something strange, is something wrong here?"

Thinking for a moment, Bai Yunfei suddenly gasped. Lifting up his right hand, his eyes bulged in shock and his mouth dropped open in utter disbelief.

On the ring finger of his right hand, the space ring on it had disappeared!!

## Chapter 92: The Thief of the Space Ring

---

Even as a mid-stage Soul Sprite, he had his space ring stolen while he was wearing it on his hand!

Bai Yunfei stared at his right hand in awe for two seconds before snapping out of it and whirling around.

“It was that guy just now! It had to be him that stole it!” Bai Yunfei’s eyes narrowed as he searched the crowd. “But how? How was he able to take my space ring without me noticing it at all?! Besides, he’s just an ordinary civilian! Just how....”

Bai Yunfei’s eyes began to search through the several hundred meters of people, but he wasn’t able to find the figure of the person who had bumped into him.

After a fruitless search, Bai Yunfei felt amazed. Relaxing his eyes, Bai Yunfei suddenly thought of something and couldn’t help but let out a faint chuckle, “How did I forget? With that, as long as he doesn’t exit Stonegroove City, I’ll be able to find him no matter where he hides!”

“Do you think that I am easy to bully after stealing my space ring?” Bai Yunfei scratched at his chin. “But how did he know I had a space ring on my right hand? Was he following me for a long time? I didn’t see him for a long time....how was I so careless? Or does he have some sort of method of stealth to hide his presence?”

“First, I have to find him and take back my space ring before anything else.” Bai Yunfei determined. Without another thought, he immediately closed his eyes and began to sense for something while standing in the streets.

If it had been any other soul cultivator, this would be a hard situation for them. However, for Bai Yunfei, finding the location of his space ring wouldn’t be challenging at all. That was because he had his Fire-tipped Spear in his space ring still!

Like Hong Yin had said, the Flameblade Bracer and the Fire-tipped Spear were Bai Yunfei's 'soulbound armaments'. There was a connection between him and the soul armaments, so Bai Yunfei would know of the existence of the Fire-tipped Spear even in the space ring!

Several seconds later, Bai Yunfei's eyes flew up and his mouth curled into a smile. Turning to an alleyway to his left, he began to run down it without hesitation.

Although Bai Yunfei had taken it to be an alley, the width of the alleyway was quite wide in comparison to the streets. It was practically a shortcut to another street with plenty of people in the alleyways along with street stalls.

Following his instincts down this path, Bai Yunfei walked at a brisk pace for a moment before suddenly starting to slow down. Staring at the people in front of him, there was now a suspicious look in his eyes.

His eyes began to narrow as he studied the people in front of him for any discrepancies.

After making his way out from the alley, Bai Yunfei seemed to have made a discovery. Without any hesitation, he quickly overtook and blocked the path of a person.

"Kid, what are you doing?" An elderly voice came out from the person Bai Yunfei had stopped. Afterward, he gave two short coughs in weakness — this was a 70 year old elderly man!

Bai Yunfei studied the appearance of the man in front of him for a long time. No matter how much he looked at him, all he saw was an ordinary elderly man in front of him. His eyes were muddy, his waist was hunched, and his hands were behind his back in a very weak-looking manner.

But... Bai Yunfei's eyes glistened continuously; without a word, his right hand flew forward and grabbed the elder's shoulder!

“Kid, you — what are you doing?!” The elder was startled so much that his body was pushed back. Almost as if he were stumbling back, the elder looked like he would tumble to the ground any second.

Bai Yunfei’s eyes stared deeper. With a step, he used the Treading Wave Step to flash toward the elder. Right underneath the startled eyes of the others, Bai Yunfei grabbed onto the man’s left wrist with his right hand and raised it up to his eyes.

Hidden away in the sleeves of the elder, there was nothing to denote the “elderly” wrinkles that came with age. Instead, there was the arm of a young man filled with energy. More importantly, right on the forefingers of the man was a black ring — this was the space ring of Bai Yunfei!

Before the other man could respond, Bai Yunfei had taken back his space ring. Staring at the thunderstruck ‘elder’, Bai Yunfei spoke icily, “Speak, why did you take my space ring? How did you manage to ‘change’ your appearances like that? Speak the truth, and I’ll...”

Bai Yunfei hadn’t even finished speaking before the eye’s of the man in front of him suddenly changed. From a murky color to clear eyes filled with energy, the man snorted. Bai Yunfei could only feel a spot of emptiness as the other man’s wrist suddenly turned small and escaped his grasp!

The man’s back and waist straightened afterward. There was no more of an elderly feel to him as his foot stomped on the ground and instantly flitted past Bai Yunfei toward another street.

There was a strange light in Bai Yunfei’s eyes. With a twist of his feet, he began to chase after the other man in close pursuit.

Just as the man was about to charge into the alleyway past a crowd, a sudden gust of wind blew past the side of his head. It blew past him and then in front of him before an image quickly followed. Bai Yunfei blocked him once more and brought a fist to

the man's chest!

Helpless to do anything else, the man could only bring up both arms. With a bang, he was sent backward. Bai Yunfei had not used the Overlapping Wave Arts, otherwise he too would have been blown back as well.

“Tsk! How did I get so unlucky to have bothered such an annoying person?” The man's face grew serious with just a sliver of vexation in his face. Taking several steps back, he took a cautious stare at Bai Yunfei while an azure color qi began to move around him. No longer did he look like an aged person, whether it was in appearance or movement, he was clearly a young man!

“Early-stage Soul Sprite!” Bai Yunfei's eyebrows flew up in shock. “There wasn't enough soulforce coming out of him earlier for me to even consider him out of the ordinary before. But now he's bringing out enough soulforce to be a Soul Sprite! Was he hiding his strength before? But... how did he do that?”

“Kid, you've already taken your things back, don't be a bully! Let me leave and we can pretend this didn't happen at all!” Just as Bai Yunfei was thinking, the other man had taken the opportunity to speak first. His voice was no longer old sounding. He had resumed the voice of a young man who had taken his space ring in the first place.

Bai Yunfei had been taken aback before sneering, “You didn't do anything wrong? You stole my things, how could you be so arrogant?”

“Then will you not let me go?” The man's glare hardened. With a cold snort, he brought his foot down and shot toward Bai Yunfei with the speed of wind, “If you wish to fight, then let us fight!”

“Yi? Why are these words so familiar-sounding?” Bai Yunfei's lips twitched. He waited for his opponent to draw close, he then took half a step back and brought his right hand up at the same time. A flash of red light could be seen before Bai Yunfei's hand

grabbed it and slammed it forward.

This was the long-awaited brick!!

# Chapter 93: Jing Mingfeng, 'No Discord, No Concord'

---

“Bang!”

When that man's fist collided with the brick, Bai Yunfei was sent staggering back half a step while the other was sent even farther away with a stunned look. Bai Yunfei had done nothing but stand there instead of pursuing. He knew that the man had wanted to take advantage of the crowd to escape and so he stood guard at the alleyway entrance. If he wanted to escape the other way, then the man would have to run quite far. Bai Yunfei had full confidence that he could chase him if he did retreat the other way though. With both walls being extremely tall, Bai Yunfei would be able to stop him if the man tried to climb them.

“A br-brick??” The man shook his right hand as he looked at the item in Bai Yunfei's hand. He couldn't help but let out a light inhale. With a queer expression, the man's eyes looked at the brick in Bai Yunfei's hand before immediately growing angry, “Kid, what are you playing at? We are both soul cultivators, so show some face, won't you? Did you really want to have me captured and sent to prison? The city council is willing to accept the case of any one soul cultivator, do you think that? If you're going to disturb the lord mayor, then that won't do you any good. You've taken back your space ring, so don't say you suffered any damages. Or do you mean to say you want to kill me to seal the deal!”

“If I wanted to kill you, you would already be spitting blood then.” Bai Yunfei stared the man down. “I didn't think that a soul cultivator at the stage of a Soul Sprite would lower himself to stealing, I have learned a lot. I'll let you go, but you'll need to promise me one thing.”

“Say it!” Knowing that he was in dire straits, the man spoke with clenched teeth.

There was a faint smile on Bai Yunfei's face, "I am quite interested in that transformation ability of yours. To be able conceal your soulforce to the level of a regular person is odd, but you are also capable of perfectly changing your facial appearances. Is that a soul skill? Hand over those two techniques, and I'll let you go."

"What?" The man's eyes grew wide as he stared at Bai Yunfei with an incredulous look. But then his wide open eyes began to grow furious. Then, his face began to twitch so much that his body began to shake. With a loathing glare at Bai Yunfei, the man snapped, "You want the secrets of my family as well! You're just the same as the others....people like you, you've killed my entire family for them! I can't even be let off! Don't think that you'll gain anything from my body....drop dead instead!"

His eyes could nearly spit fire, and his words were nearly incoherent. His teeth gnashed against each other with a low growl escaping them before charging at Bai Yunfei as if he had gone mad!

The azure light around his body began to quicken even faster than before. At the same time of his charge, his right hand gave a twist to allow for a black-colored dagger to appear in it. Charging at Bai Yunfei, he stabbed outwards!

Bai Yunfei had been stunned. He didn't know that the enemy would suddenly become so berserk like that. However, when he saw the scarlet-red eyes of the man, Bai Yunfei's heart had trembled for a moment. Those eyes--Bai Yunfei was all too familiar with it. Back when Li Chengfeng had nurtured a hatred for the mountain bandits, he too had a similar expression. This was a hatred that permeated the bones and all the way into the very soul!

In his distraction, the dagger of his opponent had already drew close to him. Eyes flashing, Bai Yunfei took a step back and dodged the stab. He had not attacked back and instead took several steps to the left. But what he didn't expect was to see his enemy give up on his balance or even defenses. With a toss of the dagger, it felt into



his left hand before relentlessly stabbing at Bai Yunfei's abdomen!

Bai Yunfei's eyebrows flew up, but his feet did not stop moving. While his body had slanted to the side like a tilting doll, the brick in his hand flew out to stop the enemy's left hand. Afterwards, he gave a single spin to slam the brick onto the other shoulder.

"Bang!" Following a slight sound, the person's body had suddenly been sent flying back without warning--this was the sign of the "Hurtling" effect being activated.

The man flew several meters away before coming to a tumble on the ground with a dazed expression. Bai Yunfei did not chase him and instead took the time to shout out, "Hey! I say, don't you have the wrong person here? I only said a single phrase, and you reacted in such a huge manner?"

Still dazed, the man raised his head up to look at Bai Yunfei. His eyebrows raised up as if his mind had been cleared. The look in his eyes had returned to normal as well. Finally, he let out a slight exhale and spoke quietly to himself, "That was close, I lost control at a single phrase? It's lucky that he wasn't an actual enemy, or else....No. I have to learn to suppress my hatred. Jing Mingfeng, when you become strong enough, you can't be as impulsive as this again...."

After recovering himself, Jing Mingfeng waved his hand to recollect his dagger. Looking at Bai Yunfei, he scratched his head in embarrassment. As if speaking to a good friend, he said, "Well....that was my bad. I lost control of myself. Little brother, my mind isn't all-too-clear at the moment. I'll go find myself a doctor. So, with that said, I won't disturb you anymore, goodbye then."

With that, he turned around to walk out from the other entrance of the alley as if all was right in the world.

Bai Yunfei had been gobsmacked. His mouth twitched in confusion if he should laugh or cry before shouting out, "Hey! Did

you think you could get away that easily? You still owe me for trying to steal my space ring!”

Jing Mingfeng’s foot stopped mid step. With an internal sigh to himself, he turned around helplessly. “Then what do you think should happen?”

“What do you mean what I think should happen? I didn’t think anything should happen, okay?” Bai Yunfei spoke. His voice had seemed relaxed, and for some reason, he suddenly didn’t feel anymore hatred for this man. Instead, he had felt a feeling of camaraderie. There was even a notion of ‘this man isn’t bad’ in his mind. Perhaps....it was from that hate-filled stare earlier, or that barely suppressed amount of sorrow in his eyes....

Bai Yunfei looked at the dismayed Jing Mingfeng for a moment before suddenly breaking out into a strange smile. Feeling a chill in the back of his spine, Jing Mingfeng took a step back in warning, “Wha-what are you doing?”

“Haha....” Bai Yunfei chuckled as he weighed the brick in his hand. “If it weren’t for the fact that I had a special method to find you, then I would have lost my space ring to you. That would be rather disastrous to me. If I let you go just like this, then I won’t feel at rest with myself. Let us fight for two more bouts!”

Having said that, Bai Yunfei didn’t even wait for the man to react before his figure flickered away into a mirror image. In the blink of an eye, he had already reached Jing Mingfeng’s front and swung the brick down onto his chest.

Jing Mingfeng had been greatly startled before hurriedly dodging to the side. But Bai Yunfei had predicted that Jing Mingfeng would dodge and twisted his hand to slam the brick into Jing Mingfeng’s chest. The man had only stumbled backwards a bit; there was no damage, and nothing out of the ordinary.

“Hey! What are you doing! What kind of soul cultivator uses a brick to fight!” Jing Mingfeng took several hasty steps backwards

while shouting at Bai Yunfei who had seemed to ignore him. Although his opponent was a soul cultivator who was extremely fast due to his wind property, Bai Yunfei was a level higher than him and had the Wave Treading Steps. There was nowhere to run but into the brick walls.

“I’m saying you....” Jing Mingfeng lifted his hand to block the third attempt when all of a sudden he was sent flying once more. This had ceased his speech, but he had not flown far away because of the wall behind him....

Jing Mingfeng had stood up to dust himself off. There were no visible damages, but he had stared at the brick in Bai Yunfei’s hand in utter confusion--what in the world had happened just then?

Bai Yunfei chuckled before charging forward once more.

Because the battle between these two people had taken place in a rather isolated alleyway. All that could be heard were several bangs along with the indescribable grunting sound of a person.

.....

Jing Mingfeng’s entire body was filled with dirt and grime from where he stood. Cut into a sorry position, his originally white wig had fallen off a long time ago and revealed the black hair underneath. With the original crease marks of an elder still on his forehead, he looked quite grotesque.

Rolling like a donkey to avoid the next blow, he scrambled back with a shout, “Hey! Enough’s enough! I’ve already been sent flying seven times for who knows why, I’m going to get really angry if we repeat this again!!”

Bai Yunfei came to a stop as he looked at the brick in his hands with confusion, “Oh? Seven times already? Well fine then....”

Jing Mingfeng let out a sigh in relief. Just as he was about to say something, Bai Yunfei had beaten him to the punch. “Then one more round, gather up your luck!”

“I....”Jing Mingfeng didn’t even have time to let out a roar of grievance before the brick had slammed into his shoulder. Nothing. The brick slammed into his shoulder again--causing his face to grow dark once more as he realized it was too late to dodge....and then he was sent flying away as if it was his wish.

After tumbling and picking himself off the ground, Jing Mingfeng saw that Bai Yunfei had made no more attempt to chase him. Not willing to stay here any longer, Jing Mingfeng turned around from him to run--who knows whether or not this opponent would drag it out with another phrase of “gather your luck”....

“Hey! Our debts are settled now, I won’t hit you anymore. My name is Bai Yunfei, what’s your name?”

And then the smiling figure of Bai Yunfei could be heard shouting out from behind him. Jing Mingfeng had ceased in his moments for just a second. But instead of turning back, he redoubled his efforts to run out from the alley. As soon as he turned the corner, a sullen but furious roar could be heard from Jing Mingfeng.

“Our debts are settled my ass! Kid, I, Jing Mingfeng will remember this! I was humiliated by you today, but wait for me to get my revenge!”

Bai Yunfei had started for a moment, his lips twitching in response, “I only hit you a few times with a brick. It’s not like you were injured or anything, how petty....”

## Chapter 94: Jing Mingfeng's Action, Preparing to Retaliate?

---

Bai Yunfei shrugged his shoulders without a care for the ‘fighting words’ of Jing Mingfeng. Turning around, he prepared to leave the alleyway.

As soon as he put away the brick into his space ring, Bai Yunfei suddenly came to a stop. Looking at the space ring in his hand, he spoke with narrowed eyes, “Crap, when I took the space ring, it had been worn on his hand! That means he already knows about the special effect of this space ring. If he manages to....”

Thinking about it a little longer, Bai Yunfei shook his head and muttered to himself, “He gave off a similar vibe from that of Chengfeng. Plus, he lost control of himself from just a few words. He’s most likely a man of bitter fate, with his clan all killed.....agh, does that mean to say he’s all alone? With so many people trying to kill him for some sort of secret he holds....isn’t that situation the exact same as my own! Is that why I had such a good impression of him after? But even if he does know about the unique property of this space ring, he won’t be able to guess the reason, so it should be fine. In any case, if he’s interested, he might be willing to settle for a deal....”

Bai Yunfei turned to look off at the direction Jing Mingfeng disappeared behind. Thinking heavily, his eyebrows had smoothened out before he walked out from the alleyway.

.....

In the other direction, Jing Mingfeng had made his way two streets over and carefully entered into one of the inns in the area. Renting a room, he walked in and closed the door with explicit orders to the waitress to not be disturbed.

After changing out from his crumpled clothes, he took out a fresh

new pair of azure robes. With a wave of his right hand for a mirror, he grimaced in pain as he looked at his own face in it. Then, he turned the mirror to focus onto his eyes and began to pay rapt attention as if trying to control something.

Half a moment later, the crinkles on his face had begun to wriggle and squirm in an odd fashion before disappearing from sight completely. His nose began to change in size and shape, his chin began to widen, and even his cheeks began to stretch. His mouth, eyebrows, forehead....the entirety of his face had seemingly made a gradual transformation.

Not even a minute later, the elderly man in the mirror had transformed into a kind-looking 20 year old youth!

Taking a look at the scholarly face of reflection in the mirror, Jing Mingfeng gave a satisfied nod of his head before speaking to himself, “Yea, that’ll do. I’ll use this one for the time being.”

Collecting the mirror, he suddenly felt a little tired. Walking over to his bed, he laid on top of it and let out a long sigh before staring blankly at the ceiling.

“I thought that I had found a kid who was out in the world by himself to seek fortune, but who would have known that he was actually stronger and capable of finding me~!” Jing Mingfeng thought back to his first encounter with Bai Yunfei with a thoughtful look. “My ‘Soul Concealment Art’ and ‘Face Change’ technique are both perfect. Even a Soul Ancestor would be unable to detect it, how was he able to find me so fast?”

“Maybe...it’s not a problem with me but....the space ring?” Jing Mingfeng’s eyes began to glisten. “It has to be. After he found me he immediately grabbed onto my left hand where it was. Clearly he was well aware of the exact location of the ring. How unlucky that I didn’t have time to look inside the ring to see what it had. But still, that ring....”

Jing Mingfeng’s eyebrows crinkled together as if he was thinking

of some sort of unsolvable question. “When I wore the ring, there was a strange sensation, a sort of a strong sensation of power? If only I had some time to look at it, otherwise, I’d know if I was wrong or not....”

“There’s also that ineffable brick. It’s the first time I’ve ever seen a soul cultivator use a brick as a weapon. And clearly, that brick is not any ordinary one. It isn’t a soul armament by any means, but it’s at least half a soul item! I was sent flying by it so easily and there was even a dizzying sensation at one point....maybe he used some sort of soul technique that can only be used with a brick? That’s ridiculous, I’ve heard all that I’ve seen before, but am I really lacking in knowledge?”

“Bai Yunfei...hmph! I’ll remember this! You’ve played me like a monkey, but sooner or later you’ll know just how serious angering me is!”

Jing Mingfeng growled angrily. He had not thought about how it was him that had first provoked Bai Yunfei and ended up having the space ring taken back and hit with a brick....

After resting for a spell, Jing Mingfeng exited from the room and left the inn to mix in with the hustling crowd of people. Even if he were to walk across Bai Yunfei right now, even he wouldn’t be able to tell that this person was the very same one that had stolen his space ring.

.....

Jing Mingfeng had pretended to walk up the street as if he was window-shopping for a book to read. He was now a scholar out on the road to recollect himself. In reality, his eyes were keenly looking all over the streets to seek out his next ‘prey’.

“Agh, although this is the most prosperous city in the Northern Cliff province with plenty of soul cultivators, why can’t I meet one that’s wearing a space ring and can be stolen?” Jing Mingfeng grumbled to himself while eyeing the crowd. “If I come across

another second generation showing off his treasure, that'd be great. The space ring I got from the fourth master of the Chen family was by no means lacking in riches. I could swap them out for money and soul crystals later."

Jing Mingfeng took notice of two arrogant looking soul cultivators from the side with a disdain curl of his lips, "Only idiots show off in front of the public. With how arrogant the soul cultivator world is, it's a wonder how it didn't die out yet."

"Miss, it's getting late. Why don't we return to the inn and come back tomorrow to buy the rest of the items that are needed?"

Jing Mingfeng had just walked past a clothing store when his ears had heard a middle-aged woman speak. He had heard someone else speak before his own eyebrows curled up in wonder, "Soul cultivator! And a strong one at that!"

Within the extremely spacious interior of the store, two figures could be seen standing by the counter. On the outside was a single strong-looking middle-aged woman with a tall stature at around the same height of Jing Mingfeng himself. She was most likely a wife who had grown accustomed to doing the heavy work back in her village, but Jing Mingfeng didn't dare underestimate her. When he had been looking for soul cultivators before, she had registered to be at least at the level of a Soul Sprite. She was currently putting away all her bags into the space ring on her hand while also simultaneously talking to the woman next to her.

Having seen enough, Jing Mingfeng couldn't help but feel his eyes lighten up--white robes and beautiful hair that was like a waterfall. A snowy white face that had reflected the lights from the candles to create a flushed red color. Although it was only from the side, Jing Mingfeng could already determine this was a stunning woman.

Stunned for a moment, Jing Mingfeng shook his head wildly before pretending to be a passerby walking down their way. As he



drew close, the middle-aged woman seemed to have snapped over to watch him attentively with her guard up. But it had thankfully not activated and left Jing Mingfeng undetected.

“The men of the Jing family don’t steal from the elderly, poor, women, or children. I’ll find another way.” Jing Mingfeng thought to himself. Thinking inwardly to himself, Jing Mingfeng walked over to another area before coming to a sudden stop as if he had seen something to cause his eyes to twinkle nonstop.

Several seconds later, a malicious smile overcame his face as he began to growl angrily, “Bai Yunfei, I didn’t think that there would be such a good time to take revenge on you so soon. I will let you know then, what it means to ‘come unexpected and to cry without tears!’”

.....

After several streets had been crossed, Bai Yunfei had found an ordinary-looking inn where he sat on his bed in a closed-shut manner.

“Just why am I feeling nervous? Why is it that I feel that something bad is about to happen?”

Thinking for a bit, Bai Yunfei shook his head and thought to himself, “It’s just my imagination, I haven’t provoked anyone at all yet....”

“That Jing Mingfeng shouldn’t be considered to be an enemy of mine I think.”

# Chapter 95: Taking Liberties With Women

---

Jing Mingfeng looked left and right before looking down and sprinting his way over to the left side of a house. Pretending to lean against the building in weariness, he stared ahead with a calm expression.

Lowering his head, both of his eyes closed like he was trying his hardest to remember something. Muttering to himself, he spoke, “Thin, big forehead, chin...”

As he recalled his memories and muttered to himself, the muscles on his face began to squirm. Ten seconds later, he opened his eyes and brought his head up. His facial appearance was completely different from before. He looked nearly 70-80% similar to Bai Yunfei!

“Yeah, this is the best I can remember. Although it’s not a perfect match, it’s a good estimation. At least there won’t be any problems this way.” Jing Mingfeng felt his face with a rather satisfied nod. Then, aside to himself he said, “Plus, he has short hair, that saves me time.”

Afterward, he revealed a devious smile with the strikingly similar face of Bai Yunfei. If Bai Yunfei were to look at him now, he would surely lay down a beating onto Jing Mingfeng. For this smile had truly been too vulgar.

“Oh, right. Now’s not the time to be happy with myself.” Jing Mingfeng ceased his smile. He quickly began to walk up the road in the direction of the nearby fabric store.

There was practically no one in the fabric shop. Standing on his tiptoes, Jing Mingfeng looked around the area before a look of glee suddenly appeared on his face. There were two figures several hundred meters who were just about to walk into an alleyway to his right.

“Ha, they’re walking into an alleyway with little to no people, that saves me even more time.” Jing Mingfeng laughed darkly before quickly chasing after them.

That particular street was not as busy as the others nearby. It was also getting quite late, and all of the vendor stalls on the side had already packed up for the night. There was only the sporadic light from the nearby buildings along with the moonlight to illuminate the streets clearly.

“Miss, why don’t we stay in Stonegroove City for a few days. It’s already been two months since we left home, you haven’t rested at all since then...” The middle-aged woman spoke to the young woman next to her with a loving and devoted expression.

“There’s no need, aunty Zhao. Do you think a late-stage Soul Warrior like me won’t be able to take a little exhaustion?” The girl turned around with a smile. She brought up her left hand to push a few strands of hair hanging in front of her face to behind her ear. Her skin was as fair as jade with eyebrows bent like willow leaves. The light in her eyes was even brighter than the night sky above her, and when she looked up to admire the starry ceiling, her eyes seemed to glisten along with each individual star. “Besides, we’ve already stayed here for two whole days. I know you want me to rest a little longer, that’s why we didn’t buy anything today. I feel that we’ve stayed here long enough. We’ll buy the remainder of what we need and then hurry up on our way...”

“And...” The girl looked back to stare down the end of the street. Slowly, she spoke, “The faster we get to that place, the sooner you’ll be able to go home and look after mother.”

The aunt’s eyebrows furrowed together before she sighed, “Miss, actually you...”

“Aunty Zhao, I know what you’re going to say, there’s no need to console me.” The girl shook her head. “I’ve endured eighteen years before finally making my way out from that birdcage of a

household. I just want to do as I wish. As long as I have enough strength, then I'll be able to break my mother away from the chains they put on her... the ones who took mother, in my personal opinion, I don't really care. But still... they had added to the suffering of my mother. There'll be a day where I'll definitely return the favor in place of my mother tenfold — no — a hundredfold!"

By the end of her words, the girl's face had begun to grow brighter and brighter with fury as well as a hint of helpless sorrow appeared...

Aunt Zhao's eyes revealed a sliver of pain as well. Seeing the depressed little girl, her eyes reflected her own suffering. Just as she was about to speak, her eyes suddenly flew to the side and shouted angrily, "Youngster, what do you want?!"

As soon as she spoke, a furious burst of energy could be felt as an orange ring of light flew toward them. A single right hand flew out and grabbed onto the little girl's butt with a lecherous claw.

The aunt's reaction had been quick, but the owner of that hand had predicted such a response. With a rapid twist of his wrist, the hand had flown up after grabbing the seam of the girl's clothes.

"Tzzkk!" A ripping sound could be heard as a palm-sized hole began to appear in the girl's clothes. It had been fortunate that the young woman's reaction wasn't slow. With a hurried grab at the top part of her clothes, she had prevented it from being ripped any further.

The aunt had been furious and shocked. It was not that she had not realized someone was nearby. She had indeed realized someone was there, but it was clearly the presence of a regular person whose footsteps suggested they were trying to rush home, so she did not pay him any attention. What she didn't imagine was that that person would suddenly commit an action like this. If she had not reacted as quick as she did, she feared that her distracted mind

would have allowed her young charge to be molested even more.

With his sneak attack a failure, the figure gave off another burst of soulforce to propel him five to six meters away to face them — it was Bai Yunfei! Oh, that's not right. It was actually Jing Mingfeng who was pretending to be Bai Yunfei.

Jing Mingfeng looked at the young woman in front before glancing at the infuriated older woman. His eyes moved back to the little woman who had only just realized the situation. His eyes swiveled to the cloth in his hand. With a vulgar smile, he gave the fragment of cloth a good sniff as if intoxicated and laughed darkly, "What a charming girl, even her clothes are oh so sweet. Hehe... young master has really good luck with ladies. Pretty lady, allow this young master to look after you. Come with me and I'll love you nice and well, hehe..."

The girl stared blankly at him as if at a loss for words. It was most likely that she had never come across such a situation like this before. Jing Mingfeng giving her clothes a sniff was so rude that the woman's eyebrows had frozen in place while her face grew red. Her eyes reflected with anger and her entire body had begun to tremble.

"Kid, I forbid you to treat the young miss so rudely!!" The aunt's reaction was much faster. Her foot slammed against the ground before Jing Mingfeng had even finished speaking, causing the stone ground to crater underneath her. With a hop into the air, she flew several meters forward with her right leg ready to smash Jing Mingfeng's chest.

"I'm going, there's no need to be so rough!" Jing Mingfeng let out a strangled shout. With his right foot tapping against the ground, he slid to the side with difficulty and narrowly dodged the leg strike.

"Boom!" An explosion rang through the air as a gust of dirt and wind blew in every direction. Jing Mingfeng shut his eyes tight

and quickly flew back several steps. The aunty's foot had left a crater about a meter wide and a third of a meter deep where he used to be standing!

“Phew, how dangerous. She's an earth property user, what power she has! It's a good thing I'm fast enough...” Jing Mingfeng wiped away the sweat on his forehead while he secretly rejoiced to himself.

When she saw that her move had missed, the aunty did not feel shocked or even stopped moving. Instead, the fury in her face increased even more along with the depth of the crater as she kicked off of it toward Jing Mingfeng.

“You're still coming?!” Jing Mingfeng shouted as he dodged the incoming fist, “Aunty, you're too savage! You're going to kill me this way!”

“You depraved scoundrel! After violating the young miss, if I don't kill you here and now, I'll at least snap one of your arms!” The aunt vented while sweeping at Jing Mingfeng's feet with her own, but Jing Mingfeng just nimbly leaped over it.

Jing Mingfeng yelled again and again as he leaped and dodged the aunt's assault. Although the aunt was a mid-stage Soul Sprite, her strong attacks were no use against the speed of Jing Mingfeng. Jing Mingfeng wasn't attacking back either and was completely focused on dodging. More importantly, he was trying his best to find an opportunity to charge at the young woman behind the aunt. At every opportunity, the aunt vigilantly blocked him from doing so. After ten bouts, she failed to land a single strike on him.

While he spent his time dodging, he would always find the time to tease and poke fun at the girl with crude words and very vulgar phrases. The words were enough to cause the girl's face to grow very red with anger. There had been many times where she was extremely tempted to charge in with her aunt to help teach this wretched man a lesson in manners.

Dodging an explosion that had rocked the area in front of him, Jing Mingfeng suddenly let loose a strange laugh, “Watch this!”

# Chapter 96: Entrapment by Jing Mingfeng and the Incoming Ridiculously Absurd Disaster

---

Dodging an explosion that had rocked the area in front of him, Jing Mingfeng suddenly let loose a strange laugh, “Watch this!”

With a swishing sound from his arms, both of Jin Mingfeng’s hands turned into claws. Then, disregarding the fact that the aunt could strike at him, he lashed out — and grabbed the aunt’s bosom....

Aunt Zhao was dumbfounded and speechless — this was a battle between soul cultivators! What type of soul cultivator would fight by grabbing the breasts of another? This was the underhanded tactics one might expect from a vulgar scoundrel!

Almost instinctively, aunt Zhao gave up her assault in favor to protect her chests with her hands.

Jing Mingfeng laughed darkly as he brought his right leg down. With a stamp and a step to the left, he gave up attacking her to go for the young woman several meters away.

“Hey there pretty girl, smile! Master Bai has a reward for you!” Jing Mingfeng laughed before reaching out to feel her cheek.

The young woman’s face became even more red before she swung her head to dodge Jing Mingfeng’s lecherous hands. At the same time, her eyes frosted over as her right leg flew up to ruthlessly kick at Jing Mingfeng’s crotch.

“Oh dang!” Jing Mingfeng cried out before bringing his left hand to block the leg from reaching his crotch. Scuttling to the side, he dodged a slap aimed at his face to two meters away where he spoke with some lingering fear, “I didn’t think that compared to that aunty, you’d be even more ferocious! I nearly lost my family jewels



because of you!”

As he spoke, Jing Mingfeng suddenly felt a gust of wind assault the back of his head. It was a warning that aunt Zhao was coming up to attack him.

Aunt Zhao’s face was flushed red with indignation. She never would have imagined that her opponent would be so shameless, or that she had almost been so careless to allow this depraved knave to nearly come into contact with the young miss again. At this current moment, she wanted nothing more than to tear this man limb from limb before tearing up his mouth, for her anger to fully dissipate.

Jing Mingfeng nimbly dodged to the side and moved back in the young woman’s direction again. With a lecherous voice, he shouted out, “Hey lady, here I come againnnn!”

Alarmed, aunt Zhao hurriedly moved to block him.

“Haha, got you!” Jing Mingfeng’s eyes flashed brilliantly. His right hand that moved at the speed of lightning as it latched onto the lapel under aunt Zhao’s neck while his left hand simultaneously moved to block her. In her fury, aunt Zhao slammed a fist into his obstructing body parts.

“Bang!”

Following a single muffled sound, Jing Mingfeng had finally been struck for the very first time and sent flying away. However, he had been prepared for this, and used this backward momentum to somersault through the air and land forcibly on the ground. Clenching his teeth as he shook his left hand, Jing Mingfeng let out a groan in pain. But in his right hand, there was unexpectedly some sort of orange material. Was this...was this the clothes that the aunt had been wearing?!

Looking again at aunt Zhao, she stood there instead of trying to assault him. Her arms were crossed against her quivering bosoms

and her entire face was a dark-purple hue in indignation as she gave Jing Mingfeng a death glare.

Jing Mingfeng had... he had somehow managed to steal the underwear she had been wearing!

The young woman could clearly see the offending piece of garment in Jing Mingfeng's hand with wide open eyes. Her tiny mouth dropped open in utter disbelief at Jing Mingfeng's action.

Jing Mingfeng smiled in satisfaction. He had originally wanted to bring up the article of clothing to his nose to smell since he was pretending to be Bai Yunfei. The more vulgar he acted, the better. But when he saw how furious the woman was in front of him, the corners of his lips had twitched in indecision before finally deciding to not do such a wretched action.

“Pe... perverted thief! I’ll kill you!!” Aunt Zhao’s entire body shook with fury. With a shake of her right hand, a 1.3 meter long sword appeared for her to grab. There was an orange light to it as it emitted the crisp whistling sound of a sword traveling through the air. With a swing, the tip of the sword made a gap in the ground about a third of a meter deep.

In a burst of strength from aunt Zhao, her right leg stamped down onto the ground so hard a crater had been left behind. Dozens of meters had instantly been shortened as she charged toward Jing Mingfeng with eyes that were shining with a furious desire to kill.

“Holy shit, I took this joke way too far! Time to withdraw!” As an earth-shattering amount of power began to engulf the area, Jing Mingfeng’s face began to change. Unable to think of any other solution to escape, Jing Mingfeng could only use his soulforce to reinforce his legs and make himself even faster than before. Like a wild dog that had just broken free from its chains, Jing Mingfeng flew to the right side entrance of the street.

“Lady, this servant of yours is far too violent! She’s adamant in

stopping us from being together, so I'll split first. I'm sure fate will ensure that we will see each other again in the future. Until then, don't you forget this handsome me!" Jing Mingfeng did not forget to let out a final remark as he desperately tried to run.

The aunt chased after him in hot pursuit. However, she had to restrain herself from attacking despite her fury when she saw that he was planning to escape onto a street with plenty of people. If one of her sword strikes were to fly out, there was a good chance a commoner would be injured.

Jing Mingfeng had naturally thought about that as well so when he made it out onto the streets he cried out loud, "Help! There's a murderer, run away!!"

His voice caused the entire street to stop in a daze. Taking advantage of the confusion, Jing Mingfeng bent over and quickly scampered into the crowd.

Arriving at the street entrance, aunt Zhao stopped with an angry reluctance. Staring at the crowd in front of her, she let out a groan and began to restrain her anger so that she could spread out her soulforce and find the soulforce of Jing Mingfeng. Half a moment later, her eyebrows flew up in shock. Confused, she spoke, "He's gone? But how? I can't even detect any presence of him left..."

"Aunt Zhao, are you okay...."

Aunt Zhao was startled to hear the voice of her young charge behind her. Whirling around to look at the young woman, she took in several deep breaths to pacify her own indignation. Putting away the sword, she gave a small smile to the young woman and shook her head, "I'm fine, but that wretched man somehow used some sort of method to hide his soulforce. He's gone."

The young woman was surprised. Staring at the throng of people who had already went back to normal, she questioned, "That man... how strange was he! Just how could there... be such a shameless soul cultivator like him..."

“Hmph! That shameless pervert. Not only did he treat the young miss rudely, he actually... he actually...” Aunt Zhao’s face began to distort with resentment again as her arms unconsciously covered her own chest. Furious, she declared, “If he and I ever meet again, I will definitely cut off both of his hands! Then I’ll tear apart that foul mouth of his!”

“Yes aunty. Let’s not get mad. Let’s return to our inn. If he ever appears again, you’ll have to beat a lesson into him...”

As the two women walked down the road toward the inn, aunt Zhao could be heard continuously cursing the name of that ‘depraved knave’ over and over while the young woman whispered several words of comfort.

Unbeknown to the two, following quietly behind them a hundred meters was a man with an extremely prominent beard. Walking with the two until they got to their inn, the man looked at it for a moment before turning around.

The man walked off to another inn not too far away and booked a room for the night. Within the closed doors of his room, he sat by the table and poured himself a cup of tea to drink. With eyes that flashed incessantly, he began to ponder to himself.

“I didn’t reveal my own soulforce and even managed to use the Soul Concealment Art to mix it up a bit, so they should think I was trying to hide my strength. Haha... this way the blame will be perfectly pinned on someone else...”

The corners of his lips turned up in a sinister smile. With a shake of his right hand, an orange piece of cloth from a woman appeared. In this moment of thought, the smile on his face grew even more vulgar.

“Hehe, Bai Yunfei, this is the price of angering Jing Mingfeng... let’s see how long it’ll take for me to break you!”

.....

From the inside of an inn on the eastern streets, Bai Yunfei suddenly felt a chill run up his spine while meditating. It caused him to be shaken back to awareness.

“What’s going on tonight? Why am I so uneasy? I feel like my heart’s going to leap out at any second...”

“Is this because of all the traveling I’ve done? Forget it, I’m done cultivating for tonight. Let me get a good night’s sleep...”

# Chapter 97: 'Superior' Equipment

---

On the afternoon of the second day, Bai Yunfei was strolling around Yanlin City as he pleased.

Bai Yunfei could only slowly walk around the surrounding streets to his inn at a very slow pace since Yanlin City was so massive. In any case, he had already planned on staying here for a few more days before moving to another area.

Within one of the more luxurious looking jewelry stores, Bai Yunfei had been picking out several 'High-tier' accessories. But then he realized that he didn't have much money.

"Boss, I want to buy some weapons, would it be possible for you to tell me where to go to buy them?" Bai Yunfei dropped a bag of gold coins for the shopkeeper while putting away the accessories he bought into his space ring.

Taking the gold coins, the shopkeeper displayed a respectful look on his face. Not only was Bai Yunfei a client, he was more importantly a strong soul cultivator. With a nod of his head, the shopkeeper answered deferentially, "Why yes, if we are talking about a top-notch weapons store, then there is the 'Hundred Armaments' store not too far away. Master soul cultivator, do you wish to purchase a weapon for yourself? That place will serve you well. It is the store of the number one family in Yanlin City, the house of Jiang. The weapons in there are strong without a doubt, and they sell even soul armaments."

"Oh? There's even soul armaments there?" Bai Yunfei's eyebrows rose up in surprise.

"Correct. I've heard that the house of Jiang has some connections with the Crafting School. The reason why they have amassed so many soul armaments is because of the Crafting School..."

“The Crafting School!” Bai Yunfei’s heart trembled as he began to grow even more interested in the store. “That ‘Hundred Armaments’, where is it?”

“Take a left from here, and then five hundred meters ahead, there’ll be a crossroad...”

.....

Ten minutes later, Bai Yunfei arrived at the ‘Hundred Armaments’ the shopkeeper had told him about.

A single two-story building with entrance gates ten meters wide and red roof tiles gave off an imposing manner. It was especially imposing with the signboard ‘Hundred Armaments’ on top of the building with an austere aura as if it had been carved with a sword.

When Bai Yunfei walked into the store, he realized that the interior of it was far bigger than he had initially thought. The interior was practically several hundred cubic meters large, and rows and rows of racks could be seen with weaponry positioned on them. The chill and gleam from the blades was very noticeable and forbidding.

Despite such a large store, there were only a scant few people inside browsing the choice of weapons inside. On the side were plenty of uniformed employees. When Bai Yunfei took a glance, he could see that aside from a group of people following a young lord, everyone else were all soul cultivators.

“My lord, welcome to the Hundred Armaments. What might you need my assistance for?” The moment Bai Yunfei walked into the store, the receptionist had taken notice of him. The receptionist did not feel any contempt when he saw the ordinary clothes Bai Yunfei wore. Instead, the receptionist made quick a judgement that this person was also a decent soul cultivator when he saw how Bai Yunfei had taken a cautionary glance around the place and had an aura that was quite powerful.

Looking back, Bai Yunfei took a look at the shopkeeper. Although he could not make an accurate judgement, he was at least sure that this one was a Soul Warrior at the very least.

“Is this the power of a major household? If a Soul Warrior is just a small shopkeeper....” Bai Yunfei was shocked for a moment. “I wish to take a look around, is there anything I need to know?”

“Very well, just please take your time.” The shopkeeper smiled. With a wave to another employee, he had them follow Bai Yunfei should he ever need their assistance.

Bai Yunfei walked to the left side of the weapons rack and glanced around before picking up a meter long broadsword.

Equipment Grade: Superior

Attack: 157

Upgrade Requirement: 51 Soulpoints

“Superior-tier!” Bai Yunfei’s eyes sparkled, “The attack is 157....this must be one of those ‘incomplete soul armaments’ that brother Hong Yin spoke about before. The ones that lie in between a regular item and a soul armaments.”

After careful consideration, Bai Yunfei put down the broadsword and picked up another meter long whip sword.

Equipment Grade: Superior

Attack: 143

Upgrade Requirement: 49 Soulpoints

Following another moment of deliberation, Bai Yunfei continued to pick up another black broad axe....

After a while, Bai Yunfei practically picked up dozens of



weapons. Without exception, each one of these items were of the superior-tier.

“How great the house of Jiang is. Of all the minor cities I came across on the way here, ‘High-tier’ was the highest quality any equipment could go. But in this store, practically everything is of the ‘Superior-tier’!” Bai Yunfei’s eyes glistened. Pondering, he finally grabbed a dagger and turned to the employee that had respectfully waiting for him by the side, “How much for this dagger?”

“My lord, every piece of weaponry in the first story of this store is a hundred gold per item.”

“A hundred!” Bai Yunfei’s eyebrows had nearly risen into the air in minute shock. “A hundred gold coins is enough to feed an entire family of commoners for an entire lifetime. Are incomplete soul armaments really worth that much?”

He unconsciously rubbed the hand he wore his Space Ring on. In the past, he had exploded plenty of +8 and +9 ‘High-tier’ equipment, but today, who knew just how many were left.

Then, Bai Yunfei put down the dagger in his hand and returned to the counter.

When the shopkeeper saw Bai Yunfei return empty-handed, the man asked with confusion, “Yes? Did my lord not find a suitable item?”

Bai Yunfei approached the counter and asked, “Would your store happen to buy items as well as sell them?”

“Oh?” The shopkeeper was taken back for a moment before realizing something. Looking at Bai Yunfei, he asked, “Did my lord come to sell a soul armaments? This store primarily sells the weapons from the Crafting School, but there are times where we will accept the items our customers might not be able to use. However, whether or not we purchase these weapons is based on

their quality...”

With a faint smile, Bai Yunfei shook his hand and brought out a +9 ‘High-tier’ dagger, “Would you like to look at this dagger?”

Taking the dagger into his hands, the shopkeeper began to inspect it before giving a few experimental swipes at a testing rock. Surprised, the shopkeeper turned to Bai Yunfei, “This is an incomplete soul armament with average strength, is my lord adamant on selling this?”

“Yes, are you willing to buy it?”

The shopkeeper went silent to think for a moment before smiling, “My lord is quite strong. If you truly wish to sell this item, then that must mean you are currently low on funds. With such a strong soul cultivator like you, this store would be very pleased to become friends with you. How about this, we’ll buy this dagger for ninety gold coins, is that satisfactory?”

Thinking for a moment, Bai Yunfei asked again, “I have another deal to discuss, would you be willing to hear it?”

“Oh? If my lord would please continue.”

Bai Yunfei shook his right hand over the counter, causing fourteen items to fall onto the counter with a clattering sound. More than a half of them were daggers.

“These are all equipment roughly on par with the incomplete soul armaments. I’ll sell two daggers and exchange the other dozen for the daggers in this store, would that be possible?”

Bai Yunfei’s actions, at that moment, had knocked the shopkeeper into a daze. Looking at the dozen weapons on the counter, he had remained in that daze for another few seconds before suddenly waking back up. Taking one of them into his hands to inspect it, the shopkeeper thought for a second before asking, “Is my lord serious? You’ve originally had all these daggers, and yet you still wish to trade them in?”

Bai Yunfei smiled, “Of course I am serious, or should I start to joke around instead?”

The eyebrows of the shopkeeper furrowed together as he observed Bai Yunfei before suddenly widening in realization, “To be able to take so many incomplete soul armaments at once... is my lord from the Crafting School?”

Bai Yunfei was surprised, but then with a gleam of his eyes, Bai Yunfei then laughed. Without answering the shopkeeper’s question, he spoke, “What, is this proposal of mine not satisfactory? Perhaps I should not buy the daggers for now.”

“Oh, no no, my lord’s proposal is something this store can agree to. Allow me to make the arrangements.” The shopkeeper thought that Bai Yunfei did not want to reveal his own identity, so he did not ask any more questions. After instructing the employees to the side, Bai Yunfei was quickly given a bag of gold and ten daggers while the fourteen other daggers were taken away by the employees.

Equipment Grade: Superior

Attack: 163

Upgrade Requirement: 52 Soulpoints

Bai Yunfei took a good look at the daggers properties with a satisfied nod before putting the ten daggers and the money into his space ring.

“My lord, the second floor to this store still has soul armaments for sale. Would you be interested in taking a look? Perhaps you will find a soul armaments that is to your satisfaction. Naturally, the price of a soul armament is far more expensive, but this store will also take other soul armaments, primal stones, or soul crystals as payment...”

# Chapter 98: What's Going On?

---

Primal stones were crystallized stones that contained the elements of the world and would only form after countless of years of condensation in a certain location. After enough of the energy was condensed, it would be categorized into three different grades; the highest quality ones were known as primal stones. Soul cultivators could extract the energy from the primal stones to increase their strength, so these primal stones were extremely precious. If a commoner had wished to buy one, then even the most rudimentary of primal stones would cost thousands of gold, if not tens of thousands for one.

Soul crystals referred to the 'nucleus' of a soulbeast. Every soulbeast would have a soul crystal within them, even if they were the lowest of the low. It was the location where all cultivation would take place in and was practically the second heart of a soulbeast. This was similar in function to the essence seed of a soul cultivator. A soul crystal contained the elements of the world, and the stronger a soulbeast was, the more pure the energy within their soul crystal would be.

No one knew just when it had started, but when a single soul cultivator had hunted and extracted the elements within the soul crystal to increase their own strength, many more soul cultivators had begun to hunt these soulbeasts and sell the soul crystals. It was also for this reason that the divide between soul cultivator and soulbeast had widened. Combined with the Beast Taming School, all of the stronger soulbeasts of Soulbeast Forest had rejected any soul cultivator. For any soul cultivator that came into the forest to hunt for soul crystals, they would die a brutal death if they came across a strong enough soulbeast. Even the soul cultivators that came into the forest to find a soulbeast as a companion would often times be attacked.

And so the Soulbeast Forest had gradually become a terrifying

place. For those without enough strength or a reliable enough partner, very few would dare venture into this place.

Primal stones and soul crystals were common currency in the world of soul cultivators. In the beginning, Hong Yin had gave Bai Yunfei several fire primal stones, but those were used up to increase Bai Yunfei's soulforce.

Bai Yunfei had only taken a second of consideration to decline the 'benevolent invitation' of the shopkeeper. Bai Yunfei figured that he would only a helpless window shopper up there, and he was very unwilling to trade in his soul armaments for the ones up there, so he had naturally decided not to go up.

And so despite the friendly urging of the shopkeeper, Bai Yunfei decided to leave the shop and head out the streets.

"So this means that....the Upgrade Skill is definitely connected to the level of the equipment itself—normal, high, superior, attack power and even defensive power, if they are below a hundred, then it is classified as what any regular person can create, or a regular item in short. Anything from a hundred to two hundred is considered stronger than a regular piece of equipment but crossed over the soul armament boundary and is classified as an 'incomplete soul armament'. Two hundred up and up, those are considered soul armaments...." Bai Yunfei's mind raced at a rapid speed as he thought to himself.

With his money problem solved and ten newly acquired 'top-notch' daggers, Bai Yunfei was highly satisfied with the profits of this afternoon. After strolling around for some time, he had decided to head into a teahouse to listen to the folk stories for half an hour. But when he listened to the strange anecdotes of the continent, Bai Yunfei simply had no idea whether they were true or not.

But this had made Bai Yunfei think for a moment. He simply did not know much about the "Skysoul Empire", even the history of

the entire empire had only been superficial and limited to only what his uncle had told him in passing.

And so he walked to a bookstore and purchased several books that contained information on the entire continent so he could better understand it.

.....

But what the constantly vigilant Bai Yunfei hadn't noticed was that in another corner of the street, a frail-looking bearded man could be seen following him....

That man had been two hundred meters behind Bai Yunfei with a demonic-looking smile. His body was slightly bent forwards as he hid himself within the group of people. Staring from a decent distance, his eyes flashed continuously as if he was hatching a plan.

“I’ve finally found you after an entire afternoon....haha, I should have you two meet ‘again’ next then....”

This person had clearly been that Jing Mingfeng. For the sake of ‘punishing’ Bai Yunfei early, he had to wake up early to find him so that his two targets wouldn’t leave the city and ruin his plan altogether.

Bai Yunfei simply didn’t have the skill to perfectly conceal his soulforce, so after an entire afternoon, Jing Mingfeng had finally found him. Then covering up his own presence, Jing Mingfeng began to follow him.

After following Bai Yunfei for another hour, Jing Mingfeng had been trying to find a way to have the two parties meet without compromising his own position when all of a sudden his face went blank. Looking ahead of Bai Yunfei, Jing Mingfeng smiled in joy, “Ha, who would have thought that when all hope was lost, you’d walk there yourself, that makes things easier.”

“Who knows if I’ll even have to make a move myself, he’s already.....” Jing Mingfeng’s eyes wandered to the end of the street

when all of a sudden, his mouth had dropped wide open in amazement as if he had seen something unbelievable.

After several seconds, he had regained his spirit. There was an eccentric look in his eyes as he looked at Bai Yunfei walking back and forth between stalls with interest as if he was a toy. Jing Mingfeng's lips curled upwards as if he was taking in joy from Bai Yunfei's incoming disaster. "Haha, maybe my luck is too good today? You're really too unlucky, don't tell me you two were actually 'destined' to meet? But if there's one thing I'm sure of, it's that I'll have something great to watch. That and, you're absolutely f\*cked...haha!"

Just a hundred meters away from the other side of the road, the little girl and her female servant that Jing Mingfeng had 'played with' with Bai Yunfei's appearance were slowly walking towards Bai Yunfei. It would only take another hundred or so meters for the two to meet.

"Hehe, for an even bigger insurance, I'll send you this 'proof'!"

.....

Handing over a ring of copper coins to the vendor of a stall, Bai Yunfei stood up with a palm-sized wooden bird in his hands and prepared himself to walk away.

Not even two steps later, there had been a blur right in front of his eyes as a single person had slammed into his chest. The feeling of something being stuffed in his left hand could be felt, but before he could react to what had happened, the person who hit him had disappeared. In practically two steps, the figure had quickly blended back into the crowd behind Bai Yunfei.

"This feeling, it's somewhat similar...crap!" Bai Yunfei had instantly snapped out from his daze and hurriedly looked at his right hand.

The space ring was still adorned on his finger, allowing Bai

Yunfei to sigh in relief. Shifting his eyes, he could see that something had been stuffed in the left hand.

“Cloth? Or is this a handkerchief?” Bai Yunfei looked at the material in his hand with a confused look. But just as he was getting a close look at it, there was suddenly a furious roar to be heard.

“Pervert, you still dare show yourself!!”

The entire street had been startled by this loud shout, even Bai Yunfei had nearly leapt out of his skin and dropped the cloth in his hands. His entire body felt goosebumps over it as he felt a tremendous ‘killing intent’ fill the air around him. Looking up, he could see ten meters away a single burly middle-aged woman gnashing her teeth in indignation. By her side was a white-robed young woman with skin as pale as snow; her face equally angry as she glared at him.

.....

Her delicate face had gone stark red while both hands seemed to unconsciously grab at the hemming of her clothes while her eyebrows knitted together in anger.

Bai Yunfei was at a loss. In his right hand was that wooden bird while the left hand held the undergarment of a woman while he stared in confusion at her.

This, was the first time either of the two had ever met each other.

.....

Bai Yunfei had been dumbfounded for a moment. Looking to his left and then to his right, he had realized the eyes of everyone around him were staring at him. Looking back at the two women in front of him, he asked in confusion:

“What’s going on?”



# Chapter 99: Aunty, I really Don't Know Anything!

---

Bai Yunfei was dumbfounded for a moment. Looking to his left and then to his right, he had realized the eyes of everyone around him were staring at him. Looking back at the two women in front of him, he asked in confusion,

“What’s going on?”

Aunt Zhao looked at Bai Yunfei’s reaction and then to the item he was holding in his left hand. Beginning to tremble all over with a mighty shake, she looked as if she was on the verge of losing complete control over herself like last night. With a finger pointed at Bai Yunfei, she snarled, “You shameless knave!! Don’t even think about playing the idiot! Last night you molested the young miss of my family. And... and... just what is that you’re holding in your hand then?!”

“Eh? What is it?” Bai Yunfei was startled, but raising his left hand to look, he immediately began to tremble....

A single sweatdrop dripped down Bai Yunfei’s head — it, it was the underwear of a woman?!

“Oh...”

There was a hissing sound coming from all around him, causing Bai Yunfei to look around himself. Everyone on the street had given themselves ten meters of room and glared at him with scornful eyes...

“This... this wasn’t me...” Bai Yunfei held the underwear with a trembling left hand, and even his voice was quavering.

“Oh of course! Of course it wasn’t you, it was me then!!” Aunt Zhao was already on the breaking point of her anger.

“Booo!!” The audience around them began to explode in a fit of

hissing sounds as they continued to glare at him.

Bai Yunfei felt as if he was about to cough out blood from this situation and hurried to explain himself. “No, no! I’m saying that someone just stuffed this into my hand. I’m...”

Halfway through his speech, Bai Yunfei closed his mouth. It was useless to explain to these two. Even the audience around them wasn’t willing to listen to Bai Yunfei; if there was any reaction, it would be the scornful look in their eyes...

Bai Yunfei’s lips began to twitch as if he was on the verge of crying. Lifting out his left hand, he took one step after another toward the two and stuttered, “Au-aunty... I’m speaking the truth. If this is yours, then... here, take it...”

With that, he handed the piece of underwear back to the aunt. In his anxiety, he had subconsciously stuffed the wooden bird he had just bought into the hands of the girl to aunt’s side.

The aunt took the bra back, but when it came in contact with her hand, she paused. Feeling as if something was wrong, she took the article of clothing and then held it up...

Someone had taken scissors to it. Two holes were cut accurately to show two specific spots on the bra...

Bai Yunfei’s eyes saw the holes, causing his soul to practically fly away from his mouth almost. This time, he regained his wits quickly, and without any explanation, he staggered back several steps in retreat.

“You pervert, I’ll kill you!!”

In the same instance that Bai Yunfei had retreated, the aunty could no longer control her fury. Putting away the bra, her fist immediately chased after Bai Yunfei to strike him down.

Bai Yunfei could see it coming however and easily dodged the strike. Still retreating back, he cried out, “Aunty, don’t misunderstand! This really has nothing to do with me, I’ve never

seen you before in my life!”

“You still dare to deny it! Is your surname not Bai?!”

“Ye-yes, my surname is Bai... how did you know?”

“Then what else needs to be said! Your figure is the same, your face is the same, and even your voice is the same! Or do you mean to tell me that the one who dared to grope and molest me and the young miss is your hoodrat of a twin brother!” The aunty cried out in indignation as she chased him. With a shake of her hand, a sword not yet two meters long could be seen. With a circulation of her soulforce, a halo of orange light could be seen enveloping the sword before it stabbed out at Bai Yunfei.

“You’re kidding! I...” Bai Yunfei slid to the left to dodge the sword stab before once more dodging a horizontal slash from the sword. Then borrowing the power of the incoming fist, he flew back another two steps. Crying out in frustration, he spoke, “Aunty, I really don’t know anything!!”

The furious aunty wasted no words on him. A tremendous amount of Qi could be seen rolling toward Bai Yunfei with the twist of her sword.

Startled, Bai Yunfei could no longer say anything. He began to use the Wave Treading Steps to weave left and right around the mirror images left by the sword. Although it looked rather dangerous, there was no damage dealt to Bai Yunfei.

“Poof! Poof! Poof!...” Several sounds could be heard while Bai Yunfei circled the street. The ground where he used to be standing had split into several small cracks due to the Qi strikes from the sword. Some of the strikes had even impacted against the ground not far from the audience.

“Waaa!” The entire audience had been excited to watch this battle take place. Everyone scattered away in fear to areas farther away when it progressed beyond what they had expected. It was as

if they were afraid of being inadvertently hit.

Not too long after, the nearby hundred meters of the street had been completely deserted save the two combatants and the young woman not too far away. Even the nearby buildings had tightly shut their windows.

Aunt Zhao was a cultivator with the earth property whose distinguishing characteristics were endless. Her offensive and defensive capabilities were strong in their own right, but she lacked in speed. Since she lacked a soul skill to aid her speed, she was unable to land a hit on Bai Yunfei even after several rounds despite her anger. She was unable to make contact with him due to his Wave Treading Steps.

Bai Yunfei had finally regained his wits. Depressed, Bai Yunfei didn't know just how this absurd calamity had befallen him. He could only helplessly dodge blow after blow while trying to figure out the best way to resolve this troublesome matter.

This village-born middle-aged woman in front of him was clearly in a furious state where words would be of no use. After a moment's thought, Bai Yunfei dodged a strike, and looked to the young woman who was observing the fight several dozen meters away.

"I say, miss! Are you the 'young miss' this aunty's talking about? Can you have this aunty calm down for a moment? You really got the wrong person!" Bai Yunfei dodged an explosive fist strike before dodging another sword strike at the same time he was shouting at the young woman.

"Yesterday night at nine, I was resting in the 'Happiness Inn' in the eastern streets. Although I took a stroll earlier that day, I have never seen you two before. This is all a misunderstanding!"

The young woman helplessly watched her aunt try to attack Bai Yunfei over and over again. When she heard that seemingly innocent explanation, her eyebrows furrowed together with some

confusion.

After several more exchanges with the young woman not responding to him, Bai Yunfei was beginning to grow a little impatient. His leg shifted away and brought him speeding to the left after retreating away from the aunty. He planned on running near the young woman. That way if the aunty chased after him, she would hesitate to attack. In that time, he would have a moment to be able to figure out just what was happening.

Under her irate barrage, the aunt had come across almost no resistance from Bai Yunfei at all, causing her fury to grow more and more. When she saw Bai Yunfei head toward the young woman, her eyes widened instantly and began to flow with a murderous killing intent.

“Scoundrel! You wish to mishandle the young miss again!!”

Following this flash of killing intent, the aunty began to explode with a rich amount of orange-colored elemental energy. The sword in her right arm made an overarching slash toward the ground so that the tip was touching it. The surrounding earth element began to congregate around the tip of her sword before the metallic cry of the sword could be heard stabbing into the ground in her pursuit of Bai Yunfei!

The sword had stabbed into the stone tiles of the ground without a problem. An orange light began to fill the cracks as a crackling sound appeared. Several more cracks could be seen originating from where the sword had stabbed into the ground. In an instant, they had spread in ‘pursuit’ of Bai Yunfei!

Seeing Bai Yunfei come running at her, the young woman instinctively retreated back. Adopting a defensive stance, she took on a startled expression before crying out a warning to Bai Yunfei, “Watch yourself!”

As soon as Bai Yunfei was within a twenty meters away from the older woman, the young woman’s warning immediately warned

him of the incoming pulse of elemental energy nearing his body. Startled, he whirled around only to see that the cracks had already reached underneath his feet.

“No!” Bai Yunfei was startled in that one instant. He abruptly stomped down with enough force to launch him into the air. At that moment, the cracks underneath his feet exploded, shooting fragments of the stones up along with the twisting strands of the earth element. In a movement that covered the entire sky, this storm of rubble and earth force engulfed Bai Yunfei!

Bai Yunfei’s eyes flashed dangerously. With a snort, he shook his hand and pulled out the Fire-tipped Spear. Without decreasing the speed in his feet, the Fire-tipped Spear began to twirl around in an air-tight pattern that completely protected him from the barrage of stone fragments.

The first wave of stone fragments was far too concentrated, so several fragments hit Bai Yunfei’s body. Even with the Goldsilk Soul Armor protecting him, it still hurt quite a bit.

After shattering the final stone fragment to pieces, Bai Yunfei turned to look at the relatively far away aunty with a chilling glare. Up to this point, Bai Yunfei had not felt any anger in his heart.

“I’ve already said that this was a misunderstanding, but if you still want to bring me into this mess, then I will start to fight back!”

# Chapter 100: As Like the Heart Flying With the Clouds, Be Free and Easy

---

After shattering the final stone fragment to pieces, Bai Yunfei turned to look at the relatively far away aunty with a chilling glare. Up to this point, Bai Yunfei had not felt any anger in his heart.

“I’ve already said that this was a misunderstanding, but if you still want to bring me into this mess, then I will start to fight back!”

The aunty seemed to appear as if she didn’t heard a single word of what Bai Yunfei said. With a tinkling from her saber, she pulled it out of the ground. The light on the saber was noticeably dimmer compared to before. Vigorously treading across the ground, she flew close to Bai Yunfei and waved her saber to stab him.

“Hmph!”

Bai Yunfei’s eyes flashed menacingly as he began to circulate his soulforce. The Fire-tipped Spear in his hands began to tremble for a moment as a heatwave was instantly expelled from it. The heatwave was hot enough that even some young woman several meters away cried out in shock as they took several steps back.

“Clang!” Following a red gleam of light, Bai Yunfei’s spear twirled to slam against the long saber that was stabbing at him. After the clanging sound from the collision, the saber was sent arcing in a perpendicular fashion to the side. The aunty looked surprised. The amount of force transmitted from her saber to her arm caused her feet to stagger to the side.

As a middle Soul Sprite with his Fire-tipped Spear, Bai Yunfei was substantially different than before. Combined with his proficiency with the usage of the fire element, he truly understood the true might of the Fire-tipped Spear. After increasing the amount of elemental fire within him, his strength was many times

stronger than before.

The aunt's soulforce had already been depleted by a decent amount after the usage of her soul technique. In this one strike, if Bai Yunfei had not deliberately held back and used his spear to block the saber with the pole instead of the tip, the human-tier soul item in her hands would have most likely been destroyed instead of deflected.

Seeing the spear, the chilly eyes of Bai Yunfei, and how the saber in her arm trembled from the shock, the aunty finally woke from her angered stupor. She cast a glance at the Fire-tipped Spear with a strange glance before shouting, "Hmph! Do you think yourself invincible by relying on a strong soul item?! Even if I cannot hit you, so what? I'll..."

"I've said it before, you've mistaken me for someone else." Bai Yunfei's eyes narrowed together. "With my strength, if I really did 'assault' the young lady, do you really think you'd be able to remain unharmed?"

"You..." Seeing that the person in front of her would be unwilling to 'concede even in front of death', her heart began to feel fury once more. Even the saber in her right hand was beginning to shake in anger.

"Aunty Zhao, please stop fighting..."

Just at that moment, a gentle-sounding voice could be heard from the side. Seeing that the older woman was potentially about to start fighting once more, the young woman quickly called out to her. At the same time, she hurried over to her side and pulled the aunt's arm back gently with a shake of her head.

"But miss, he..."

"Aunty Zhao, I really think that we found the wrong person. This man... may possibly not be the same one as the one we saw last night." The girl shook her head again.



“How could he not? His face and even the way he sounds is exactly the same. Furthermore, he was just holding onto my...”

“But his eyes aren’t the same.” The girl interrupted the older woman. Looking at Bai Yunfei, she spoke, “Whether it’s the way they speak or move, this man and the man from last night vary greatly. Although they look the same, I feel as if the two are two completely different people, isn’t that right?”

The aunty’s eyes narrowed in warning, “Young miss, you should know that everyone may seem different from what they appear to be in this world. Some may even disguise themselves as...”

“Aunty, why don’t you get some proof for what you’re saying! Just how am I pretending to be someone I am not?” This time, it was Bai Yunfei that interrupted her. Knowing that there was not much of a chance for another fight to break out again, he had put away his Fire-tipped Spear. Unsatisfied, he retorted, “If I was really that ‘scoundrel’ you say I am, would I be that much of an idiot to have that... thing in my hand?”

“Besides...” He immediately grew pensive for a moment before continuing his train of thought, “Before this, someone bumped into me without a word and stuffed that thing into my hand. Then when you appeared, I had already more or less figured out what happened...”

“Oh? Does mister know something about this?” The young woman’s eyebrows rose on her face in surprise.

“More or less. If my guess isn’t off, then the person in question is most likely trying to take ‘revenge’ on me...” Bai Yunfei paused at that moment as if realizing something. “Then that person just now was him. In that case, he would definitely plan on being nearby to observe this ‘embarrassment’, then...”

He began to turn his head around as if inspecting the area for something.

Five hundred meters behind Bai Yunfei was a two-story tavern that could very well be used to spectate what was happening between the three in easy to distinguish details. A regular person wouldn't be able to see much because of the distance, but for a soul cultivator, such a distance was negligible.

A big-nosed youth could be seen sitting rather sloppily on the banisters of this tavern. In his hands was a melon with a plate full of melon seeds to the side for him to eat one at a time. He had been staring at the spectacle between Bai Yunfei and the two with keen interest — this person was without a doubt Jing Mingfeng in disguise.

“Huh? Why aren't they fighting? Did you fuck up, aunty? You're a middle Soul Sprite as well, how could you be so easily defeated by him?” Jing Mingfeng grumbled in discontent, but suddenly, his eyes widened in shock. Forgetting that he had been sitting on top of the railing of the balcony, Jing Mingfeng fell back onto the floor with a startled cry. Instead of getting up, he silently hid behind the balcony's railing.

“Did he find me? But how? Did he realize that I was spying on him?”

.....

Bai Yunfei's eyes swept around the area, but he didn't find any person that might be suspicious. Looking at a teahouse several hundred meters away to the left, Bai Yunfei then glanced away before muttering, “There's far too many soul cultivators looking at this place with interest. I won't be able to find him this way, and with that odd disguising ability of his, it'll be even harder...”

“Mister, I believe this was a case of mistaken understanding. For the trouble my aunty has caused, please forgive us. I hope that you will not take offense to this.” While Bai Yunfei had been deep in thought, the voice of the young woman could be heard.

Bai Yunfei looked to the aunty who had called him a scoundrel

and was glaring at him for a moment before replying, “If the lady is willing to speak reason, then I’ll give thanks first. However, after this unrighted wrong, I would like to be proven innocent when I find the one responsible for framing me!”

“That would be for the best.” The young woman spoke for the aunty before looking around. “Let’s leave the area first. A confrontation between soul cultivators may be something the government might turn a blind eye to, it wouldn’t do to stay around here too long either.”

For a moment, Bai Yunfei was silent. Knowing that there was no need to continue speaking with one another, he cupped his hands and bowed to the two, “Then I’ll take my leave first. We’ll meet again someday!”

Unwilling to put away her saber after watching Bai Yunfei walk away, the aunty looked to the young woman, “Young miss, why were you so polite to him? Do you really take his words to be true?”

“It doesn’t matter if I believed it or not. If we looked at the circumstances, would you really be able to beat him if you continued fighting, aunty?” The young woman studied the retreating figure of Bai Yunfei while deep in thought. After hearing the aunty speak, she shook her head.

“That...” Aunt Zhao was speechless. Although she and Bai Yunfei were of the same level of strength, with that unique soul technique to aid his movements, she herself had practically been under his thumb. That high level soul item had been even more shocking however.

“It doesn’t matter anymore, aunty. We probably won’t ever see him again, so there’s no need to continue this. Let’s get ready and leave Yanlin City.”

Speaking with a smile, the young woman took the older woman around and began to walk in the other direction...

“Eh?” Two steps later, the young woman, at that moment, realized she was still holding something — it was the wooden bird that Bai Yunfei had hurriedly stuffed into her hands earlier.

Turning around to look for Bai Yunfei, she saw that he had already long since disappeared from sight. Turning back around, she began to look at the wooden bird.

It was a fist-sized bird with its wings spread out. On the bottom was a circular disk meant for placing on a flat surface. Both of its wings were fully spread and its eyes were staring straight ahead. The beak was slightly open as if it was in the middle of letting out a cry. All in all, the bird was rather life-like.

Interested, the young woman began to feel and caress the statue when something strange on the bottom of the disk caught her eye. Turning it over to inspect it, she had been taken back as if she had seen something that amazed her.

Back when Bai Yunfei had been selecting this bird, he had first asked to borrow a carving knife after he bought it. Then on the bottom, he had carved out an inscription that had portrayed a thought that had risen in his mind at that moment.

“Like the heart flying with the clouds, be free and easy.”

# Table of Contents

[Upgrade Specialist in Another World](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Prologue](#)

[Book 1 - Rise of the Cloud](#)

[Chapter 1: Bai Yunfei](#)

[Chapter 2: Equipment Upgrade Technique](#)

[Chapter 3: Uncle Wu](#)

[Chapter 4: Slaughter in the Coliseum](#)

[Chapter 5: Uncle Wu's Death and....Transformation!](#)

[Chapter 6: Do You Desire Power?](#)

[Chapter 7: It Exploded?!](#)

[Chapter 8: The Soul Apprentice Stage! Training and Research](#)

[Chapter 9: Change](#)

[Chapter 10: Target: Blackwood Stronghold!](#)

[Chapter 11: First encounter with bandits](#)

[Chapter 12: Li Chengfeng](#)

[Chapter 13: First Time Fighting a Soul Cultivator; The Might of an Upgraded Item!](#)

[Chapter 14: Soul Personage Stage, Soul Skills, and Soul Armaments!](#)

[Chapter 15: With Bandits Like These, Prepare to Kill!](#)

[Chapter 16: Kill! Kill! Kill!](#)

[Chapter 17: Declare War on the Blackwood Stronghold!](#)

[Chapter 18: Bai Yunfei's Plan](#)

[Chapter 19: The Time is Ripe, Infiltrate the Stronghold!](#)

[Chapter 20: Kill the Vice-chieftain!](#)

[Chapter 21: The Final Fight Against a Soul Warrior and Flying Daggers!](#)

[Chapter 22: Destroy the Blackwood Stronghold and Return to the City!](#)

[Chapter 23: A Trend of the House of Zhang; Coming to the Rescue](#)

[Chapter 24: Another Encounter With Zhang Yang and a Battle for Vengeance!  
\(First\)](#)

[Chapter 25: A Battle for Vengeance! \(Second\)](#)

[Chapter 26: A Battle for Vengeance! \(Third\)](#)

[Chapter 27: A Battle for Vengeance! \(Fourth\)](#)

[Chapter 28: Stab Zhang Yang to Death!](#)

[Chapter 29: The Green Willow School, Luliu, and Yuhe](#)

[Chapter 30: Schools of the World!](#)

[Chapter 31: Romance by Rescue Isn't Believable](#)  
[Chapter 32: Soul Warrior Stage and Acupoints](#)  
[Chapter 33: Meeting Li Chengfeng Again](#)  
[Chapter 34: Explode! Explode! And Explode!](#)  
[Chapter 35: +13 Brick! Hurling!](#)  
[Chapter 36: +13 Brick! Stunning! And Confusing!](#)  
[Chapter 37: Movement From the House of Zhang and Incoming Peril!](#)  
[Chapter 38: Initial Success With the Wave Treading Steps!](#)  
[Chapter 39: +12 Daggers!](#)  
[Chapter 40: Researching Item Stats Again](#)  
[Chapter 41: Leave....Peril is Coming?](#)  
[Chapter 42: I've been tricked!](#)  
[Chapter 43: Fleeing and...Worrying](#)  
[Chapter 44: Three Days of Tracking and Approaching Mortal Danger](#)  
[Chapter 45: Go All Out! Fight!!](#)  
[Chapter 46: The Gap in Power!](#)  
[Chapter 47: Strike back!](#)  
[Chapter 39: +12 Daggers!](#)  
[Chapter 49: Run Away!!](#)  
[Chapter 50: Reaching Snowpeak City](#)  
[Chapter 51: Secret Exposed! Greater Danger!!](#)  
[Chapter 52: Meeting the Old Man From the Fate School Again](#)  
[Chapter 53: Original Property of the Soul](#)  
[Chapter 54: First Arrival in Jade Willow City; A Cliched Scene?](#)  
[Chapter 55: Artificial Respiration is Needed?](#)  
[Chapter 56: Liu Meng](#)  
[Chapter 57: Stroll and Tell](#)  
[Chapter 58: The Long Tao Duo](#)  
[Chapter 59: An Inexplicable Attack!](#)  
[Chapter 60: Bloodhowl Wolf King's Adopted Son, Hong Yin](#)  
[Chapter 61: Meeting Qiu Luliu Again](#)  
[Chapter 62: The +10 Additional Effects of Accessories](#)  
[Chapter 63: Is This Jealousy?](#)  
[Chapter 64: Green Willow School](#)  
[Chapter 65: Sudden Event](#)  
[Chapter 66: You Want to Fight? Let's Fight!](#)  
[Chapter 67: The Brick Defeats a Soul Skill](#)  
[Chapter 68: Mission Accomplished, Conspiracy Discovered!](#)  
[Chapter 69: Things That Always Happen at a Restaurant](#)

[Chapter 70: In a Flash](#)

[Chapter 71: First Meeting With Hong Yin](#)

[Chapter 72: See Through It](#)

[Chapter 73: What Should Be Said Has Been Said](#)

[Chapter 74: One Against Two](#)

[Chapter 75: Help Arrives](#)

[Chapter 76: Injury Treatment](#)

[Chapter 77: Approaching Crisis](#)

[Chapter 78: Soulbeast](#)

[Chapter 79: A Powerful Foe Comes to Fight!](#)

[Chapter 80: Seven Day Agreement](#)

[Chapter 81: Frantically Rising in Power](#)

[Chapter 82: Essence Fireseed, Equipment Mutation](#)

[Chapter 83: The Changes in the Two Items](#)

[Chapter 84: Battling Zhang Zhenshan Again](#)

[Chapter 85: The Foe Retreats and Backlash](#)

[Chapter 86: Fireseed Spirit Mushroom](#)

[Chapter 87: Mid-stage Soul Sprite!!](#)

[Chapter 88: 'Flame Dagger' of the Bracer](#)

[Chapter 89: Upgrade Complete](#)

[Chapter 90: Departure](#)

## [Book 2 - Wandering the Northern Cliff Province](#)

[Chapter 91: Just Arrived at Stonegroove City and the Space Ring is Already Stolen?!](#)

[Chapter 92: The Thief of the Space Ring](#)

[Chapter 93: Jing Mingfeng, 'No Discord, No Concord'](#)

[Chapter 94: Jing Mingfeng's Action, Preparing to Retaliate?](#)

[Chapter 95: Taking Liberties With Women](#)

[Chapter 96: Entrapment by Jing Mingfeng and the Incoming Ridiculously Absurd Disaster](#)

[Chapter 97: 'Superior' Equipment](#)

[Chapter 98: What's Going On?](#)

[Chapter 99: Aunt, I really Don't Know Anything!](#)

[Chapter 100: As Like the Heart Flying With the Clouds, Be Free and Easy](#)